

# INVADERS

THE SOURCES FOR THE MULTICULTURAL  
AGENDA & THE ROAD TO THE NWO

TREVOR STEWART

# SUBJECTS

005 • PREFACE

## CHAPTER 1

- 006 • THE EURASIANS
- 007 • 1: EURASIAN-ROMAN INFILTRATION
- 008 • 2: WHO THE EURASIANS ARE
- 008 • 3: HOW THE EURASIANS CAME TO EXIST (VEDAS/AVESTAS/JEWS)
- 028 • 4: EXAMPLES OF EURASIANS
- 041 • NOTE 1: SECRET SOCIETIES & BABYLON MYSTERY RELIGION
- 054 • 5: CELTIC SOURCES & EVENTS IN EUROPE BEFORE ROME’S FOUNDING
- 063 • 6: GERMAN SOURCES & EVENTS IN EUROPE BEFORE ROME’S FOUNDING
- 080 • 7: EVENTS IN EUROPE DURING THE ROMAN WESTERN EMPIRE PERIOD
- 107 • 8: EVENTS IN BRITAIN AFTER THE FALL OF THE ROMAN WESTERN EMPIRE;  
MOPPING UP, FEUDALISM, AND MULTICULTURAL BRITAIN; EURASIAN  
ENGLISH KINGS & QUEENS; EURASIAN SCOTTISH KINGS & QUEENS
- 121 • NOTE 2: DEFENSIVE WARS
- 122 • NOTE 3: WHO WERE THE DISPLACED HIGHLANDERS?
- 125 • 9: EURASIAN INCIDENTS FROM THE ROMAN PERIOD TO THE 21ST CENTURY
- 136 • NOTE 4: THE ENGLISH CIVIL WAR & REPUBLICANISM AS A WEAPON TO KILL

## CHAPTER 2

- 154 • THE INDUSTRIAL REVOLUTION & THE MULTICULTURAL OUTLOOK OF  
ROUSSEAU, VOLTAIRE, & PAINE
- 163 • NOTE 5: THE COMPANY & THE WAR OF INDEPENDENCE

## CHAPTER 3

- 171 • THE MULTICULTURAL FRENCH REVOLUTION, & THE NAPOLEONIC WARS

## CHAPTER 4

- 192 • THE MULTICULTURAL OUTLOOK OF MARX

## CHAPTER 5

- 219 • THE MULTICULTURAL OUTLOOK OF BOAS

## CHAPTER 6

- 223 • THE MULTICULTURAL INSTITUTE FOR SOCIAL RESEARCH
- 229 • NOTE 6: THE NOVEMBER REVOLUTION
- 243 • NOTE 7: SMALL COMFORTS TO REICH FUHRER, WWII & COLLAPSE
- 278 • NOTE 8: THE STALIN LINE
- 278 • NOTE 9: THE LIGHTNING WAR

## CHAPTER 7

- 280 • THE MULTICULTURAL FRANKFURT SCHOOL

## CHAPTER 8

- 283 • THE MULTICULTURAL CIVIL RIGHTS LAWS

## CHAPTER 9

- 287 • THE MULTICULTURAL ECSC, EEC, & EU



# CHAPTER 10

- 291 • 9/11, THE PATRIOT ACT, POLICE STATES, & BIN LADEN
- 315 • NOTE 10: NAVAL INTELLIGENCE OFFICER WILLIAM COOPER
- 333 • NOTE 11: THE COLD WAR, OSWALD, & JFK
- 356 • NOTE 12: SIEGE AT RUBY RIDGE
- 390 • NOTE 13: SIEGE AT WACO, TEXAS
- 392 • NOTE 14: ALIENS AND THEIR ATTACK WEAPONS

# CHAPTER 11

- 399 • BREIVIK'S LOG

# CHAPTER 12

- 415 • TREVOR'S STORY

# CHAPTER 13

- 431 • STONEHENGE & THE DMS SYSTEM

# SYNOPSIS

- 447 • SYNOPSIS ON INVADERS

# IMAGES

- 461 • IMAGES



# INVADERS

## Preface...

**Invaders has 13 chapters: CHAPTER 1-10 explains the sources for the multicultural and the class war agenda and the rise of a new world order where, in my own fashion, I break-down precisely where the agenda came from, who deployed it against the White race and the societies they created, and how the architects of that agenda designed and deployed it to destroy their racial and class enemies to bring about chaos so they could justify the rise of police states to protect themselves and their dictatorships, which they have done; CHAPTER 11 is my study and write up on the actual “log” Anders Breivik had kept and placed in his book: a European Declaration of Independence – 2083, that he had written in his 20s, where he describes all the events that had unfolded during his planning and manufacturing operations to attack the Cultural Marxists—as Breivik calls the global political elites due to their left-wing beliefs—and their leftist-held installations in Norway, which occurred on July 22, 2011. In regards to his book, let me say, it gives great insights into many of the critical subjects of concern to the White race today; such as, racial conflicts between the White and non-White peoples down throughout history, the critical multicultural agenda, and the sources and rise of “political correctness”, so he did a fine study. Just after successfully manufacturing the fertiliser-based explosives he required in his effort to attack leftist-held government installations in Norway, he had distributed his log and book to the many thousands of patriots he had previously made contact with from all across the world. The log can be located, in his book, at 3.154 Knights Templar Log, and you can download the book at the hyperlink given at the end of the chapter; in CHAPTER 12 I write about the events that had unfolded before and after the incident I, the author, was involved in with Alex Jones on the internet, and the UFO images I went to Tayside police with. I also show the letters I received from the politicians & police officers, the injuries I received, and the UFO images; CHAPTER 13 holds my study into the Stonehenge time monument.**

# **CHAPTER 1**

## **THE EURASIANS**

**Chapter 1 has 9 subjects:**

- **1: EURASIAN-ROMAN INFILTRATION**
- **2: WHO THE EURASIANS ARE**
- **3: HOW THE EURASIANS CAME TO EXIST (VEDAS/AVESTAS/JEWS)**
- **4: EXAMPLES OF EURASIANS**
- **5: CELTIC SOURCES & EVENTS IN EUROPE BEFORE ROME'S FOUNDING**
- **6: GERMAN SOURCES & EVENTS IN EUROPE BEFORE ROME'S FOUNDING**
- **7: EVENTS IN EUROPE DURING THE ROMAN WESTERN EMPIRE PERIOD**
- **8: EVENTS IN BRITAIN AFTER THE FALL OF THE ROMAN WESTERN EMPIRE;**
- **9: EURASIAN INCIDENTS FROM THE ROMAN PERIOD TO THE 21ST CENTURY**

**The Eurasian race and network, that controls the White world and is behind the anti-White agenda and class war, was constructed before the founding of Rome and very likely founded Rome before going on to win control over the rest of the White nations as well, due to the success of the Roman Empire, which is when the anti-White agenda began. From just after the apparent collapse of the Roman Western Empire, where it's claimed the Romans were defeated, and through to WWI, many of the Eurasians and White peoples still trusted the elites making it easy for them to fool them and engineer wars to cull them due to the class war and to the many social injustices throughout those times. But after WWI and after the elites, who promote the multicultural agenda, defeated pro-White Adolph Hitler in WWII in 1945AD, many of the peoples doubted their leadership so much by that time that the elites, knowing they can never fool them into a WWI-type war again, where they control all sides to cull the best of them, required a new strategy to break them and protect themselves and their dictatorship, so, what they would do, they would permit millions of non-Whites entry into the White nations in order to steal away White jobs and create hatred amongst them, and they would later fabricate a ghost enemy with a deadly phrase; which was, Al-Qaeda and the War on Terror, to justify the rise of police states to protect themselves from the Patriots by spying on them so they can get to them early to secretly kill them before a revolution begins, which is where we are right now, which is what I believe.**

**That's what happened in the past. That's what's happening with the Eurasian elites and their subjects today, and that's the short versions of this book. What follows is the long version and I will start at the beginning or where it all began.**

## **EURASIAN-ROMAN INFILTRATION**

**1. It was the Romans, or, what I believe and will make the case for in this chapter and book, the Eurasians, as I named them, who, thousands of years ago, brought the first European-Jews and non-Whites into the White nations and even permitted them Roman “citizenship” and “entry” into the Roman Army due to their multicultural outlook. There's much evidence to support that statement, but I will let Hitler have the final word on the Roman and Jewish part. In Mein Kampf Hitler wrote:**

**“The first Jew came to what is now Germany during the advance of the Romans. As always, they came as traders. During the turmoil resulting from the great migration of German tribes, they seemed to disappear again. Jews reappeared with the first formation of a Germanic state and this may be considered the beginning of the new, and this time permanent, Jew infiltration of Central and Northern Europe.”**

**During the creation of Rome’s western empire, many of the tribes, or peoples, Rome had conquered supposedly became Romanised; for instance, many of the peoples living in Britain, or “Britannia” as the Romans called today's England, and with many of the Greeks in Constantinople—the capital city of Rome's eastern empire, called the Byzantine Empire, which means Rome, at least on the face of it, held a multicultural outlook. Sometime before or after the apparent fall of Rome’s western empire, however, the Romans began to assume the native identity, or they started to talk the native language and wear their style of clothes.**

## **WHO THE EURASIANS ARE**

**2. Excluding the African-White race and network that JFK may have been part of, I have identified 3 new races; they are, (a) the White-Oriental race; (b) the White-Asian race; (c) the White-Oriental-Asian race, and some of which are called the Jews. Those races, I call the “Eurasians”. The ones that appear more White, are called Russian, English, French, etc., and the ones that appear less White, are called Russian Jews, English Jews, and French Jews, etc.**

## **HOW THE EURASIANS CAME TO EXIST**

**3. First, I will tell you my theory on how the Eurasians came to exist; second, I will present my evidence.**

**It was either due to an advancing Ice Age, or after the last Ice Age had ended—the last Ice Age lasted from approximately 110,000BC to 10,000BC—that the United Aryans were forced to migrate eastwards from their homelands in Greenland and Scandinavia, into NW India and, once there, some of them mixed in with the Asian and Oriental peoples already established there, so this I consider the “birth of the Eurasians” who knew themselves and also knew the natives. Or the Eurasians were created in and around the Levant area, which is, Israel, Turkey, and the Caucasus. A new “double-mix” and “triple-mix race” was born! No one's so sure what caused the dramatic shift from warm to cold, which led to an Ice Age, or cold to warm, which led to the ice melting and to the end of the last Ice Age, but it may have been due either to a reduction in the Sun's energy output, the axial tilt shifting, or an injection of cold/warm water into the seas. If the Eurasians “were” created in the NW of India where they may have established the ancient Indus Valley Civilisation (IVC), then sometime later they certainly began moving westwards into Afghanistan, Persia (Sumer & Babylon), and the Levant area, which was when they began calling themselves “Jews”, and further into Greece, Rome, and greater Europe.**

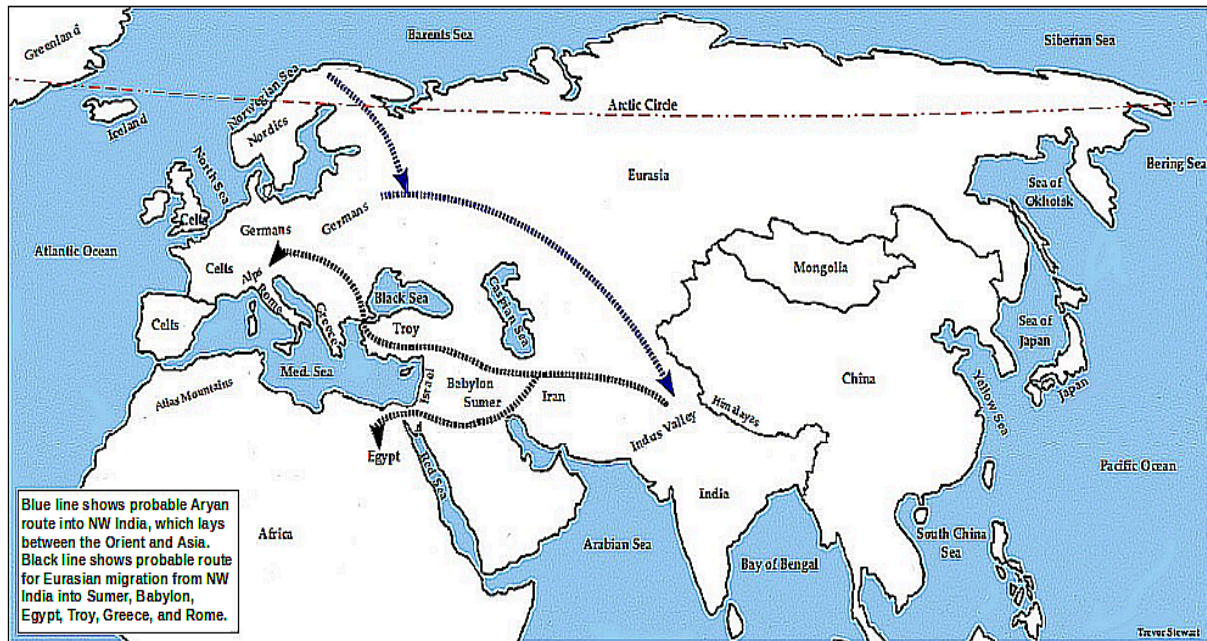
**That's my theory. The following is my evidence, which comes from many respectable sources, that I have divided into A, B, & C. A includes what the ancient Veda & Avesta texts, geologists, and anthropologists claim; B includes what the Jews & bible claim; C includes what the Romans claim.**

**A. The Vedas are a collection of ancient writings discovered in India and composed by a people who spoke an Indo-Aryan language, and the “Aryan” part may have been that migratory bird that flew into the northwest of India—see image below—south of the Himalayas, thousands of years ago, and mixed with some of the natives to create the Eurasian race and identity. Written in Sanskrit, there are four Vedas: the Rigveda, the Yajurveda, the Samaveda, and the Atharvaveda. The Rigveda, which means praise knowledge, is the largest of the texts, and the Rigveda consist of: (1) the Aranyakas: texts on rituals, ceremonies, and sacrifices; (2) the Brahmanas: hymns given opinions on rituals, ceremonies and sacrifice; (3) the Samhitas: hymns to the gods; (4) the Upanishads: texts on meditation, philosophy and knowledge. The Samhitas (Rigveda Samhitas), are the oldest of the writings, which date from 2,000BC to 1,700BC. The Avesta texts were written by Zoroaster, and his religion is called Zoroastrianism. The Avesta texts come from one master copy, which has been lost, and the oldest of the Avestan language texts dates to 1,323AD. In Mein Kampf, here is what Hitler wrote on the Aryans who mixed with the natives they ruled over:**

**“Often, amazingly small groups of Aryan tribes overpowered other peoples and caused the dormant intellectual and organizing powers of the conquered people to surface. These abilities were unexercised until the Aryans awoke these abilities in the lesser race. Often in a few thousand or maybe just a few hundred years, they built up civilizations which originally displayed every inner mark of their founder’s character but were adapted to fit within the special qualities of the local area and the characteristics of the subjugated people. When those who had been conquered began to advance themselves, possibly to the level of using their conqueror’s language, the sharp split between master and servant disappeared. The Aryan surrendered the purity**



of his blood by intermingling, and lost the right to the Paradise which he had made for himself. His racial purity declined as it mixed with the native races and gradually he lost more and more of his cultural creativity until finally, he began to resemble the natives more than his own forefathers, both mentally and physically. For a time, he could still live on the cultural substance he had built, but then stagnation set in and finally, oblivion claimed his race.”



*Aryan route into the NW India. Eurasian route from NW India into Sumer, Babylon, Troy, Egypt, Greece, and Rome.*

According to Austrian philologist/anthropologist Karl Penka, and Bal Gangadhar Tilak, a writer from India, “the original home of the Aryans, called the Airyana Vac jo, was in the far north, in regions round about the North Pole.”

Tilak wrote that intriguing statement in his book that was published in 1903AD called *The Arctic Home in the Vedas*, and his conclusions were based on the conclusions of philologists, anthropologists, geologists, archaeologists, and the evidence held within the ancient Indo-Aryan Vedas and supported by the ancient Indo-Iranian Avesta texts. The story goes, that, inbetween the ice ages, the Aryans lived in areas around the North Pole, and may even have been created there because, back in the past, or inbetween the ice ages called “interglacial ages”, the conditions at the northern polar area was “warm”. In his book, Tilak wrote: “The remains of the Palaeolithic man have been found often embedded between the two boulder-clays of two different Glacial periods, a fact which conclusively establishes the



existence of man in the Inter-Glacial period in the Quaternary era. Prof. Geikie speaking of the changes of climate in the Glacial and Inter-Glacial period remarks that “during the Inter-Glacial period the climate was characterised by clement winters and cool summers so that the tropical plants and animals, like elephants, rhinoceroses and hippopotamuses, ranged over the whole of the Arctic region, and in spite of numerous fierce carnivore, the Palaeolithic man had no unpleasant habitation there.”

So that's good evidence that the Aryans lived in the Far North pre-Deluge times—and the Deluge was an event that occurred around 12,000 years ago or 10,000BC when the melting ice sheets brought forth the great flood called the Deluge. But what happened next? What happened to the Airyana Vac jo or the original home of the Aryan race? According to the Veda/Avesta texts, the Aryans lived in the North for thousands of years until their homeland was destroyed by the advancing ice of an Ice Age. The Avesta states: “the happy land was rendered uninhabitable by the advent of a Glacial epoch which destroyed all life there in.”

There's other tales of people dwelling in and around the North Pole area; for instance, some of the ancient writers and writers closer to today supposed that the Hyperboreans lived in a warm region “far to the north”, which correlates with the Vedas and Avestas forcing you to suspect them as one and the same race; for instance, while the Rigvedas tell about Sun anomalies at the North Pole regions—for instance, the Dawn hymns in the Rigveda supply us with the evidence of a long continuous dawn of thirty days in the ancient home—the Avestas also informs about the Sun anomalies but goes further by telling that the Aryan homeland was destroyed by an Ice Age. The Avestas state: (1) “the Airyana Vac jo, which is the original home of the Aryan race, had originally a good climate”; (2) “the Airyana Vac jo saw the sun rise only once a year”; (3) “the happy land was rendered uninhabitable by the advent of a Glacial epoch which destroyed all life there in.”

What that means—due to the Sun anomalies in the far north, and knowing that the North Pole area itself, or 90° N, holds no solid land mass; merely billions of tons of ice floating on the Arctic Sea—the Aryan homeland must be

found around the Arctic Circle regions, or Greenland, Scandinavia, and North Central Asia in today's Russia.

Incidentally, how catastrophic was the Deluge? Well, if what scientists claim is accurate; “that the Deluge raised sea levels up by 450ft”, then it would be a disaster because, if sea levels rose today by 450ft, Rome and Israel would be all but submerged; Khufu's Pyramid, which stands at 481ft, would be submerged almost to its capstone, and the Law Hill, in Tayside where I live, that stands at 571ft, would slowly mostly vanish under the cold North Sea! Also bear in mind that civilisations mostly arise next to rivers and oceans, which means the last Ice Age melt, or the Deluge, 12,000 years ago, must have been catastrophic.

The ancient chroniclers alluded to the Aryans and Hyperboreans and the evidence suggests they are one and the same race. But if we look for evidence for the ancient Hyperboreans, or Aryans, or even the lost world of Atlantis that Plato wrote of—recall, Plato supposed that Atlantis lay "beyond the Pillars of Hercules", which is the Straits of Gibraltar, and French author Charroux supposed that “Hyperborea lay between Iceland and Greenland”—then what do we find? Well, nothing in North Central Asia. But closer to and within the Arctic Circle and Atlantic Ocean regions; which would be, Britain, Spain, France, and Scandinavia, we find incredible evidence of an ancient, lost, past, and only in those lands does one truly come close to being somewhat satisfied, and, after all, if Atlantis did exist, then Britain, Spain, France, and Scandinavia, lying in such close proximity to the Atlantic Ocean where Atlantis is rumoured to have been situated, may surely have been part of it. So what do we find in Britain, Spain, France, and Scandinavia? In Britain we find Stonehenge, which is an ancient temple and calender that began to be built in southern England in 8,000BC or 10,000 years ago, shortly after the last Ice Age ended, and was completed around 3,000BC or 5,000 years ago; in Scotland on the west coast of Lewis in the Outer Hebrides, we find the Standing Stones of Callanish that was built in 3,000BC and, just like Stonehenge, can also be used as a calender, based on Sunrises, to keep a track of time throughout the year. One

local legend tells how, on the special morning of Mid-Summer at the Callanish temple, the "Shining One" (the Sun's movements on Summer solstice, relative to Earth's horizon), walks along the avenue; in Spain and France we find hundreds of ancient, state-of-the-art, cave sketches and paintings—see image below—and at higher latitudes in northern Scandinavia or the region that falls within the Arctic Circle we find the ever so important Long Day and Long Night Sun anomalies caused by Earth's 23°+ Axial Tilt (or obliquity to the ecliptic), which also causes the seasons, that can only be observed if you are within the Arctic Circle region.

Is it possible that those ancient paintings and temples located in Spain, France, and Britain, are the relics of the lost civilisation of Atlantis, Hyperborea, and the Aryans whose race had evolved in the North and had not descended from the Cromagnons who apparently came out of Africa into Europe some 40,000 years ago? No one's so sure, and perhaps those relics are merely the start of a new, more advanced, civilisation brought in with the Cromagnons who displaced the Neanderthals, but certainly later, as they were building or rebuilding their civilisation—and excluding those Aryans who migrated into the NW of India to become the Indians and Iranians who, through verbal stories, kept the memory alive of the disaster that befell the Airyana Vac jo, Atlantis, or Hyperborea, and later, once they learnt to write, wrote that knowledge in the ancient Vedas and Avesta texts—they were overwhelmed by the Eurasian-Romans who emerged from the east into Rome and forward into Western and Northern Europe.

Based on those old accounts of advanced civilisations and “long dawns”, which evidently could only be in and around the Arctic Circle areas in the North, it appears the homelands of the Aryans, Hyperboreans, and also the lost world of Atlantis is to be located in Greenland, Iceland, Spain, France, Britain, Ireland, and Scandinavia; for it is only in those western and northern lands that, along with advanced, ancient, and massive cave art, that date back to around 30.000BC, a great many ancient time temples or calenders are to be found; over 20 at the Callanish complex alone, and, of course, being so far north of the equator, and

due to obliquity, in the far north in Scandinavia, which is north of the Arctic Circle (AC:  $65^{\circ} 44' 00''$  -  $90^{\circ}$ ), the Sun, throughout the Summer season, remains above the horizon for 4 months; throughout Winter, below—see image below—which fits the accounts in the Rigveda and Vedas that the Aryan homelands were somewhere in the Arctic Circle region where “a long continuous dawn of thirty days,” or 1 month of Day, and “a long continuous night of six months”, or 6 months of Night, were observed, remembered, then later written down by the ancient Indo-Aryans. In other words, precisely at the Poles themselves, the Polar Day lasts for 6 months throughout Summer, or from late March to late September; throughout Winter, the Polar Night lasts for 6 months, or from late September to late March, and the length of Polar Day and Night decreases as you move towards the equator (at  $0^{\circ}$ ) or to lower latitudes, which means the Aryan homelands could only be located in the Arctic Circle regions, and, if it was, surely it spilled over into the lower latitude regions where Britain, Spain, and France are to be found.

Incidentally, while Robert Charroux supposed that Hyperborea lay between Iceland and Greenland in the North, he also suspected that Hyperborea was the ancient homeland of the Nordic-White race, who were aliens, that, thousands of years ago, came to Earth, from a cold planet, far from a star, and settled in Earth's cold North due to it fitting their natural environment. Charroux also suspected that the Hyperboreans were the ancestors of the ancient Celts who, many thousands of years ago, conquered and dominated the world reaching as far as South America, and the Mayans and Peruvians descended from those ancient Celtic settlers who they worshipped as the “white-skinned gods”, which they allude to in their Popul Vuh book.

Tales of white gods, or light-skinned people, visiting and colonising South America were first told by Pedro Cieza de Leon in 1553AD during the Spanish exploration of that far off continent. The story goes, as Francisco Pizarro and his Spanish conquistadors (soldiers) were exploring areas in and around the Andes mountains in South America in the mid-16th century AD, they eventually happened upon the native Inca people who hailed them as gods because they

appeared similar to their Inca god Viracocha. But later writers; such as the British writer Harold Wilkins who was writing in the 1940s AD, took the story further by claiming that thousands of years ago an older White-race had lived in South America, and Quetzalcoatl—an Aztec god whose name loosely means “feathered serpent”, was from the lost world of Atlantis.

Who are these “white gods”, and did an older white-skinned race explore and settle areas in the Americas thousands and thousands of years before Leaf Ericson arrived in 1,000AD, and Christopher Columbus arrived in 1493AD? It’s difficult to tell, but Karl Penka’s “Origins of the Aryans”, published in 1883AD, and Talak’s “Arctic Home In The Vedas”, published in 1903AD, come to mind, as does Plato’s Atlantis, Herodotus’s Hyperborea, and Charroux’s White-Nordic-aliens who, he claims, settled on Earth in ancient times. Those writers certainly believed in an ancient, lost, civilisation built by white-skinned people, and there are many more besides them; for instance, thinking of the Vedas and the Airyana Vac jo, which, recall, was the homeland, or “happy land”, of the Aryans that was destroyed by an Ice Age, James H. Madole, wrote: “the Aryan race was of great antiquity and had been worshipped worldwide by lower races as "white gods"”.

That’s interesting. But here’s something else that’s interesting and is relative to those writers from the 1500s to the 1970s AD, now you can easily see where Hitler and his racial scientists acquired their concept; “that Aryans are superior”, from. Concerning those ancient Aryans, and you can read the full statement on page 10, recall what Hitler wrote:

“The Aryan surrendered the purity of his blood by intermingling, and lost the right to the Paradise which he had made for himself. His racial purity declined as it mixed with the native races and gradually he lost more and more of his cultural creativity until finally, he began to resemble the natives more than his own forefathers, both mentally and physically. For a time, he could still live on the cultural substance he had built, but then stagnation set in and finally, oblivion claimed his race.”

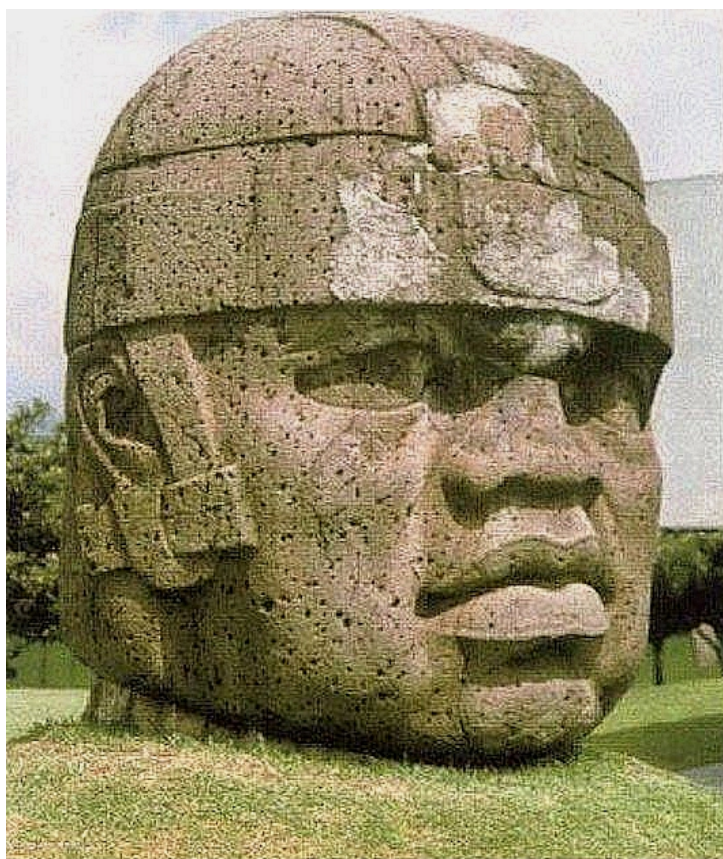




*Summer Sun, in the Arctic Circle in the far north of Norway, at “midnight”*



*Ancient cave paintings in France, next to the Atlantic Ocean. Some date back to 30.000BC+*



*Giant head made by the Olmecs around 1500-900BC*

**Incidentally, the Quaternary era lasted from around 2.6 million years ago to the present day. The Quaternary era is divided into two epochs; the Pleistocene, which lasted from 2.6 million years ago to 11.7 thousand years ago; the Holocene, which lasted from 11.7 thousand years ago to today.**

**During the Quaternary era, large mammals; such as, Mammoths, Mastodons, Diprotodons, Smilodons, tigers, lions, Aurochs, short-faced bears, giant sloths, and many more, roamed across the Americas, Eurasia, and Africa. Due to the destructive ice ages, however, that came and went, throughout the Quaternary era, large areas became deserts of ice with freezing cold temperatures that drove away and killed the animals in their millions due also to their living space and food becoming scarce. One of these major extinction events, which occurred in the Quaternary era, or started in the late Pleistocene and continued into the Holocene, killed off all large mammals (megafauna); such as, the mammoth, the mastodon, the saber-toothed cat, the woolly rhinoceros, Irish elk, cave bear, dire wolf, short-faced bear, etc., and, in North America, the horse and camel. Neanderthals also became extinct during the late-Pleistocene era, which coincided with the Cro-magnons entering Europe and elsewhere. Post-Ice Age, as the great ice-sheets retreated back to the North and South Poles and the higher latitudes became habitable again, cold-blooded animals, along with smaller mammals; such as, mice, took the place of the megafauna that became extinct due to the Ice Age. To an extent, the ice missed Africa.**

**To recap on A: By all accounts, there was an ancient old race who, during an inter-glacial age (between Ice Ages) and during the Palaeolithic and Quaternary era when environmental conditions were warm, lived in Scandinavia and Greenland, which is in the Arctic Circle zone, and very likely also lived in Northern Europe, or Britain, Ireland, and France, and even in Spain where some of the ancient cave paintings and advanced drawings are to be located. But due either to a catastrophic Ice Age or the Deluge at the end of the last known Ice Age which occurred around 10,000BC (9.700BC), they were forced to depart their homelands and migrate into the NW of India where they evolved into the**

**Indians and Iranians we know today, or some may even have mixed in with the Asian and Oriental peoples, who were already established in and around those areas, to form the Eurasian race, or the Eurasian race was created sometime later in and around Persia and the Levant area, but long before they migrated westwards into Europe.**

**So what happened next? After their construction in NW India or the Levant, the Eurasians began calling themselves Jews from around 1,300BC onwards, and also Hebrews and Israelites.**

**Now I will briefly tell the story of the Jews. Before I begin, I will point out the oldest civilisations in the Cradle of Civilisation and the Levant where the Jews emerged.**

**Great civilisations arose in the Cradle of Civilisation where Egypt was founded in 4,000BC, Sumer in 4,000BC, Troy in 3,500BC, and Babylon in 2,300BC. But in Greece is where the very first advanced civilisations specifically in Europe are to be found, which is why Greece is said to be the birthplace of western civilisation; for instance, on the Greek islands in the Aegean Sea is found the Cycladic civilisation that began around 3,200BC; in Crete, the Minoan civilisation began around 2,700BC, and the Mycenaean civilisation began around 1,600BC, where Alexander the Great—see image below—who is likely to be one of the Eurasians from the elite class, emerged from. Greece is also the birthplace for writing in Europe. Along with that, there's another ancient civilisation that needs mentioning; which is, the Indus Valley Civilisation (IVC). It may have been the Eurasians who created the Bronze Age IVC. But, regardless, it lasted from 3,300BC to 1,300BC, and included regions in NE Afghanistan, Pakistan, and NW India. The people who created the IVC were very advanced; indeed, they built cities made from brick. Their largest cities; Mohenjo-daro and Harappa, supported tens of thousands of people, had their own drainage and water supply systems, and even had an industry making objects from the all-precious metals. All-in-all, the IVC may have included 2 or 3 million people.**





*Was Alexander the Great Eurasian?*

## The Jews

### What the Old Testament Bible claims about the Jews

**B. Learned Jews, living in and around the Levant region, began writing the Old Testament Bible, which is also called the Jewish Bible and the Hebrew Bible, in 1,200BC. In it, or according to Genesis 1-5 in the Old Testament Bible, God made Adam, the first man, from dust, and placed him in the Garden of Eden to live. Adam needed a companion so God made Eve, the first woman, from one of Adam's ribs. Both were sensitive and kind; there was no violence and both were vegetarians. God warned them not to eat the forbidden fruit from (Genesis 2:17) “the tree of the knowledge of good and evil”, but, behind God's back, Lucifer, in disguise as a snake—Brotherhood of the “Snake”—encouraged Eve to eat the forbidden fruit, which she did, and gave some to Adam to eat, which he did, which set them on a path of destruction; Adam and Eve became anarchists. Because of that, God banished them from Eden, and they began wandering outside Eden. Eventually Adam and Eve had two children called Cain and Abel, and later they had a third son called Seth, with many more children born after Seth's birth which populated Earth. Adam died aged 930. Adam's first son, Cain, was tiller of the ground; his second was a keeper of sheep. Both were making sacrifices to God, but God preferred Abel's offerings over Cain's, which made Cain jealous, so, because of that, Cain killed Abel and God punished Cain to a life of meaninglessness**

wandering where he later found himself in the Land of Nod east of Eden. In Nod, Cain built a city and named it after his first son, Enoch, and Enoch is related to Noah who appears later in Genesis. Noah is important; his bloodline produced the Jews and Jesus Christ. So here's what happened: Being the last good man, God ordered Noah to build an ark to, along with his family, save the best of his creations, as God flooded the earth to begin over again with good peoples. After the great flood, Noah discovered land and went on to father three boys, called Shem, Ham, and Japheth, whom the nations and races descended from; Shem founded the Holy Bloodline that produced the Jews and Jesus; for instance, the Gospel of Luke traces Christ's bloodline from the first man, Adam, to Seth, Noah, Shem, King David, Joseph, and Jesus Christ; in Genesis 10, it claims that Ham's son, Cush, had a son, named Nimrod, who became the King of Babylon; Japheth's descendants were the maritime nations.

Noah is very important; of course, recall, his bloodline produced Christ, the Anointed One, who did great deeds. But there's many more reasons for Noah's importance that I will now explain.

Noah's bloodline produced Christ. But it also produced Shem who beget Arphaxad who beget Salah who beget Eber who beget Peleg who beget Reu who beget Serug who beget Nahor who beget Terah and Terah was the father of Abraham who was the Hebrew who made a covenant with the Lord god. In the Book of Genesis, the story goes, Abraham is called by God to leave the house of his father, Terah, and settle in the land of Canaan, which God promises to Abraham and his descendants. This promise God made to Abraham, is the source for the "Promised Land" belief held amongst the Jews, and Christians.

As directed by God, Abraham settles in Canaan. But, due to a famine in the lands of Canaan, Abraham, with his wife Sari or Sarah, seeks refuge in Egypt where he has a son, called Ishameal, to Sarah's Egyptian maid-servant. Later, Abraham has a second son, called Isaac, but this time to his wife Sarah. Abraham has many adventures before dying aged 130.

According to the Bible, sometime after Abraham had died, Joseph, who is living in Egypt, is later joined by his brothers and their families, and so begins the Hebrews' development into a large community living in Egypt. 430 years later, the Egyptian pharaoh, fearing the Hebrews due to them outnumbering the Egyptians, decides to enslave them and kill their newborn boys to reduce their numbers and them down. Hearing the order to kill all their newborns, to save her newborn's life, a Hebrew-Levite woman places her son in a basket made of bulrushes and sets him adrift on the river Nile. Later, the pharaoh's daughter discovers the boy, floating in the basket, and saves him to raise as her own, and names the boy Moses (Moshe). The boy Moses grows into adulthood. But, later, around 1,600-1,400BC, after discovering he is a Hebrew and witnessing an Egyptian slave-master beating a Hebrew slave, Moses kills the slave-master and flees across the Red Sea to Midian to avoid being put to death by the pharaoh. A while later, along with the old pharaoh dying and his son becoming pharaoh, and after marrying a midian priest's daughter called Zipporah, that he had a son to called Gershom, Moses witnessed a light high up on a mountain called Mount Horeb, so sets out to see what it was, and it turned out to be a burning bush. Nearing the burning bush, the Lord god—or YHWH, pronounced Yahweh, as the Israelites also call the Lord god—began talking to Moses. God gives Moses a rod and asks him to return to Egypt to free His Chosen People; the Israelites, from their bondage and lead them to land of Canaan, which is the land of milk and honey promised to Abraham by God. Eventually Moses, along with his brother Aaron, enters Egypt and tries to persuade the new pharaoh to release the Hebrews from their bondage by showing their awesome power in front of the him; Aaron turns his rod into a serpent and makes the water and seas run red with blood, but the pharaoh still doubts the power of the Hebrew god so refuses his demands. The pharaoh's disobedience angers God, perhaps, perhaps it is a test, so God punishes Egypt with ten bad plagues to make him see sense, and, due to the plagues, the pharaoh sets the Hebrews free. God had triumphed! As the slaves are set free, Moses gathers them together while the pharaoh is shocked and dazed. But, later, while Moses and the 600,000 freed Hebrew slaves are

waiting to cross the Red Sea during the exodus, and the pharaoh's firstborn son dies due to the midnight death-mist (the passover) from one of the ten plagues caused by the pharaoh's disobedience to God, the pharaoh turns against God, assembles his chariots and army, and marches on the Israelites. At the Red Sea, the Israelites see the pharaoh's army charging towards them across the desert sand and wilderness, and mass panic sweeps through their ranks. But, to their relief and amazement, Moses, with the awesome power of God working through him, holds up his rod and parts the sea creating a secure path for the Israelites to escape across before closing the sea and destroying the pharaoh's army that's closing in on them. The Israelites were saved! Now safely across the Red Sea and making their way to the Promised Land, in the third month the Israelites rested at Mount Sinai where Moses now receives the Ten Commandments from God. While Moses is away for 40 days and 40 nights receiving the Commandments from God, however, the Hebrews lose their faith, so Aaron cast a golden calf for the Israelites to worship in the hope of the "other gods" saving them. On discovering their idolatry, God decides to punish them by death, but Moses saves them after pleading with God to forgive them. Later, however, when Moses returns from Mount Sinai and is himself angered at the iniquities of the unfaithful, he throws the stone tablets, that the Commandments are written on, down on the rocks smashing them, and orders the Levites to kill the unfaithful. After the killings, Moses receives new commandments from God, and goes on with the faithful to make a covenant with Him, where the Israelites, in return for obeying His laws, will become His people and build a tabernacle to hold His spirit and carry it forth with them.

Leaving Mount Sinai, Moses led the Israelites through the Paran desert to the outskirts of Canaan-Israel where they halted. Moses sent forth some of his men to gather intelligence. But on their return, they warned Moses that the land is inhabited by giants, who were the sons of Anak, which caused so much fear amongst the Israelites that they begged Moses to lead them back to Egypt, but Moses refused and instead, bitter due to their loss of faith, punished them to wander the wilderness for 40 years until they had died leaving their children to inherit the Promised

**Land. When the forty years had passed, Moses led the Israelites past the Dead Sea into Edom and Moab where they held their faith throughout all temptations, conquered the lands of Og and others, and there on the banks of the Jordan river, right in sight of the promised land, passed the leadership to Joshua then departed for Mount Nebo to look over the land of Israel before dying and going to the kingdom of kingdoms to be with the Lord god.**

**Many hundreds of years later, one of Abraham's descendants, a young man called David, around 1,000BC, is living in Canaan, which is the land promised to Abraham by God, and the land that Moses led the Hebrews to during the exodus from Egypt. David is a young shepard going about his business until, due to the conflict with the Philistines, he kills Goliath, a giant and a Philistine, and becomes a hero amongst the Israelites. Because of David's fame, he becomes a close friend of Saul, the first king of the United Israel, and also a close friend to Saul's son, Jonathan. Their relationship continues. But eventually King Saul suspects that David is attempting to steal his throne, so tries to kill David, but David avoids death by hiding out as a fugitive. Later, while David is still a fugitive on the run, King Saul and Jonathan get themselves killed fighting the Philistines, and David, aged 30, becomes the king of Israel and Judah. As king, David unites the 12 Israelite tribes, conquers Jerusalem, and places the Ark of the Covenant (recall, God, on Mt Sinai, ordered Moses to construct the Ark, which held, amongst other items, the Ten Commandments written on two stone tablets) in the city. David died age 70. But during his life he had a son called Solomon, and it was Solomon who built the First Jewish Temple, called Solomon's Temple, which was completed in 957BC. Solomon's Temple lay intact for four hundred years, until King Nebuchadnezzar II of the Neo-Babylonian Empire, ordered its destruction in 587/586BC, and many of the Jews were taken and held captive in Babylon.**

**That's the biblical story on where humans and Jews emerged from; recall, Adam, Noah, Cain, etc., through to Japhet, Ham, Shem, Moses, Terah, Abraham, David, Solomon, etc. The following is what the scientists claim.**

**Humans evolved from the apes, including the Jewish people, and modern humans, who came out of Africa, first began wandering Asia, Europe, and the Orient from between 240,000 years ago to around 40,000 years ago. They settled in those above areas and became the races, or the Asians, Arabs, Europeans, Orientals, and mixed-race peoples, we know today. Concerning the Jewish people, or the Hebrews, and Israelites, and judging from what anthropologists, scientists, the ancient Mesopotamian clay-tablets, and the most oldest and ancient historical writings from those lands and others, there can be no doubt that the Eurasians, who I believe one part of their race became the European Jews, were in and around the Levant and Persia area from the earliest times right up, and, I suspect, were involved in some of the earliest secret societies and religions—see note 1: Secret Societies & Babylon Mystery Religion—that emerged from those lands. For instance, (a) it was in the Levant area that the Jews had apparently originated as a racial and religious group, which was around 1,300BC, and, along with Abraham, Moses and Christ, if they did exist, they had descended from the Canaanites who lived in the Levant; (b) in 1,000BC the Jews founded the Kingdom of Judah with Jerusalem acting as its capital city. The oldest part of Jerusalem is called the City of David, and David, for a time, was the King of the Jews and Israel; (c) in 900BC the Jews founded the Kingdom of Israel; (d) as for the secret societies the elite Jews may have been involved in, they are, the Brotherhood of the Snake, the Illuminati, the Roshaniya, and the Babylon Mysteries.**

**Down throughout their history, surrounding the Jews were the Arabs, Asians, Egyptians, Romans, and their empires who all ended up in wars with each other simply for control, wealth, and defense. The Jews, who were living in the Levant pre and post 1,300BC, and the Kingdom of Judah up to 600BC, did well under the Assyrian Empire—the Assyrian Empire was a Mesopotamian kingdom and empire that existed from approximately 2,500BC until its collapse between 612 and 609BC—that protected them. But come the fall of the Assyrians after the Battle of Carchemish in 605BC, and due to King Nebuchadnezzar II of Babylon, and the war between Egypt and the Neo-Babylonian Empire (609–539BC) intensifying, the Kingdom**

of Judah was destroyed around 600BC, or between 597 and 581BC (in 587BC Nebuchadnezzar II destroyed the Jewish city wall and Solomon's Temple in Jerusalem), and many of the Jews were killed and the survivors deported to Babylon where they were held in captivity as Judah became a province of Babylon called Yehud. Later, after Babylon fell to the Achaemenid Empire in 539BC—the Achaemenid Empire, also called the First Persian Empire, was an ancient Iranian empire founded by Cyrus the Great—the Achaemenids permitted the captive Jews to return to the Kingdom of Judah to rebuild their Temple or the Second Temple which they began to build in 521BC and finished building in 516BC. Throughout all the wars and calamities, the Jews held on. But come the advance of the Romans, Judea and Jerusalem were conquered in 63BC by general Pompey, so now the Romans, at least for a time, ran the show.

So the Jews won their Promised Land called Israel, and have been there ever since.

### **The Romans**

C. What happened after the Jews won their Promised Land? The Romans conquered Judea, of course, but the Jews survived right through to present times. But what happened after they won their Promised Land? Had the Jews infiltrated Rome and Greece, etc., before the founding of those states? It's difficult to tell, but, what I did discover, which will help shed some light on this critical point, is that, merely "614 years or so after the founding of Rome" (Rome was founded in 753BC), the Jews were noticed, and written about, living there in Rome; for instance, it's acknowledged that Jews were first expelled from Rome by Gnaeus Hispanus in 139BC, and, 80 years later, Cicero—a Roman writer, writing in 59BC, complained that "the Jews hold too much power in the public assemblies".

Whatever you think; for instance, maybe you think it looks like a Jewish network conspiring to control Rome and got caught, the other important thing to note, is that, as Hispanus and Cicero have shown, Jews were undoubtedly living in Rome and also held powerful positions in Rome



from 139BC onwards. Further, looking at Alexander the Great, see page 20, I can also say that Jews were in Greece and some became the nobility!

As you will come to see, the evidence indicates that the Jews “were” networking. But, another point, they weren’t just “the Jews”, per se, rather, they were Eurasian-Jews and Eurasians. Further, Cicero, etc., may have been one of the Whiter-looking Eurasians who was blaming the Jews, or the Eurasians who don’t appear so White, merely as a war strategy to deceive the true White-Romans; in other words, the true White-Romans would chase after the Jews leaving the Whiter-looking Eurasians, pretending to be true Romans, to get on with it and fight another day.

Having finished reading the evidence from A, B, & C—and INVADERS has much more to show you to convince you that they were Eurasians and were networking together to takeover foreign states—I will now ask the question: were those Jews who began writing the Old Testament (or the Hebrew or Jewish bible) in 1,200BC the ancestors of those Jews that Hispanus expelled from Rome in 139BC, and Cicero wrote about in 59BC? Of course they were. But more than that, they were the Eurasians who, perhaps created in NW India shortly after the last Ice Age had ended around 12,000BC, and the subsequent floods forced them to migrate from their “happy land“, came out of NW India before moving into the Levant where they founded the Kingdom of Judah in 1,000BC, and the Kingdom of Israel in 900BC. After the sack of Judah in approximately 600BC by King Nebuchadnezzar II of Babylon, thousands of Jews were killed and the survivors deported to Babylon where they were held as slaves in captivity. After their emancipation from captivity in Babylon, the Jews returned to their Promised Land. But, later, and much earlier than 139BC; I suppose, when Hispanus expelled them from Rome, the Eurasian and Eurasian-Jews slowly, over time, migrated into Rome where they may have founded the all-conquering Roman Empire in 27BC under Augustus-Octavian—perhaps one of their high-ranking White-looking Eurasians from the Julio-Claudian dynasty, or perhaps he was, face value, one of the Oriental-Whites and not Asian-White. It was the “not so White-looking” Asian-Eurasians who, more



or less, became the European-Jews, and the Whiter-looking ones became the White-Romans, etc., by assuming their identity, before displacing the White-Romans and also by somewhat integrating them into their own Eurasian race. Many years later, some of the Jews returned to Babylon, the place of their captivity, where they wrote the Babylonian Talmud between 300-600AD, which is a set of documents that, due to being condemned as blasphemous by the Catholic Church, over the centuries, has been outlawed and burnt; the first instance being in Paris, France, in 1240 or 1242AD, under the reign of King Louis IX. “Blasphemous” because religious Jews believe that Christ was a false messiah, and the true messiah is yet to appear.

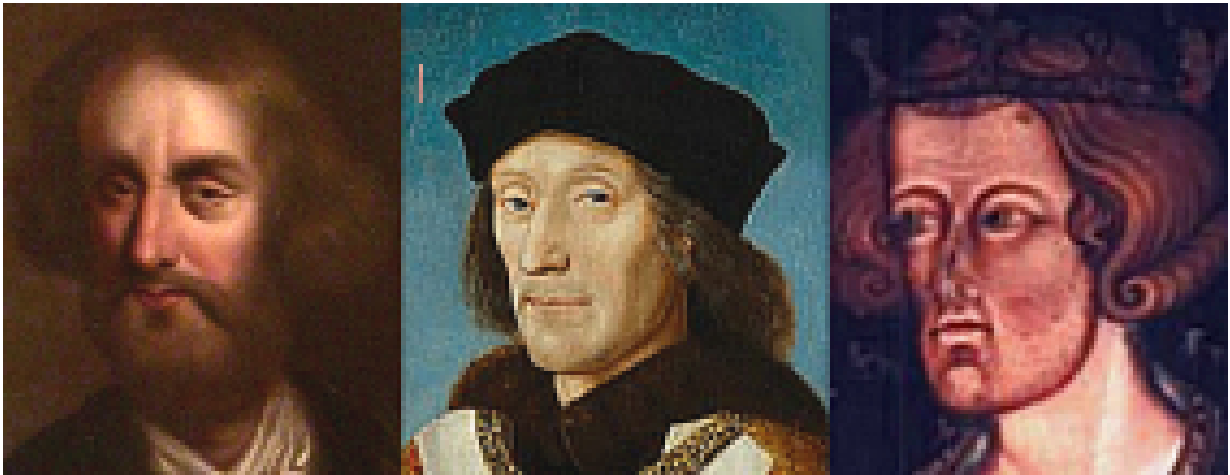
Certainly moving amongst the true White-Romans and the Oriental-White-Romans, the Brotherhood, or the Asian-Eurasians, through the Roman Empire, went on to conquer the White nations (see chapter 1 point 8). Once they conquered the White nations, the new Eurasian-Roman elites, in and around the 9th century AD, went on to found the Barbarian Nations, where they were given the conquered tribes a new identity, and also founded the feudal system before setting up, from the 1400s through to the 1700s AD, the Portuguese, Spanish, French, Dutch, and British trading empires as they moved across the Atlantic into the Americas.

## **EXAMPLES OF EURASIANS**

4. Studying the Mongolian elites to trace their unique Oriental eyes that I first noticed with the Mongolian khans and with Scotland's King Donald, England's King Henry VII and Edward I—see images below—which led me to suspect that the “European” leaders were not “true” White people but were of “mixed” race, I traced it, in Mongolia, back to eleven generations after the Grey Wolf and the White Doe, which is the mythical creation of the Mongolian people or race, and ten generations before the great Genghis Khan to Alan Gua or "Alun the Beauty". Gua had five sons, but Bodonchar Munkhag, her third son, was the only portrait I could find. No dates. See images below.



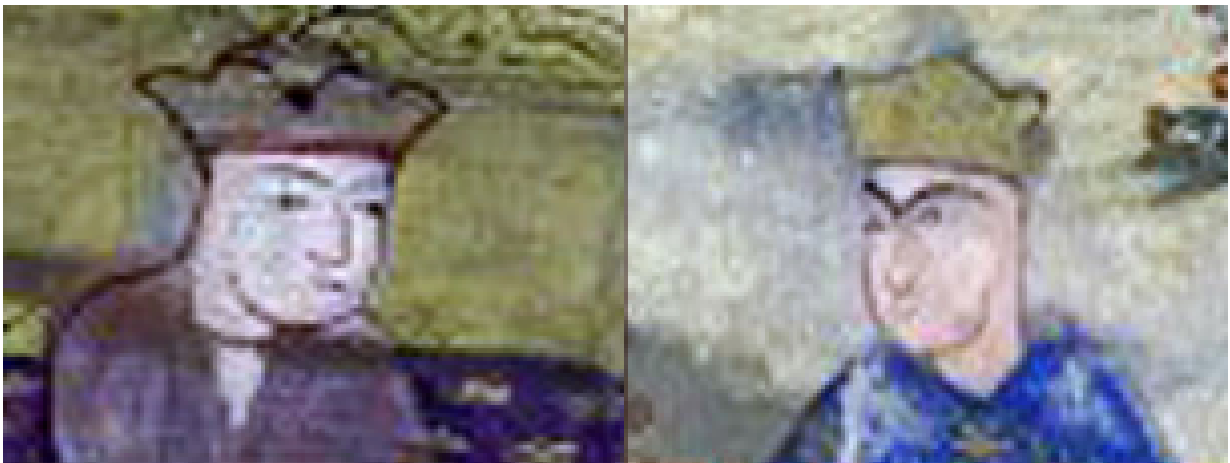
*Emperor Taizu. Note the unique Oriental Eyes*



*Donald I of Scotland.*

*Henry VII of Enngland*

*Edward I of England*



*Alan Gua*

*Bodonchar Munkhag*

**So I traced that Oriental “look” back to Mongolia and back to Alan Gua and her son Munkhag, which is the earliest portraits I could find. But what about Gua and Munkhags's descendants? Do they share that Oriental “look”? One of the ancestors of Gua and Munkhag is none other than the great Khabul Khan, and, yes, he has that look. See image below of Khabul Khan who I traced through seven descendants back to Munkhag.**



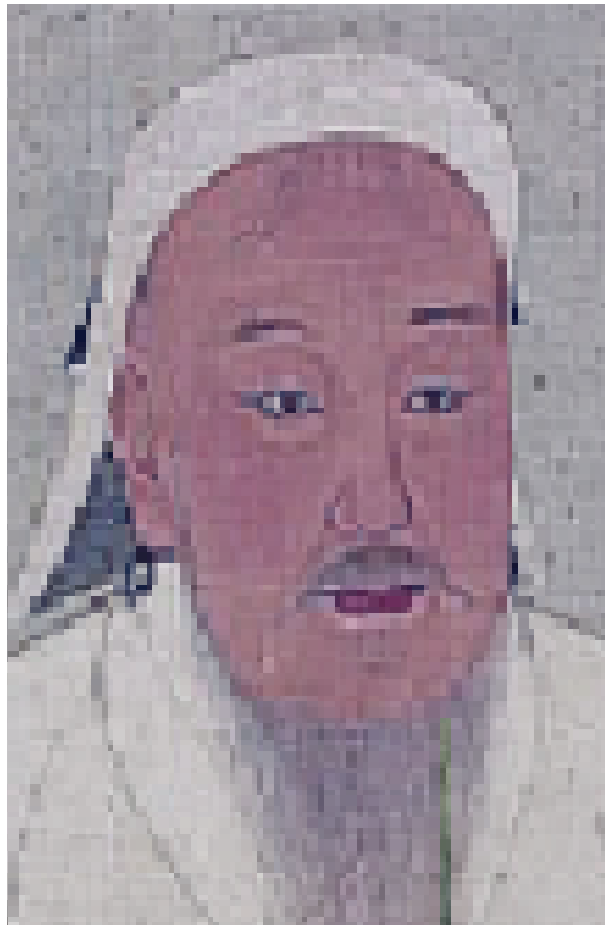
*Khabul Khan*

**So who descended from the great Khabul Khan? None other than Yesugei Khan. Yesugei Khan is traced through five descendants back to Khabul Khan. See image below of Yesugei Khan.**



*Yesugei Khan*

**So who descended from Yesugei Khan? A remarkable man, I'm sure you've all heard of, called Genghis Khan, who actually founded the Mongol Empire in 1206AD. See image below.**

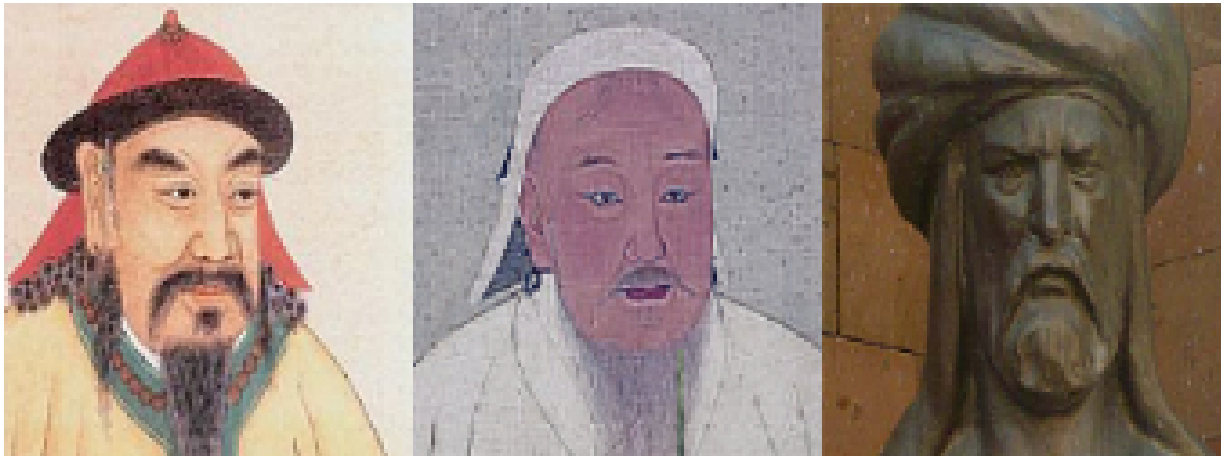


*Genghis Khan*

**The nexus is made; Khabul Khan was the great-grandfather of Yesugei Khan, and Yesugei Khan was the father of Genghis Khan who founded the Mongol Empire in 1206AD. But why is that so important? Well, know this: up to Yesugei, the Mongolian elites all appear as one race or Oriental-looking peoples, which shouldn't surprise us. But what we see with Yesugei is incredible evidence that they were actually not full Oriental peoples at all but were mixed race peoples! In fact, Genghis appears part Pakistani!**

**So, incredibly enough, undoubtedly Yesugei appears Pakistani, which could only mean that some of his ancestors and descendants are a mixed race people, or a hybrid race between Orientals and Asians. But, moving on, is that the only racial mix in the Mongolian khans or is there more? To**

answer that question, comrade, we must look at Yesugei and Genghis's descendants to see if we can visually see any more non-Oriental features. So who descended from Yesugei Khan and Genghis Khan? Well, brace for a shock, comrade, none other than "Batu Khan", from the Golden Hord, who looks White and was the grandson of Genghis Khan and the son of Yesugei Khan! See images below.



*Yesugei Khan*

*Genghis Khan*

*Batu Khan*

**The triple-mix Pakistan-Han-Polish race,  
or Asian-Oriental-European**

**It is proven that Yesugei Khan, who appears Pakistan and Oriental, Genghis Khan, who appears Oriental, and Batu Khan, who appears White, due to them being related, were a mixed raced people.**

**Incidentally, in case you haven't heard of Genghis Khan, I will tell you a little about him and the Mongolian empire he founded: Mongolian power began with Genghis Khan—the first khan, or emperor, of the Mongolian Empire that lasted from 1206AD to 1687AD. At its height, the Mongolian Empire reached from Poland, Russia and China to the Sea of Japan, and from the Indian subcontinent to the Levant. Due to wars of succession, the Mongolian Empire divided into, by the time of Kublai Khan's death in 1294AD, four separate and autonomous empires; they were, the Golden Horde in the northwest, or, at its height, from Siberia to the Urals to the Danube in the west, and from the Black Sea to the Caspian Sea in the south; the Chagatai, or, at its height, from south of the Aral Sea to the Altai Mountains; the Ilkhanate in the southwest, or, at its height, areas in what is now Iran, Iraq, Syria,**



Azerbaijan, Turkey, Armenia, Georgia, Afghanistan, Turkmenistan, Pakistan, Dagestan, and Tajikistan; the Yuan dynasty in China. The collapse of the empire was a slow process; it was as follows, the Mongols lost most of China to the Chinese Ming forces, before, in 1368AD, retreating to the interior of Mongolia, but, in the same year, the Ming elites conquered the Mongol capital—Ulan Bator, in Mongolia in East Asia; in Russia, the Grand Duchy of Moscow defeated the Golden Horde in Russia in 1480AD, forcing them out of Russia; in 1687AD the Chagatai empire collapsed.

Back to the race trace. Both Khabul and Yesugei have those features I traced to Mongolia. But what about the Mongolian khans who not only descended from Gua, Munkhag, Khabul, Yesugei, and are related to Genghis, but also conquered much of the world and some? Do they have that “look”? See images below.

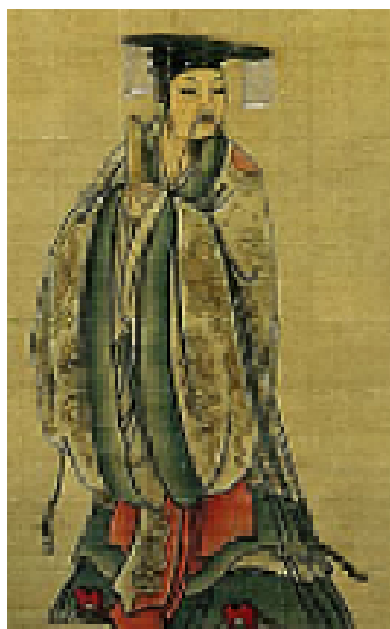


*The first 6 khans of the Mongol Empire*

So they all have that “look”. But, hear this, ALL the Mongolian khagans, from Gua to Genghis Khan to Ligdan Khan from the Northern Yuan Dynasty, based in Mongolia, who ruled from 1603AD to 1634AD, share those physical features.

Evidently I traced that “Oriental look” back to Mongolia and the khagans. But although they share some physical features with many of the European elites, they don't look so much like them. So how did some of the European elites acquire Oriental features that pure-blooded (White) Europeans don't have? As stated previously, the Aryans perhaps migrated into NW India and mixed in with some of the Asians to create the Eurasian race. But is it possible that those Aryans also mixed in with some of the Orientals who reside not far from NW India? It's possibly, of course, and even likely. But, whatever you think, there can be no doubt that Genghis Khan's father, Yesugei, was part Pakistan, and his grandson, Batu Kkan, was part White, which means they are Eurasians.

You're thinking that the Eurasians probably emerged a long time ago from NW India, or today's Pakistan, and with the Oriental-Mongolians in the East. Right? Well, you're right on the India part but absolutely wrong on the Oriental-Mongolian part. So where did my anthropological investigation lead to? Oriental CHINA and the Han Chinese—the world's largest race; 1.4 billion Han. Most of the emperors, from all the Chinese dynasties; from the Xi to the Qing, have those features or that “Oriental look”. In China, the earliest I traced them to was to Yu the Great who lived from 2,123BC to 2,025BC. Yu was the legendary Han-Chinese king who established the Xia dynasty and implemented dynastic rule in ancient China. See images below.



*Yu the Great*



*Qi: son of Yu*



After the Xia dynasty emerged the Shang dynasty 1,600BC – 1046BC; Zhou dynasty 1,046BC – 256BC; Qin dynasty 221BC – 206BC; Han dynasty 206BC – 220AD, and there are some 30 plus dynasties after the Han. But what all those Chinese dynastical elites have in common is their race; all of them are Han Chinese. Below is a sample of some of the Chinese elites.



*First king of the Shang*



*First emperor of the Qing*



*First emperor of the Han*



*Emperor Wu of the Song*



*Emperor of the later Jin*



*Emperor Tazu of Song*



*First emperor of the Jin*



*First emperor of Yuan Dyn.*



*First Ming emperor*

According to the oldest Chinese historians, before the Xia dynasty was the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors with the Yellow Emperor as the first emperor of the Five Emperors. See image below.



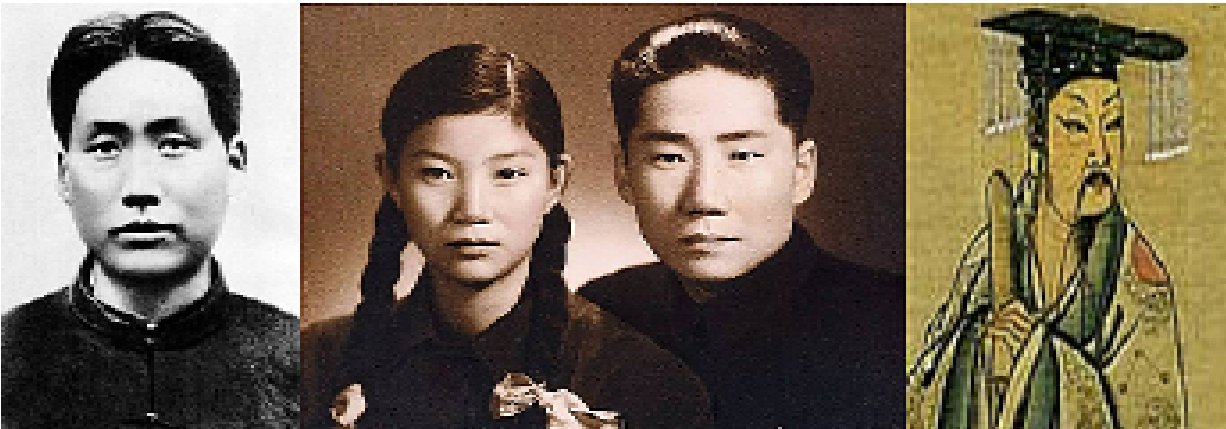
*The Yellow Emperor*

If you recall what I previously wrote, that Emperor Taizu of China defeated the Mongolian-led Yuan dynasty for control over China in 1368AD. But here's something more: After the khans were defeated, a noticeable racial shift had occurred with the elites that emerged after Emperor Taizu of China died; for instance, while the new elites still hold the Oriental eyes, they appear different from the Mongolian khans and Taizu—see images below—and it's the same with the Qing emperors of China that emerged after the Ming dynasty—see images below. So what happened? As I have proved, the Mongolian elites, or some of them, were mixed race peoples. Therefore, to convince the true Chinese that the Mongolian elites were deposed, they brought in family members who appear racially different from the Mongolian elites but still hold those ever so important Han or Oriental eyes to fool the true Han Chinese. Simple as that. To give an example: imagine Yesugei didn't have those Oriental eyes, he would look Pakistan, which means he can be used to infiltrate and rule over the true Pakistan peoples, and it's the same with Batu Khan; he would be perfect to infiltrate and rule over the



**White peoples. The clone elites fail to produce many perfect clones like Batu Khan, and there's mostly always some trace no matter how subtle, but they do make them good enough to fool the non-Eurasians they rule over.**

**In the images below, compare, at least on the face of it, four true Han-Chinese persons; from the left, Mao Zedong, Mao's son and daughter-in-law, and Yu the Great, to the clone-Eurasian elites of the Ming and Qing emperors.**



*Han*



*Some of the Ming emperors of China*



*Some of the Qing emperors of China*

**As complicated as it is, my best conclusion is that the Aryans migrated into NW India, around the Himalaya region, surrounded by Oriental and Asiatic peoples, where they bred in with some of the native elites to create the triple mix Eurasian race that consists of Europeans, Orientals, and Asians, or Whites, Han-Chinese, and Asian-Pakistanis.**

**In Britain, to fit in with the original White peoples, they stopped breeding with those holding the Han and Asian appearance; only bred with family members who don't hold that look; for instance, the Batu Khan types, hence why they now mostly appear White. For evidence, see images below of Henry VII's son, Henry VIII.**



*Henry VII*



*Henry VIII*

**But, alas, once you mix your race, sooner or later, the truth always spills out. See images of Henry VIII's catholic daughter, Mary, and, related to Henry VIII, James II.**



*Mary I*



*James II*



Two Eurasians I discovered in Europe are: (a) Julius Caesar—Oriental-(Han)-White, who lived between 100 to 44BC—see example A below, along with an image of myself to compare; (B) Emperor Commodus—Asian-(Pakistani)-White, who ruled Rome from 177AD to 192AD—see example B below, along with an image of myself to compare.

Example A & B



Caesar became dictator of the Roman Republic in 49BC after winning the civil war that began in Rome after Caesar's Gallic Wars had concluded, and paved the way for the Roman Empire that was founded by his adopted son, Augustus-Octavian, who, after defeating Marc Antony in the civil war that began after Caesar was assassinated in 44BC, became the first Roman emperor in 27BC. Emperor Commodus ruled from 177 to 192AD.



It's difficult to tell if Caesar and Commodus were triple-mixed or double-mixed; that is, if they were White-Oriental-Asian, White-Oriental, or White-Asian. However, on the face of it, they, at least, appear double-mixed.

**To close this piece: So is it the Han, the Poles, the Pakistanis or a triple mix of all three that controls your nation today, and what part of that triple mix race is the critical part that binds them together and is the Jews? I'll leave it for you to decide.**

## **SECRET SOCIETIES & BABYLON MYSTERY RELIGION**

### **Secret Societies**

**Note 1. The oldest secret societies are sourced to India, Afghanistan, Sumer, Babylon, and Egypt, but the oldest is called the Brotherhood of the Snake, also known as the Brotherhood of the Dragon. Lucifer is their god symbolised as the Sun, but he is also called Osiris, and Lucifer is also represented as the snake and dragon that symbolise wisdom. It is said that Lucifer, who is also called the Fallen Angel—Fallen Angels are sinful saints—rebelled against God, so was cast out from Heaven and thrown to Earth to become master over. Because the Brotherhood communicate to the sinful gods and the gods give them knowledge and direction, the brotherhoods are said to be illuminated, hence why they are also called the Illuminati, the Keepers of the Mysteries, and the Keepers of the Secrets of the Ages.**

**The Brotherhood of the Snake is the oldest of the ancient cults. The other secret groups are (1) the Roshaniya from Afghanistan. The Roshaniya, who called their cult the Order and are linked to the Brotherhood, were Communists who worked to abolish private property, religion, nation states, and to shape and control the world; (2) the Mithra from Persia-Iran. The Mithras also idolised the Sun, and the cult of Mithra spread into Babylon, Greece, and Rome. Mithra was a geenie who gave its worshipers success in the mortal world and the immortal next world; (3) the rest of the groups are the Illuminati, the Builders, the Qabbalah, the Open Friendly Secret Society, the Rosicrucians, the Freemasons. The Freemasons' motto is “Order Out Of Chaos”; the Jesuits, the Knights of Malta, the Knights of Columbus, the JASON Society, the Group, the Russell Trust, the Skull & Bones, the Scroll & Key, the Council on Foreign Relations, the Royal Institute of International Affairs, the Trilateral Commission, and the Bilderberg Group. Possibly the most important group, and even is those groups under false names to conceal itself, is the Illuminati.**

**There are other secret society groups that I have not included here. But many researchers agree that they are all one and the same and they all share one objective; which is, to erase Christianity, to erase private property, to implement a cashless society, and to establish an Illuminati-controlled world army and government.**

**Many books have been written warning people about secret societies and their sinister intentions. But while some claim they are positive and others claim they are negative, all agree they exist. The following is two examples:**

**(1) in Manly P. Hall's book called The Secret Destiny of America, Hall wrote: "For more than three thousand years, secret societies have labored to create the background of knowledge necessary to the establishment of an enlightened democracy among the nations of the world. The Greek Dionysians were social and political temple builders, known as the Collegians in later Rome. The rise of the Christian Church brought persecution of the classical intellectual pattern's ideology, driving the guilds into greater secrecy; but all have continued searching for human happiness under a variety of rituals and symbols; and they still exist, as the Order of the Quest."**

**(2) in Constance Comby's book called The Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow, Comby wrote: "The plan for the future includes the instillation of a new world messiah; the implimentations of a new world government; a new world religion; a universal credit card system will be implemeted as a cashless society; a world food authority will control all of the worlds food suply; a universal tax; a universal draft; they intend on utterly rooting out people who believe the bible and worship God and to stamp out Christianity from the face of the earth. They intend to bring about a NWO. An order that writes God out of the picture and deifys lucifer."**



After reading the Sumerian and Babylonian texts interpreted from ancient clay-tablets, and reading many interpretations of them, it seems the Brotherhood of the Snake cult, which is a secret society group, began thousands of years ago with the Anunnaki and Enki—Enki is the God of Creation in the Sumerian texts; in the Babylonian texts, Enki is Ea. Enki and the Anunnaki were human-like beings who came to Earth, 450,000 years ago, from Nibiru that lays beyond Neptune, in search of minerals to mine. The Anunnaki, also known as the “gods”, eventually located their much needed mineral deposits then set about mining them, but this led to problems due to the mining being too difficult for the lower class Anunnaki workers. Because of that, Enki advised creating a hybrid, slave, worker, race, from the Anunnaki and early man, to carry out the hard work for them, which they did, and the hybrids were very likely called the “Nephilim”, as alluded to in the biblical Books of Genesis and Numbers. Both the Anunnaki and Nephilim required a base and somewhere to live, so the Anunnaki established Sumer, which lays between the rivers Tigris and Euphrates in the Mesopotamia region. Eventually requiring middle men to mediate between the Anunnaki and the hybrid, Nephilim, workers, the Anunnaki elites reared and trained some of the Nephilim to become the management class, which became the “human” nobility, and this was when the Divine Right To Rule outlook, or Absolutism, was established. Life carried on in Sumer. But, according to the controversial Sumerian researcher Zecharia Sitchin, around 2,400BC a nuclear war broke out between the Anunnaki, which left Sumer destroyed and deserted due to radioactive particles saturating the site. Due to the nuclear war and the devastation caused by the fallout, many of the Anunnaki departed Earth to return to Nibiru, but some remained to, later, or once the radiation had fallen to safe levels, re-occupy the Sumer site, which was when, around 2,300BC, Babylon was founded. Out from Babylon, of course, emerged the royal bloodlines, or the Nephilim elites, that, through the Roman Empire, took over Europe then, through the European empires they had founded post-collapse of the Roman Empire, colonised parts of Africa, Australia, and the Americas.

Even if you doubt the Brotherhood's connection to the Anunnaki aliens and the Nephilim hybrids, you must understand that it is still a genuine group and a dangerous group which still exists today under many different names such as Freemasonry, to give one example. Keeping that in mind, in regards to what you have just read in the paragraph above, let me say, the connections are not airtight, but that's the story, in one form or other, associated to the Brotherhood and the aliens, and they all, give or take, emerged from the tell-tale clues discovered within the ancient Mesopotamian clay-tablets and the Jewish and Christian bibles, etc; for example, (a) in the Babylonian Enuma Elis clay-tablet story — and this is relative to creating hybrids — it states: “the younger gods go on strike and refuse their duties of keeping creation working”; (b) In the Old Testament, Genesis — and this is relative to creating the hybrids called the Nephilim — it states: “The Nephilim were in the earth in those days, and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bore children to them”; (c) in the Old Testament, Numbers, — and this is relative to the word and name “Nephilim” and “Anunnaki” — it states: “And there we saw the Nephilim, the sons of Anak”. Anak is believed to be the Anunnaki; (d) In Enki And The New World Order, which is a Sumerian tablet story — and this is relative to Enki being an Anunnaki god and to the word and name “Anunnaki” — Enki states: “I am the big brother of the gods”, and “I am the leader of the Anuna gods”. Anuna is also believed to be the Anunnaki; (e) in the Babylonian tablet where Enki is Ea — and this is relative to “creating hybrids” — it states: “Marduk opened his mouth and unto Ea he spake 'My blood will I take and bone will I fashion. I will create man who shall inhabit the earth.'”; (f) — and this is relative to the “nuclear fallout” belief that emerged from the “evil wind” phrase described in the Sumerian Lament for the destroyed Sumerian city of Ur — it states: “The evil wind, like a rushing torrent, cannot be restrained. The weapons in the city smash heads and consume indiscriminately.” The Anunnaki, incidentally, along with being viewed as aliens, are also said to be giants.

Leaving aside if Enki/Ea was an alien or not, another important thing to note, is that, along with the very oldest Egyptian hieroglyphs; for instance, the tomb U-J hieroglyphs that date to 3,150BC, the Pyramid hieroglyphs that date to 2,400BC, the Coffin hieroglyphs that date to 2,100BC, and the Book of the Dead hieroglyphs that date to 1,700BC, those early Mesopotamian clay-tablets were written before the Old Testament Bible; in other words, the oldest Mesopotamian tablets, found in Sumer, date back to 3,000BC, while the Old Testament, which is the Hebrew or Jewish bible, began to be written in 1,200BC, and the New Testament, which was written by Christians, was written in the 1st century AD during Christ's life or just after His crucifixion at Calvary, also known as Golgotha. Therefore, the Old and New Testament Bible is merely a collection of stories taken from the earlier Sumerian/Babylonian/Egyptian/Indian, etc., accounts, hence why they all appear very similar; for instance, in Genesis, in the Old Testament Bible, Noah escapes the flood in a boat or ark; in the Sumerian Epic of Gilgamesh tablet, it sees Utnapishtim escaping the flood in an ark, and given immortality by the gods for surviving and preserving man; in Sumer, Sargon was placed in a basket then set adrift on the river; in the Old Testament Book of Exodus, Moses was placed in a basket then set adrift on the river; in the Old Testament Book of Exodus, the pharaoh kills all firstborn children; in the New Testament Gospel of Matthew, Herod the Great, who was the king of the Jews who ruled Judea for Emperor Tiberius and governor Pontius Pilate, after hearing that the true king of the Jews, or the Anointed One, which was Jesus Christ, was recently born in Bethlehem, which meant the prophecy, as warned in Micah 5:2, had been fulfilled—the prophecy states that “the true king of the Jews and Israel will be born in Bethlehem”—ordered all boys 2 years and under to be put to death to destroy Him; in Babylon, the Code of Hammurabi, which may have originated in Sumer and are laws almost identical to the biblical Ten Commandments, was written before Moses received the Ten Commandments from Yahweh on Mount Sinai; in Sumer we find an Edin, which means, “the abode of the gods”; in the Old and New Testament we find Eden, which is the garden that God made for Adam and Eve to

live in; in India we find a prophet named “Krishna”, who appears very similar to Christ, and “Krishna”, in English, means “Christ”; Osiris, Nimrod, Krishna, and Jesus were all resurrected after death.

### **Babylon Mystery Religion**

Babylon, which, recall, is situated in today's Iraq, is of great interest; for instance, statues in Rome, the Statue of Liberty in the U.S., and Britannia, from Britain, appear identical to Queen Semiramis. But who is Semiramis? She is none other than a mother goddess, from ancient Babylon, that the Pagans worshipped centuries before Christianity was founded! So that's interesting. But what if I told you that the mother of all Freemason lodges, which is in England, sits in Great Queen Street and is very likely in honour of Semiramis, and that the Masons use pagan symbols to represent their order! Would you think our elites are full-blown Pagans conspiring against you to deceive you? Well, it appears they are. Yes, the elites of today, or the Illuminati-Brotherhood, actually practice a hidden, occult, PAGAN religion, called Babylon Mystery, that traces back to ancient Babylon and Egypt and very likely entered Babylon from Persia-Iran through the 4,000-year old cult of Zoroastrianism and the 6,000-year old cult of Mithra!

Note: Are the Mithras and Zoroaster the blood-ancestors of Bal Tilak's United Aryans from the ancient Vedas? Zoroaster, recall, is the Persian-Iranian religious teacher who founded Zoroastrianism in perhaps 2,000BC, which became the dominant religion in ancient Persia. It's believed that Zoroaster, writing in Old Avestan, which was his native dialect, wrote the Gathas and Yasna Haptanghaiti hymns that compose the core teachings of Zoroastrianism.

To the early Pagans and Christians, pagan symbols being the basis for Christianity was merely the integration of two religions or Christianity borrowing from the old pagan religion. But the important thing, is that the Pagans still exist and STILL practice the old pagan-religion! More than that, however, never mind the strange common peoples who may sacrifice a poor old bull now and again in honour

of Molok, Marduk, Osiris, or Nimrod, the ruling elites, due to their power, are much more dangerous; in fact, some of them mock the Christians all the time, and have built a global fascist dictatorship backed up by a thuggish police state to enslave each and every one of us!

If you need evidence that some of the elites are Pagans, know that the symbols they use today to represent their apparently Christian nations are pagan; for example, the seal of the U.S. and the U.S. dollar bill (see images below) both have the Egyptian eye of Horus and a pyramid on them, and etched and printed on both the seal and bill are the latin words Novus Ordo Seclorum, which means “New order of the ages” or NWO! Frightened? You should be because they also see Lucifer as the one true God!

U.S. Seal



U.S. Dollar Bill



*Etched and printed on the seal and bill is not baby Jesus; it is a pagan idol and symbol*

Due to new field-discoveries in the land of Mesopotamia; for instance, the Enuma Elish tablets that predates the Old Testament and recounts the deeds of Marduk who may or may not be connected to the Mysteries and the Brotherhood, the story I pieced together, due to reading the Sumerian and Babylonian texts interpreted from the clay-tablets, the Bible, many books, and speculation from myself, tells that the Babylon Mystery school was run by Nimrod—the son of Cush, in the ancient city of Babylon that was built shortly after the Deluge—the Deluge, recall, occurred around 10,000BC with the melting of the ice sheets due to the ending of the last Ice Age. The

Mystery school's initiates were Pagans who worshipped the Sun. But after the confusion of tongues, and after Nimrod was beheaded and dismembered by Esau—Nimrod's rival, the initiates departed Babylon and spread out over the world taken their knowledge and mysteries with them. A short time later, the Goddess Semiramis—the Mystery Babylon's mother, resurrected her husband, Nimrod, before giving birth to Tammuz, and Tammuz was Nimrod reborn.

Similar to many nations, Babylon and Egypt share very similar creation legends; for instance, and recall the Babylonian story above, in the Egyptian Osiris myth, legend tells that usurper Set, Osiris's brother, cut Osiris into 14 pieces scattering him over the land, but Isis, Osiris's queen, resurrected her kingly husband, Osiris, before giving birth to Prince Horus who sought revenge on Set. But it was specifically from Babylon and Egypt that the Brotherhoods' Mystery religion originated and, as with Nimrod, Osiris, also known as Lucifer and the Light Bearer, who is represented by the Sun, and represented as the snake and dragon that symbolise wisdom, also plays a prominent role. Nimrod, Semiramis, and Tammuz, Osiris, Isis, and Horus, therefore, and many other pagan idols, from China, Persia, to Britannia, along with their queens and children, became God-like and idolised centuries before the new non-pagan religions took hold. It's easy to see that; of course, for instance, Odin, the Norse god, emerged from Nimrod. But Herodotus, the ancient Greek historian, writing many centuries ago, also noted that fact; stating that Babylon was the source.

The mysteries spread into the nations and into Rome from Babylon. But as Christianity took hold in Rome; due to Emperor Constantine's conversion to Christianity in the early 4th century AD and integrating pagan beliefs and practices into it which empowered the early Roman Catholic Church, the elites still worshipped the old Babylonian and Egyptian gods, goddesses, and symbols which, again, even today, you can view on the seals of nations, intelligence services, and secret society organisations such as the Freemasons.

Be it deception or not, this is how it works: Statues of Mary—Christ's mother, holding baby Jesus can be traced back to Babylon with Semiramis holding her son Tammuz,



and back to Egypt with Isis holding her son Horus. Also recall that Jesus, Nimrod, and Osiris all share the central theme of resurrection or being re-born. You can see, then, how the worship of Mary and Jesus can also be the secret worship of those earlier pagan goddesses and child that the Pagans worshipped centuries before Christ was born. Further, if I told you that the clergy have been re-writing God's laws would you believe me? Well, it appears they have. Hear this, in the New Testament, Book 1 Timothy 2:5, it states: "For there is one God and one mediator between God and mankind, the man Christ Jesus." What that implies, that Christians should NOT worship any other mediator; for instance, Mary, the pope, and the saints, but Christ ONLY. Therefore, even though idolatry is implicitly forbidden by the Holy Scriptures, the Catholic Church curiously still permits the practice.



*Isis & Horus*



*Mary & Jesus*

Further points of interest is the church and obelisk. Take the church. Did you know that the building of churches is very likely forbidden? It was allowed in the Old Testament; for instance, God allowed Solomon to build a temple for God's spirit to reside in. But in the New Testament, Book 1 Corinthians 3:16, and the Book of Acts 17:24, it curiously states: "Don't you know that you yourselves are God's temple and that God's Spirit dwells in your midst?"; "The God who made the world and



everything in it is the Lord of heaven and earth and does not live in temples built by human hands”. So even the building of churches is in itself forbidden by the dogmas of Christianity, but still they build churches. Now, concerning the obelisk. It was first erected to worship the Sun—symbolic of Baal, also known as Nimrod, and Osiris, and is undoubtedly an ancient pagan symbol. So why would the catholic clergy elites place one outside St. Peter's basilica (see image below) and inside St. Peter's Square in Rome? Because they are not true Christians; merely the NWO elites who have hijacked Christ's pious movement to preclude its use as a tool for good? Incidentally, today's St. Peter's basilica was built to replace the old St. Peter's basilica that was built in the 4th century by Roman Emperor Constantine the Great. The basilica site is also thought to be the burial place of Saint Peter—one of Christ's apostles.



*St. Peter's Square (obelisk in the foreground)*

There's much more that connects the clergy to Paganism; for instance, in Egyptian mythology, God's son is called the Chief Cornerstone, which is seen as the top stone on a pyramid, and the cornerstone is also viewed as the master mason or the illumined man who serves as the eye of Horus or the spy for the Mystery schools. See image below.



*The Eye of Horus; The Spy*

**Further, when churches began celebrating Christmas on the 25th of December as the day of Christ's birth, were you aware that the clergy didn't even know the exact date of His birth? What they did know, was that December 25 was the feast date of Sol (Indiges) and Sol (Invictus) that, along with other peoples in other nations, the pagan Romans worshipped. But who was Sol? Sol was a pagan Sun-god! Further, along with Sol being an alternative name for Sun, Dec. 25, or thereabouts, is the critical time, called “culmination”, in Earth's yearly orbit (365+ days at 67.000+ mph) around the Sun, when, if you are north of the equator and using the Gregorian calender, after the Winter solstice or Midwinter, which, due to declination—the Sun's furthest point from the celestial equator or 0° of latitude—varying yearly, could be anywhere between the 21st to the 23rd, but close to the 25th, the Sun starts its “return journey” back into Summer. What the Pagans were celebrating, therefore, was the Sun being “reborn” or bringing back that ever so important warmth and leaving the deathly cold, snowy season of Winter, behind. Later, when Christianity was being established and intergrating the old pagan rituals and symbols into it to convert the Pagans and to empower the early Church, the Christian leaders merely used the 25th of December as their special date for Jesus Christ’s birth-day. Not to say that Jesus didn't exist; certainly something remarkable must have happened around the time Christianity was being established, and surely there must have been a special first**

leader to turn it into the strong community it became. Therefore, Jesus became that special first leader and, whether you believe He lived or did not live, He certainly lives now and forever more; I would think, due to His essence of pure kindness, courage, and self-sacrifice, which is why so many people just can't stop liking Him. I know I do. So, unlike the Church which is built on "pillars of salt", is a false mediator, and is losing the peoples' support, is why so many churches stand empty and lost in an almost dystopian world, Christianity will survive, as long as there is civilised people around who want something better, simply because it was built by Jesus Christ and what Jesus Christ represents: a humane force fighting all things bad.

The Mystery pagan-religion lays hidden within Christianity whose symbols are used by today's elites whose Eurasian ancestry I traced back to Rome, the Jews, Persia-Babylon, and further to perhaps the United Aryans from the ancient Vedas, or, to cover all ground, the Nephilim created by the Anunnaki aliens. But it's there because of integration, or to encourage the Pagans to adopt Christianity and to empower the early Christian Church, and not necessarily for the purpose of evil. So is it evil? Well, Pagans were heavily into making blood-sacrifices to the gods, and today's elites do use pagan symbols to represent their states and organisations, and they have built a fascist dictatorship and thuggish police state, so you decide.

If these subjects interest you, I recommend you read "The Two Babylons", published in 1853AD, by Alexander Hislop; "The History of Babylonia", published around the 1870s on behalf of George Smith who died in 1876. Smith was the pioneering English Assyriologist who discovered and translated the Epic of Gilgamesh, which is, that we know of, one of the oldest written works of literature; "Babylon Mystery Religion", published in 1966AD, by Ralph Woodrow. You can also listen to William Cooper's "Mystery Babylon" lecture on the internet. Incidentally, Smith's fine book was sold at "77 Great Queen Street" & "4 Royal Exchange"! So it's Hail Queen Semiramis and Hail Queen Victoria!

**From here on in, I will write of the ruling elites of the Roman Empire and the White nations post-collapse of the Roman Empire, as being Eurasians, which I will continue to prove as I move forward.**



## **CELTIC SOURCES & EVENTS IN EUROPE BEFORE THE FOUNDING OF ROME**

**5. In the following sections, I will explore the sources for the Celts and Germans who had both descended from the Magdalenian race or the Western Europeans. But, before I begin, first I will tell you how the Celts and Germans emerged from the darkness and into the light: Herodotus and Hecataeus, who were two Greek writers, were the “first” to write about the Celts; Herodotus in 517BC, and Hecataeus in 500BC, and Roman writers; Caesar and Tacitus, were the “first” to write about the Germanic race; specifically, during Caesar's life, which was between 100BC and 44BC, and during Tacitus's life, which was between 56AD to 117AD, and “all agree” that both the Celts and Germans had lived in Western Europe, Central Europe, North-Central Europe, and North-West Europe.**

**Before continuing, here is some of what the ancient Greek and Roman chroniclers wrote on the Celts and Germans, and Britain and the Britons.**

**Cassius Dio wrote: “The Rhine issues from the Celtic Alps, a little outside of Rhaetia, and proceeding westward, with Gaul and its inhabitants on the left, it bounds the Celts on the right, and finally empties into the ocean. This has always, even till now, been considered the boundary, from which they came to the difference in names, since very anciently both the peoples dwelling on each side of the river were called Celts.” See river map of Europe, below.**



### River map of Europe

**Cassius Dio wrote: “Caesar, then, first of Romans crossed the Rhine at this time, and later in the consulship of Pompey and Crassus he traversed the channel of Britain. This country is distant from the Belgic mainland, opposite the Morini, three hundred and fifty stades at the shortest computation, and extends alongside the rest of Gaul and nearly all of Spain, reaching out into the sea. To the very first of the Greeks and Romans it was not even known; to their descendants it was a matter of dispute whether it was a continent or an island. And its history was written from both points of view by many who knew nothing about it, because they had not seen with their own eyes nor heard from the natives with their own ears, but indulged in guesses according as each had leisure or fondness for talk. As time went on, first under Agricola as proprætor and now under Severus as emperor, it has been clearly proven to be an island.”**

**Tacitus wrote: “The Roman fleet, sailing round this remotest coast, gave proof that Britain was an island; and at the same time discovered and subdued the Orcades, islands till then unknown. Thule was also distinctly seen, which winter and eternal snow had hitherto concealed.”**

Pliny the Elder wrote: “Opposite to this coast is the island called Britannia, so celebrated in the records of Greece and of our own country. It is situate to the north-west, and, with a large tract of intervening sea, lies opposite



to Germany, Gaul, and Spain, by far the greater part of Europe. Its former name was Albion; but at a later period, all the islands, of which we shall just now briefly make mention, were included under the name of “Britanniæ.” This island is distant from Gesoriacum, on the coast of the nation of the Morini, at the spot where the passage across is the shortest, fifty miles. Pytheas and Isidorus say that its circumference is 4875 miles. It is barely thirty years since any extensive knowledge of it was gained by the successes of the Roman arms, and even as yet they have not penetrated beyond the vicinity of the Caledonian forest.”

Tacitus wrote: “Who were the first inhabitants of Britain, whether indigenous or immigrants, is a question involved in the obscurity usual among barbarians. Their temperament of body is various, whence deductions are formed of their different origin. Thus, the ruddy hair and large limbs of the Caledonians point out a German derivation. The swarthy complexion and curled hair of the Silures, together with their situation opposite to Spain, render it probable that a colony of the ancient Iberi possessed themselves of that territory. They who are nearest Gaul resemble the inhabitants of that country; whether from the duration of hereditary influence, or whether it be that when lands jut forward in opposite directions, climate gives the same condition of body to the inhabitants of both. On a general survey, however, it appears probable that the Gauls originally took possession of the neighboring coast. The sacred rites and superstitions of these people are discernible among the Britons. The languages of the two nations do not greatly differ. The same audacity in provoking danger, and irresolution in facing it when present, is observable in both. The Britons, however, display more ferocity, not being yet softened by a long peace: for it appears from history that the Gauls were once renowned in war, till, losing their valor with their liberty, languor and indolence entered amongst them. The same change has also taken place among those of the Britons who have been long subdued; but the rest continue such as the Gauls formerly were.”

**Tacitus wrote: “Their military strength consists in infantry; some nations also make use of chariots in war; in the management of which, the most honorable person guides the reins, while his dependents fight from the chariot. The Britons were formerly governed by kings, but at present they are divided in factions and parties among their chiefs; and this want of union for concerting some general plan is the most favorable circumstance to us, in our designs against so powerful a people. It is seldom that two or three communities concur in repelling the common danger; and thus, while they engage singly, they are all subdued. The sky in this country is deformed by clouds and frequent rains; but the cold is never extremely rigorous. The length of the days greatly exceeds that in our part of the world. The nights are bright, and, at the extremity of the island, so short, that the close and return of day is scarcely distinguished by a perceptible interval. It is even asserted that, when clouds do not intervene, the splendor of the sun is visible during the whole night, and that it does not appear to rise and set, but to move across. The cause of this is, that the extreme and flat parts of the earth, casting a low shadow, do not throw up the darkness, and so night falls beneath the sky and the stars. The soil, though improper for the olive, the vine, and other productions of warmer climates, is fertile, and suitable for corn. Growth is quick, but maturation slow; both from the same cause, the great humidity of the ground and the atmosphere. The earth yields gold and silver and other metals, the rewards of victory. The ocean produces pearls, but of a cloudy and livid hue; which some impute to unskillfulness in the gatherers; for in the Red Sea the fish are plucked from the rocks alive and vigorous, but in Britain they are collected as the sea throws them up. For my own part, I can more readily conceive that the defect is in the nature of the pearls, than in our avarice.”**

**Tacitus wrote: “The Britons cheerfully submit to levies, tributes, and the other services of government, if they are not treated injuriously; but such treatment they bear with impatience, their subjection only extending to obedience, not to servitude. Accordingly Julius Caesar, the first Roman who entered Britain with an army, although he**

terrified the inhabitants by a successful engagement, and became master of the shore, may be considered rather to have transmitted the discovery than the possession of the country to posterity. The civil wars soon succeeded; the arms of the leaders were turned against their country; and a long neglect of Britain ensued, which continued even after the establishment of peace. This Augustus attributed to policy; and Tiberius to the injunctions of his predecessor. It is certain that Caius Caesar meditated an expedition into Britain; but his temper, precipitate in forming schemes, and unsteady in pursuing them, together with the ill success of his mighty attempts against Germany, rendered the design abortive. Claudius accomplished the undertaking, transporting his legions and auxiliaries, and associating Vespasian in the direction of affairs, which laid the foundation of his future fortune. In this expedition, nations were subdued, kings made captive, and Vespasian was held forth to the fates.”

Tacitus wrote: “They go into battle on chariots with small, swift horses. There are also infantry, very quick at running and very firm in standing their ground. Their weapons are shield and short spear, with a bronze apple attached to the end of the ground-spike, so that when the instrument is shaken it may clash and inspire the enemy with terror. They also have daggers. They can endure hunger and cold and any kind of wretchedness. They plunge into the swamps and exist there for many days with only their heads above water, and in the forests they support themselves upon bark and roots and in all cases they have ready a kind of food of which a piece the size of a bean when eaten prevents them from being either hungry or thirsty. Of such a nature is the island of Britain, and such are the inhabitants that the enemy's country has. For it is an island, and the fact (as I have stated) was clearly proved at this time. The length of it is seven thousand one hundred and thirty-two stades. Its greatest breadth is two thousand three hundred and ten, and its least is three hundred. Of all this we hold a little less than a half.”

Incidentally, Cassius Dio, a Roman citizen, was born in Nicea in 155AD, and died in approx, 235AD. Dio's above

accounts are from his Roman History. Tacitus, a Roman citizen, lived between 56AD to 117AD. His above accounts are from his The Germany and the Agricola of Tacitus. Pliny the Elder was born in Cisalpine Gaul in 23AD. His above account is from his The Natural History.

Although most scientists claim that the Celts, as with the Germans and the rest of the Europeans but also the Asiatic and Oriental peoples, had descended from the Cromagnon race that had first moved into Europe and Asia from Africa around 40,000 years ago, the oldest remains of Cromagnons, called “anatomically modern humans” or AMHs, are to be found in southern Greece and date to 210,000 years ago. That means that AMHs were in parts of Europe and Asia from before the Cromagnons are said to have migrated into Europe and Asia around 40,000 years ago.

The Cromagnons first moved into Europe around 40,000 years ago or around 210,000 years ago and went on to displace the Neanderthals—an early race that lived from approximately 300,000BC to around 30,000BC. Roaming as expert hunter and gatherers during the Stone Age that began around 3 million years ago and ended around 8,000 years ago, apparently they moved out of Africa and settled in and around the Levant area, or, recall, Israel, Turkey, and the Caucasus mountains, before moving into Europe. It was the Cromagnons' “flight-path” into Europe and the beginning of a new European civilisation; specifically, (1) the very first culture they created, which was the Aurignation culture, began around 41,000BC, and ended around 34,000BC. From around 38,000BC, the Cromagnons slowly moved into, in no critical order, Southern, Eastern, and Western Europe at a critical time in history that I gloomily call the Unfortunate Divergence, which is an important event that witnessed the Cromagnons divide their race and eventually evolve into the sub-European races we know today—the sub-European races are: (a) the Western and Northern Europeans, also known as the Celts, the Norse, and Germans; (b) the Eastern Europeans, also known as the Slavic peoples; (c) and the Southern Europeans, also known as the Greeks and Romans; (2) by

the time the Gravettian culture had emerged and ended, which was around 31,000BC to 18,000BC, and the Gravettian culture that emerged after the Aurignacian culture was a culture that reached from the Caucasus into Western Europe and also South-West Europe or the area today called Spain, the early ancestors of the Celts (and Germans) were established in all those areas; (3) the Solutrian culture, that began around 20,000BC and ended around 15,000BC, had originated in France, Spain, and Portugal, and had evolved out from the Gravettian culture.

Before continuing with the Celtic Source, there's two critical points you should be aware of; they are, the ice ages, the Stone Age and the Iron Age: Branches of the Western Europeans explored and settled Northern Europe post-glaciation ages and possibly even in between them, so the ice ages across Northern Europe are critical to understand if tracking the Magdalenian branches that became the Celtic and Germanic races. So here are the dates for when they began and ended: (a) the ice sheets across the Northern Hemisphere that had endured for 110,000 years were at their greatest extent—Last Glacial Maximum—around 26,000BC. By 20,000BC the glaciers began to melt and by 14,500BC sea levels had risen by around 450ft. Incidentally, because humans construct settlements around coastal areas, due to the melting ice and a rise in sea levels, much of their civilisations were lost under the rising oceans; (b) the Younger Dryas Ice Age is a glaciation period that began around 11,000BC and ended around 10,000BC; (c) the Wurm Ice Age began around 110,000BC, ended around 11,500BC, and had advanced from the Alpine mountains into and around Bavaria, Germany; (d) the Weichselian Ice Age began around 110,000BC, ended around 11,500BC, and advanced south from the mountainous regions in Scandinavian north of Germany and Denmark; (e) the Stone Age lasted from around 3 million years ago until humans began to make copper and bronze then, thousands of years later, iron; for instance, the Bronze Age began in the Mediterranean with the Sumerians around 3,500BC, and the Iron Age began during the New Hittite Empire in the Mediterranean and Near-East around 1,200BC to 1,800BC.

**(4) Back to the Celtic Source: The pre-Celts and the pre-Germans that were occupying Central and Western Europe, eventually created and evolved the Magdalenian culture. The Magdalenian culture lasted from 17,000BC to 12,000BC and reached from, what is today known as, France all the way to Ukraine west next to Germany, and evolved out from the Gravettian culture; (5) the first signs of a Celtic culture is traced to around 12,000BC making it the “Celtic source”, and it evolved out from the earlier Magdalenian culture. So this was it; an intrepid branch of the Western Europeans, who would eventually become the Celts, were culturally transitioning into the fully developed Celtic culture and identity that would later manifest at Hallstatt, Austria, in 800BC; (6) the Magdalenians created many cultures; around 12,000BC they developed the Azilian culture in Spain and France, and the Sauveterrian culture in Central Europe and northern France; (7) post-ice recession, around 11,000BC a branch of the Magdalenians crossed into Britain and created the Cresswellian culture during the Late Magdalenian Period; (8) the Sauveterrian culture created by the Magdalenians, evolved into the Tardenoisian culture that eventually became dominant in Spain and Portugal. You can read the following journey and more in the Germanic Source. But, for now, here's a brief overview: (a) around 13,000BC a branch of the Magdalenians who became the Germans and Norse, moved from France into northern Germany then on into southern Scandinavia, and went on to create the Hamburg culture; (b) Denmark, which lays north of Germany, was occupied for the very first time by a people using the Maglomesian culture that began around 9,000BC, ended around 6,000BC, and had evolved from the Sauveterrian, Tardenoisian, and Magdalenian cultures; (9) Back to the Celtic Source: The Unitice culture began around 2,300BC, ended around 1,600BC, and reached from in and around Germany; (10) the Tumulus culture began around 1,600BC, ended around 1,200BC, and evolved in and around Central Europe, and also has Celtic traits; (11) the people who developed the Urnfield culture that began in Central Europe around 1,300BC, and ended around 750BC, spoke an early form of what became known as the Celtic language; (12) most of the above past cultures evolved into the new and superior Celtic**



**Hallstatt culture that was fully formed by 800BC and ended around 500BC; (13) humans create and evolve new cultures. New cultures are merely improvements on older ones. So out from the Hallstatt culture evolved an even higher culture; the Celtic La Tene culture, in what became known as Switzerland that sits just west of Austria. It was from those Celtic homelands in and around Austria and Germany, that their new cultural improvements moved through their greater Celtic race and into France, northern Italy, Belgium, and the Netherlands before arriving in Britain in 600BC. Although the Celts arrived in Britain and Ireland around approximately 600BC, the Magdalenians, who the Celts descended from during the Late Magdalenian Period, recall, first moved into Britain around 11,000BC, and created the Cresswellian culture.**

**So those are the ancient cultures of Central, Western, North-Western, North-Central, South-West, and Upper-South Europe (from Germany, Denmark, Scandinavia, northern Italy, France, Belgium, the Netherlands, Spain, Switzerland, Portugal, Britain, and Ireland), and, excluding the Germanic cultures, those older cultures were eventually overtaken by the superior Celtic Hallstatt culture that peaked around 800BC in Austria, and the superior Celtic La Tene culture in Switzerland. There are other cultures in Britain; specifically, the Bell-Beaker culture that's dated from 2,900BC to 1,800BC, and it was the people from Central Europe who were the first to bring the culture of farming into Britain around 4,000BC. But, regardless to the cultures, it's likely it was the Western Europeans who were also living in Central Europe, creating and using them.**

**To conclude on the Celtic Source: It was an amazing journey for the Celts to make; Cromagnon to Celt in 40,000 or so hard years (approx. 38,000BC to 800BC) with many cultures created and developed along the way, and, as we shall now see, it was a journey identical to the Germanic one until, that is, those who became the Germans diverged from the Magdalenians around 13,000BC, and, after being the very first Western Europeans to cross into Northern Europe shortly after the ice sheets began to melt, became the Northern Europeans.**

## **GERMAN SOURCES & EVENTS IN EUROPE BEFORE THE FOUNDING OF ROME**

**6. The Germans descended from the Cromagnons who moved into Europe around 38,000BC, and followed an identical flight-path to the Celts as they evolved into that modern race of people they eventually became. So, to avoid reiterating the above “flight-path out of the Levant and into Western Europe” lines, I will pick up the source for the Germanic trail after they moved through that same culture that the pre-Celts were using; which was, the Magdalenian culture, that began around 17,000BC, ended around 12,000BC, and originated in, what is today known as, France and reached all the way to Ukraine west almost on the border with Germany. At this point in time, the pre-Germans or the Magdalenians, post-glacial recession, began moving into what later became known as the Germanic and Nordic Homelands or Germany, Denmark, and Scandinavia, and the earliest traces of human habitation in the German Homelands is as follows and recall that around 14,500BC the massive ice sheets laying across Northern Europe had receded raising sea levels (450ft) high enough to cut Britain, Ireland, and much of Norway off from the European continent: (1) The Magdalenian culture began around 17,000BC and ended around 12,000BC. It originated in France in Western Europe and evolved out from the Solutrean, Gravettian, and Aurignation cultures; (2) the Hamburg culture that spread from France to Germany and then into Scandinavia, began around 13,000BC, ended around 11,000BC, and was being used by the same people who created the Cresswellian culture during the Late Magdalenian Age in Britain, so they are the Magdalenians and Western Europeans; (3) the Federmesser culture began around 12,000BC, ended around 11,000BC, and reached from in and around Germany, Britain, and Northern France; (4) the Bromme hunters were occupying areas within northern Germany and Denmark around 11,000BC; (5) the Ahrensburg culture began around 9,000BC and ended around 8,000BC; (6) the Maglemosian culture began around 9,000BC and ended around 6,000BC; (7) the Swiderian culture began around 11,000BC and**

ended around 8,000BC; (8) the Kongemose culture began around 6,000BC and ended around 5,000BC; (9) the Ertebolle culture began around 5,300BC and ended around 4,000BC; (10) the Funnelbeaker culture began around 4,300BC and ended around 2,800BC; (11) the Globular Amphora culture began around 3,400BC and ended around 2,800BC; (12) the Corded Ware culture began around 3,000BC and ended around 2,500BC; (13) some time in and around 1,000BC the Germans, in an event known as the Volkerwanderung or, in English, Folk Wandering migrated from their homelands in Southern Scandinavia and Northern Germany, and, in the process, obliged the Celts to migrate south and west, and, according to Caesar and Tacitus, sometime after 100BC but before 44BC they had reached the Roman provinces of Celtic Gaul and Celtic Cisalpine Gaul where they were halted by Caesar, and so began the Roman German war. The battles between the Romans and Germans are not so well known or documented but, to give just one example due to it being very well-documented and a victory for non-Roman forces, in 9AD at the battle in Teutoburg Forest, Germanic forces, under the command of Arminius, destroyed three Roman legions or the 17th, 18th, and 19th legions (Legio XVII, Legio XVIII and Legio XIX), under the command of Publius Quinctilius Varus, leaving between 15,000 to 20,000 legionnaires dead, which forced the Romans to retreat back to safer lines of defense or the Rhine and Danube, due to the remaining legions being tied up elsewhere; (14) a second Volkerwanderung occurred perhaps between 600BC and 300BC, which saw the Germans migrate from Scandinavia to the areas around the Baltic Sea and Carpathian Mountains east of Austria.

Incidentally, regarding the engagement in Teutoburg Forest between the Romans and Germans, the story goes: Due to the Roman German war and the Roman garrisons occupying Germanic lands north of the river Danube, Arminius, also known as Hermann, rebelled against the Romans by double-crossing them and attacking them as they marched through Teutoburg Forest. In volume 4 of Dio's Roman History, Cassius Dio, writing a detailed account on the battle in Teutoburg Forest, (or the "forest of Teutoburgium"), wrote:

**“There they showed themselves as enemies instead of subjects and wrought many deeds of fearful injury. The mountains had an uneven surface broken by ravines, and the trees, standing close together, were extremely tall. Hence the Romans even before the enemy assaulted them were having hard work in felling, road making, and bridging places that required it. Meanwhile a great rain and wind came up that separated them still farther, while the ground, being slippery where there were roots and logs, made walking very difficult for them, and the top branches of trees, which kept breaking off and falling down, caused confusion. While the Romans were in such perplexity as this the barbarians suddenly encompassed them from all sides at once, coming through the thickest part of the underbrush, since they were acquainted with the paths. At first they hurled from a distance; then as no one defended himself but many were wounded, they approached closer to them. The Romans were in no order but going along helter-skelter among the wagons and the unarmed, and so, not being able to form readily in a body, and being fewer at every point than their assailants, they suffered greatly and offered no resistance at all. Accordingly, they encamped on the spot, after securing a suitable place so far as that was possible on a wooded mountain, and afterward they either burned or abandoned the majority of their wagons and everything else that was not absolutely necessary for them. The next day they advanced in better order, with the aim of reaching open country; but they did not gain it without loss. From there they went forward and plunged into the woods again, defending themselves against the attacks, but endured no inconsiderable reverses in this very operation. For whereas they were marshaled in a narrow place in order that cavalry and heavy-armed men in a mass might run down their foes, they had many collisions with one another and with the trees. Dawn of the fourth day broke as they were advancing and again a violent downpour and mighty wind attacked them, which would not allow them to go forward or even to stand securely, and actually deprived them of the use of their weapons. They could not manage successfully their arrows or their javelins or, indeed, their shields (which were soaked through). The enemy, however, being for the most part lightly equipped and with power to approach and retire**

freely, suffered less from the effects of the storm. Their numbers, moreover, increased, as numbers of those who had at first wavered joined them particularly for the sake of plunder, and so they could more easily encircle and strike down the Romans, who were already few, many having perished in the previous battles. Varus, therefore, and the most eminent of the other leaders, fearing that they might either be taken alive or be killed by their bitterest foes,--for they had been wounded,--dared do a deed which was frightful but not to be avoided: they killed themselves."

In 16AD, which was six years after the Varian Disaster, which, recall, was the battle that took place in Teutoburg Forest in Germany in 9AD, the German tribes again became rebellious, so, under Emperor Tiberius, Germanicus the Younger—Varus's brother, made preparations to send in the legions. In *The Annals* written by Tacitus, Tacitus wrote:

"In the consulship of Drusus Cæsar and Caius Norbanus, Germanicus had a triumph decreed him, though war still lasted. And though it was for the summer campaign that he was most vigorously preparing, he anticipated it by a sudden inroad on the Chatti [Chatti: German tribe] in the beginning of spring."

"Germanicus accordingly gave Cæcina four legions, five thousand auxiliaries, with some hastily raised levies from the Germans dwelling on the left bank of the Rhine. He was himself at the head of an equal number of legions and twice as many allies. Having established a fort on the site of his father's entrenchments on Mount Taunus he hurried his troops in quick marching order against the Chatti, leaving Lucius Apronius to direct works connected with roads and bridges. With a dry season and comparatively shallow streams, a rare circumstance in that climate, he had accomplished, without obstruction, a rapid march, and he feared for his return heavy rains and swollen rivers. But so suddenly did he come on the Chatti that all the helpless from age or sex were at once captured or slaughtered. Their able-bodied men had swum across the river Adrana, and were trying to keep back the Romans as they were commencing a bridge. Subsequently they were

driven back by missiles and arrows, and having in vain attempted negotiations for peace, some took refuge with Germanicus, while the rest, leaving their cantons and villages dispersed themselves in their forests. After burning Mattium, the capital of the tribe, and ravaging the open country, Germanicus marched back towards the Rhine, the enemy not daring to harass the rear of the retiring army, which was his usual practice whenever he fell back by way of stratagem rather than from panic. It had been the intention of the Cherusci [Cherusci: German tribe] to help the Chatti; but Cæcina thoroughly cowed them, carrying his arms everywhere, and the Marsi [Marsi: German tribe] who ventured to engage him, he repulsed in a successful battle.”

“Not long after envoys came from Segestes, imploring aid against the violence of his fellow-countrymen, by whom he was hemmed in, and with whom Arminius had greater influence, because he counselled war. For with barbarians, the more eager a man's daring, the more does he inspire confidence, and the more highly is he esteemed in times of revolution. With the envoys Segestes had associated his son, by name Segimundus, but the youth hung back from a consciousness of guilt. For in the year of the revolt of Germany he had been appointed a priest at the altar of the Ubii, and had rent the sacred garlands, and fled to the rebels. Induced, however, to hope for mercy from Rome, he brought his father's message; he was graciously received and sent with an escort to the Gallic bank of the Rhine.”

“It was now worth while for Germanicus to march back his army. A battle was fought against the besiegers and Segestes was rescued with a numerous band of kinsfolk and dependents. In the number were some women of rank; among them, the wife of Arminius, who was also the daughter of Segestes, but who exhibited the spirit of her husband rather than of her father, subdued neither to tears nor to the tones of a suppliant, her hands tightly clasped within her bosom, and eyes which dwelt on her hope of offspring. The spoils also taken in the defeat of Varus were brought in, having been given as plunder to many of those who were then being surrendered.”

“Segestes too was there in person, a stately figure, fearless in the remembrance of having been a faithful ally. His speech was to this effect. "This is not my first day of



steadfast loyalty towards the Roman people. From the time that the Divine Augustus gave me the citizenship, I have chosen my friends and foes with an eye to your advantage, not from hatred of my fatherland (for traitors are detested even by those whom they prefer) but because I held that Romans and Germans have the same interests, and that peace is better than war. And therefore I denounced to Varus, who then commanded your army, Arminius, the ravisher of my daughter, the violater of your treaty. I was put off by that dilatory general, and, as I found but little protection in the laws, I urged him to arrest myself, Arminius, and his accomplices. That night is my witness; would that it had been my last. What followed may be deplored rather than defended. However, I threw Arminius into chains and I endured to have them put on myself by his partisans. And as soon as you give me opportunity, I show my preference for the old over the new, for peace over commotion, not to get a reward, but that I may clear myself from treachery and be at the same time a fit mediator for a German people, should they choose repentance rather than ruin. For the youth and error of my son I entreat forgiveness. As for my daughter, I admit that it is by compulsion she has been brought here. It will be for you to consider which fact weighs most with you, that she is with child by Arminius or that she owes her being to me."

"Cæsar in a gracious reply promised safety to his children and kinsfolk and a home for himself in the old province. He then led back the army and received on the proposal of Tiberius the title of Imperator. The wife of Arminius gave birth to a male child; the boy, who was brought up at Ravenna, soon afterwards suffered an insult, which at the proper time I shall relate."

"The report of the surrender and kind reception of Segestes, when generally known, was heard with hope or grief according as men shrank from war or desired it. Arminius, with his naturally furious temper, was driven to frenzy by the seizure of his wife and the foredooming to slavery of his wife's unborn child. He flew hither and thither among the Cherusci, demanding "war against Segestes, war against Cæsar." And he refrained not from taunts. "Noble the father," he would say, "mighty the general, brave the army which, with such strength, has carried off one weak

woman. Before me, three legions, three commanders have fallen. Not by treachery, not against pregnant women, but openly against armed men do I wage war. There are still to be seen in the groves of Germany the Roman standards which I hung up to our country's gods. Let Segestes dwell on the conquered bank: let him restore to his son his priestly office; one thing there is which Germans will never thoroughly excuse, their having seen between the Elbe and the Rhine the Roman rods, axes, and toga. Other nations in their ignorance of Roman rule, have no experience of punishments, know nothing of tributes, and, as we have shaken them off, as the great Augustus, ranked among deities, and his chosen heir Tiberius, departed from us, baffled, let us not quail before an inexperienced stripling, before a mutinous army. If you prefer your fatherland, your ancestors, your ancient life to tyrants and to new colonies, follow as your leader Arminius to glory and to freedom rather than Segestes to ignominious servitude."

"This language roused not only the Cherusci but the neighbouring tribes and drew to their side Inguiomerus, the uncle of Arminius, who had long been respected by the Romans. This increased Cæsar's alarm. Germanicus put four legions on shipboard and conveyed them through the lakes, and the infantry, cavalry, and fleet met simultaneously at the river already mentioned. The Chauci, on promising aid, were associated with us in military fellowship. Lucius Stertinius was despatched by Germanicus with a flying column and routed the Bructeri [Bructeri: German tribe] as they were burning their possessions, and amid the carnage and plunder, found the eagle of the nineteenth legion which had been lost with Varus. The troops were then marched to the furthest frontier of the Bructeri, and all the country between the rivers Amisia and Luppia was ravaged, not far from the forest of Teutoburgium, where the remains of Varus and his legions were said to lie unburied."

"Germanicus upon this was seized with an eager longing to pay the last honour to those soldiers and their general, while the whole army present was moved to compassion by the thought of their kinsfolk and friends, and, indeed, of the calamities of wars and the lot of mankind. Having sent on Cæcina in advance to reconnoitre

the obscure forest-passes, and to raise bridges and causeways over watery swamps and treacherous plains, they visited the mournful scenes, with their horrible sights and associations. Varus's first camp with its wide circumference and the measurements of its central space clearly indicated the handiwork of three legions. Further on, the partially fallen rampart and the shallow fosse suggested the inference that it was a shattered remnant of the army which had there taken up a position. In the centre of the field were the whitening bones of men, as they had fled, or stood their ground, strewn everywhere or piled in heaps. Near, lay fragments of weapons and limbs of horses, and also human heads, prominently nailed to trunks of trees. In the adjacent groves were the barbarous altars, on which they had immolated tribunes and first-rank centurions. Some survivors of the disaster who had escaped from the battle or from captivity, described how this was the spot where the officers fell, how yonder the eagles were captured, where Varus was pierced by his first wound, where too by the stroke of his own ill-starred hand he found for himself death. They pointed out too the raised ground from which Arminius had harangued his army, the number of gibbets for the captives, the pits for the living, and how in his exultation he insulted the standards and eagles.”

“And so the Roman army now on the spot, six years after the disaster, in grief and anger, began to bury the bones of the three legions, not a soldier knowing whether he was interring the relics of a relative or a stranger, but looking on all as kinsfolk and of their own blood, while their wrath rose higher than ever against the foe. In raising the barrow Cæsar laid the first sod, rendering thus a most welcome honour to the dead, and sharing also in the sorrow of those present. This Tiberius did not approve, either interpreting unfavourably every act of Germanicus, or because he thought that the spectacle of the slain and unburied made the army slow to fight and more afraid of the enemy, and that a general invested with the augurate and its very ancient ceremonies ought not to have polluted himself with funeral rites.”

“Germanicus, however, pursued Arminius as he fell back into trackless wilds, and as soon as he had the opportunity, ordered his cavalry to sally forth and scour the

plains occupied by the enemy. Arminius having bidden his men to concentrate themselves and keep close to the woods, suddenly wheeled round, and soon gave those whom he had concealed in the forest-passes the signal to rush to the attack. Thereupon our cavalry was thrown into disorder by this new force, and some cohorts in reserve were sent, which, broken by the shock of flying troops, increased the panic. They were being pushed into a swamp, well known to the victorious assailants, perilous to men unacquainted with it, when Cæsar led forth his legions in battle array. This struck terror into the enemy and gave confidence to our men, and they separated without advantage to either.”

“Soon afterwards Germanicus led back his army to the Amisia, taking his legions by the fleet, as he had brought them up. Part of the cavalry was ordered to make for the Rhine along the sea-coast. Cæcina, who commanded a division of his own, was advised, though he was returning by a route which he knew, to pass Long Bridges with all possible speed. This was a narrow road amid vast swamps, which had formerly been constructed by Lucius Domitius; on every side were quagmires of thick clinging mud, or perilous with streams. Around were woods on a gradual slope, which Arminius now completely occupied, as soon as by a short route and quick march he had outstripped troops heavily laden with baggage and arms. As Cæcina was in doubt how he could possibly replace bridges which were ruinous from age, and at the same time hold back the enemy, he resolved to encamp on the spot, that some might begin the repair and others the attack.”

“The barbarians attempted to break through the outposts and to throw themselves on the engineering parties, which they harassed, pacing round them and continually charging them. There was a confused din from the men at work and the combatants. Everything alike was unfavourable to the Romans, the place with its deep swamps, insecure to the foot and slippery as one advanced, limbs burdened with coats of mail, and the impossibility of aiming their javelins amid the water. The Cherusci, on the other hand, were familiar with fighting in fens; they had huge frames, and lances long enough to inflict wounds even at a distance. Night at last released the legions, which were now wavering, from a disastrous engagement. The Germans

whom success rendered unwearied, without even then taking any rest, turned all the streams which rose from the slopes of the surrounding hills into the lands beneath. The ground being thus flooded and the completed portion of our works submerged, the soldiers' labour was doubled."

"This was Cæcina's fortieth campaign as a subordinate or a commander, and, with such experience of success and peril, he was perfectly fearless. As he thought over future possibilities, he could devise no plan but to keep the enemy within the woods, till the wounded and the more encumbered troops were in advance. For between the hills and the swamps there stretched a plain which would admit of an extended line. The legions had their assigned places, the fifth on the right wing, the twenty-first on the left, the men of the first to lead the van, the twentieth to repel pursuers."

"It was a restless night for different reasons, the barbarians in their festivity filling the valleys under the hills and the echoing glens with merry song or savage shouts, while in the Roman camp were flickering fires, broken exclamations, and the men lay scattered along the intrenchments or wandered from tent to tent, wakeful rather than watchful. A ghastly dream appalled the general. He seemed to see Quintilius Varus, covered with blood, rising out of the swamps, and to hear him, as it were, calling to him, but he did not, as he imagined, obey the call; he even repelled his hand, as he stretched it over him. At daybreak the legions, posted on the wings, from panic or perversity, deserted their position and hastily occupied a plain beyond the morass. Yet Arminius, though free to attack, did not at the moment rush out on them. But when the baggage was clogged in the mud and in the fosses, the soldiers around it in disorder, the array of the standards in confusion, every one in selfish haste and all ears deaf to the word of command, he ordered the Germans to charge, exclaiming again and again, "Behold a Varus and legions once more entangled in Varus's fate." As he spoke, he cut through the column with some picked men, inflicting wounds chiefly on the horses. Staggering in their blood on the slippery marsh, they shook off their riders, driving hither and thither all in their way, and trampling on the fallen. The struggle was hottest round the eagles, which could neither be carried in



the face of the storm of missiles, nor planted in the miry soil. Cæcina, while he was keeping up the battle, fell from his horse, which was pierced under him, and was being hemmed in, when the first legion threw itself in the way. The greed of the foe helped him, for they left the slaughter to secure the spoil, and the legions, towards evening, struggled on to open and firm ground.”

“Nor did this end their miseries. Entrenchments had to be thrown up, materials sought for earthworks, while the army had lost to a great extent their implements for digging earth and cutting turf. There were no tents for the rank and file, no comforts for the wounded. As they shared their food, soiled by mire or blood, they bewailed the darkness with its awful omen, and the one day which yet remained to so many thousand men.”

“It chanced that a horse, which had broken its halter and wandered wildly in fright at the uproar, overthrew some men against whom it dashed. Thence arose such a panic, from the belief that the Germans had burst into the camp, that all rushed to the gates. Of these the decuman gate was the point chiefly sought, as it was furthest from the enemy and safer for flight. Cæcina, having ascertained that the alarm was groundless, yet being unable to stop or stay the soldiers by authority or entreaties or even by force, threw himself to the earth in the gateway, and at last by an appeal to their pity, as they would have had to pass over the body of their commander, closed the way. At the same moment the tribunes and the centurions convinced them that it was a false alarm.”

“Having then assembled them at his headquarters, and ordered them to hear his words in silence, he reminded them of the urgency of the crisis. "Their safety," he said, "lay in their arms, which they must, however, use with discretion, and they must remain within the entrenchments, till the enemy approached closer, in the hope of storming them; then, there must be a general sortie; by that sortie the Rhine might be reached. Whereas if they fled, more forests, deeper swamps, and a savage foe awaited them; but if they were victorious, glory and renown would be theirs." He dwelt on all that was dear to them at home, all that testified to their honour in the camp, without any allusion to disaster. Next he handed over the horses, beginning with his

own, of the officers and tribunes, to the bravest fighters in the army, quite impartially, that these first, and then the infantry, might charge the enemy.”

“There was as much restlessness in the German host with its hopes, its eager longings, and the conflicting opinions of its chiefs. Arminius advised that they should allow the Romans to quit their position, and, when they had quitted it, again surprise them in swampy and intricate ground. Inguiomerus, with fiercer counsels, heartily welcome to barbarians, was for beleaguering the entrenchment in armed array, as to storm them would, he said, be easy, and there would be more prisoners and the booty unspoilt. So at day-break they trampled in the fosses, flung hurdles into them, seized the upper part of the breastwork, where the troops were thinly distributed and seemingly paralysed by fear. When they were fairly within the fortifications, the signal was given to the cohorts, and the horns and trumpets sounded. Instantly, with a shout and sudden rush, our men threw themselves on the German rear, with taunts, that here were no woods or swamps, but that they were on equal ground, with equal chances. The sound of trumpets, the gleam of arms, which were so unexpected, burst with all the greater effect on the enemy, thinking only, as they were, of the easy destruction of a few half-armed men, and they were struck down, as unprepared for a reverse as they had been elated by success. Arminius and Inguiomerus fled from the battle, the first unhurt, the other severely wounded. Their followers were slaughtered, as long as our fury and the light of day lasted. It was not till night that the legions returned, and though more wounds and the same want of provisions distressed them, yet they found strength, healing, sustenance, everything indeed, in their victory.”

“Meanwhile a rumour had spread that our army was cut off, and that a furious German host was marching on Gaul. And had not Agrippina prevented the bridge over the Rhine from being destroyed, some in their cowardice would have dared that base act. A woman of heroic spirit, she assumed during those days the duties of a general, and distributed clothes or medicine among the soldiers, as they were destitute or wounded. According to Caius Plinius, the historian of the German wars, she stood at the extremity of

the bridge, and bestowed praise and thanks on the returning legions. This made a deep impression on the mind of Tiberius. "Such zeal," he thought, "could not be guileless; it was not against a foreign foe that she was thus courting the soldiers. Generals had nothing left them when a woman went among the companies, attended the standards, ventured on bribery, as though it showed but slight ambition to parade her son in a common soldier's uniform, and wish him to be called Cæsar Caligula. Agrippina had now more power with the armies than officers, than generals. A woman had quelled a mutiny which the sovereign's name could not check." All this was inflamed and aggravated by Sejanus, who, with his thorough comprehension of the character of Tiberius, sowed for a distant future hatreds which the emperor might treasure up and might exhibit when fully matured."

"Of the legions which he had conveyed by ship, Germanicus gave the second and fourteenth to Publius Vitellius, to be marched by land, so that the fleet might sail more easily over a sea full of shoals, or take the ground more lightly at the ebb-tide. Vitellius at first pursued his route without interruption, having a dry shore, or the waves coming in gently. After a while, through the force of the north wind and the equinoctial season, when the sea swells to its highest, his army was driven and tossed hither and thither. The country too was flooded; sea, shore, fields presented one aspect, nor could the treacherous quicksands be distinguished from solid ground or shallows from deep water. Men were swept away by the waves or sucked under by eddies; beasts of burden, baggage, lifeless bodies floated about and blocked their way. The companies were mingled in confusion, now with the breast, now with the head only above water, sometimes losing their footing and parted from their comrades or drowned. The voice of mutual encouragement availed not against the adverse force of the waves. There was nothing to distinguish the brave from the coward, the prudent from the careless, forethought from chance; the same strong power swept everything before it. At last Vitellius struggled out to higher ground and led his men up to it. There they passed the night, without necessary food, without fire, many of them with bare or bruised limbs, in a plight as pitiable as that of men besieged by an enemy.

For such, at least, have the opportunity of a glorious death, while here was destruction without honour. Daylight restored land to their sight, and they pushed their way to the river Visurgis, where Cæsar had arrived with the fleet. The legions then embarked, while a rumour was flying about that they were drowned. Nor was there a belief in their safety till they saw Cæsar and the army returned.”

“By this time Stertinius, who had been despatched to receive the surrender of Segimerus, brother of Segestes, had conducted the chief, together with his son, to the canton of the Ubii. Both were pardoned, Segimerus readily, the son with some hesitation, because it was said that he had insulted the corpse of Quintilius Varus. Meanwhile Gaul, Spain, and Italy vied in repairing the losses of the army, offering whatever they had at hand, arms, horses, gold. Germanicus having praised their zeal, took only for the war their arms and horses, and relieved the soldiers out of his own purse. And that he might also soften the remembrance of the disaster by kindness, he went round to the wounded, applauded the feats of soldier after soldier, examined their wounds, raised the hopes of one, the ambition of another, and the spirits of all by his encouragement and interest, thus strengthening their ardour for himself and for battle.”

“That year triumphal honours were decreed to Aulus Cæcina, Lucius Apronius, Caius Silius for their achievements under Germanicus.”

Drawing a line under the Armenius, Varien, Germanicus affair, in *The Geography of Strabo*, Volume 1, Strabo, on the Teutoburg Forest battle, wrote: “All these nations became known through their wars with the Romans, at one time submitting, at another revolting and quitting their habitations; and we should have become acquainted with a greater number of their tribes, if Augustus had permitted his generals to pass the Elbe, in pursuit of those who had fled thither; but he considered the war on hand would be more easily brought to a conclusion, if he left the people on the other side of the Elbe unmolested, and not by attacking provoke them to make common cause with his enemies.”

“The Sicambri inhabiting the country next [to] the Rhine were the first to commence the war, under the

conduct of their leader, Melon; other nations afterwards followed their example, at one time being victorious, at another defeated, and again recommencing hostilities, without regard to hostages or the faith of treaties. Against these people mistrust was the surest defence; for those who were trusted effected the most mischief. For example, the Cherusci, and those who were subject to them, amongst whom three Roman legions with their general, Quintilius Varus, perished by ambush, in violation of the truce; nevertheless all have received punishment for this perfidy, which furnished to Germanicus the Younger the opportunity of a most brilliant triumph, he leading publicly as his captives the most illustrious persons, both men and women, amongst whom were Segimuntus, the son of Segestes, the chief of the Cherusci, and his sister, named Thusnelda, the wife of Armenius, who led on the Cherusci when they treacherously attacked Quintilius Varus, and even to this day continues the war; likewise his son Thumelicus, a boy three years old, as also Sesithacus, the son of Segimerus, chief of the Cherusci, and his wife Rhamis, the daughter of Ucromirus, chief of the Chatti, and Deudorix, the son of Bætorix, the brother of Melon, of the nation of the Sicambri; but Segestes, the father-in-law of Armenius, from the commencement opposed the designs of his son-in-law, and taking advantage of a favourable opportunity, went over to the Roman camp and witnessed the triumphal procession over those who were dearest to him, he being held in honour by the Romans. There was also led in triumph Libes the priest of the Chatti, and many other prisoners of the various vanquished nations, the Cathylci and the Ampsani, the Bructeri, the Usipi, the Cherusci, the Chatti, the Chattuarii, the Landi, the Tubattii."

After pacifying some of the German tribes, Germanicus was posted to Syria, in Asia, then left for Egypt, which became a Roman province due to Caesar's efforts, before returning to Syria where he fell ill. It's alleged that, fearing Germanicus' popularity with the Roman Army, Emperor Tiberious had him poisoned and Germanicus died on October 10 in 19AD aged 33.



**(Back to the primary narrative). After their migration from their German homelands, the Germans did well in the lands of tribal Central Europe where the Celts and their ancestors had dwelt for thousands of years, due to them being as tough as nails and brains enough due to their physical developments over a 12,000 year period or from 13,000BC to 1,000BC and beyond, in the post-ice age lands of the cold North where being out of the elements or being indoors meant there was much less to do, so fiddling around with things, for long periods of time, meant they were forced to use the “mind” to occupy the down time which made them very smart indeed. They never built great pyramids as the one built at Giza from 2,580BC—see image below—or built temples with massive foundations such as we see with Rome's Temple of Jupiter that began to be built at Baalbek from 193BC, but they did create many sophisticated objects; for instance, (1) while the ancient Sumerians are said to have created the world's first calender that dates from either 3,300BC or 3,000BC, followed by the Egyptian calender that dates from 3,000BC, the Western and Northern Europeans, who became the Germans and Celts, had actually laid the “foundations” for Stonehenge—see Stonehenge And The DMS System in chapter 13—which was approximately in 8,000BC, which means it predates the calenders in Sumer and Egypt by a massive “4,500 years”, and points to an advanced but lost civilisation—Atlantis? Hyperborea? The Aryans? The Westerners had also built the world's oldest keeper of time itself; which is, the 10,000 years old Megalithic calender or “twelve pits and an arc” located in Northern Scotland, so they were very intelligent people, indeed.**

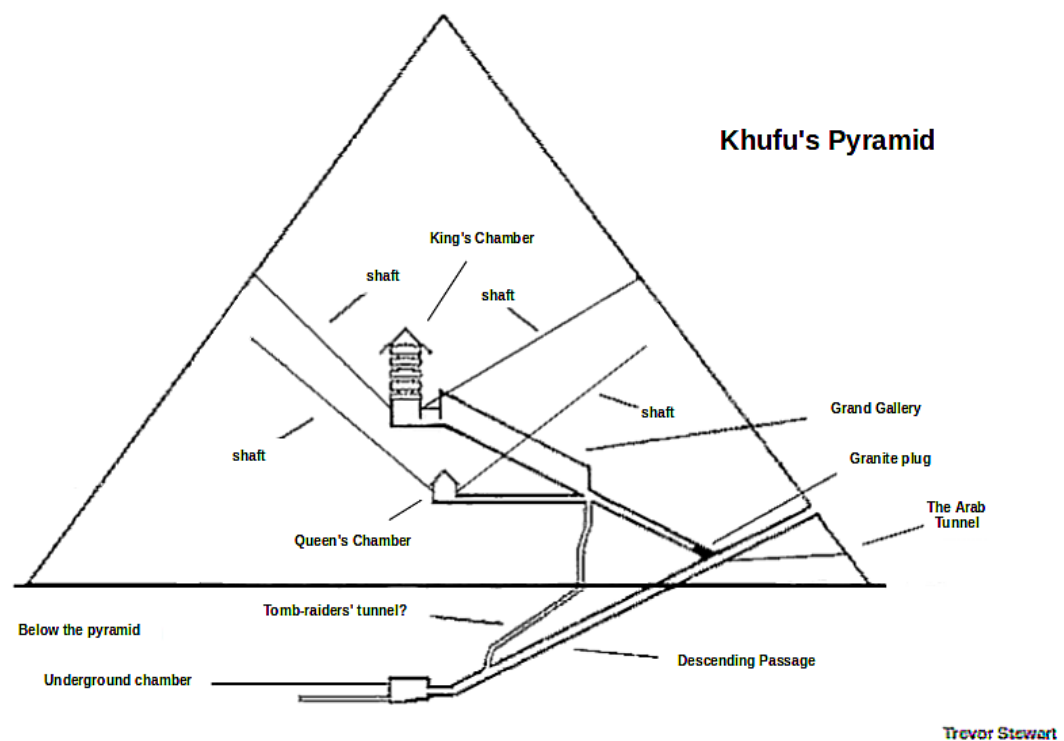
**Although after their divergence the Celts and Germans, according to Tacitus, still appeared very similar to each other and lived side by side, which means conflict between them may have been limited, there is some ancient accounts of conflict between them, but probably insignificant in comparison to their battles with Rome, for instance, (1) Caesar, in *Commentarii de Bello Gallico*, which is the notes he kept on his wars with some of the Celtic Gauls, spoke of the Celtic tribes; such as, the Gauls, the Belgae, and the Helvetii, “being continuously at war**

with the Germans”; (2) the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle speaks of how “the Angle-Saxons [Germans] invaded Britain in 449AD to assist Vortigern in his conflict with the Picts”. So the conflicts between the Celts and Germans, I would theorise, were not wars of extermination, but rather they were the Angle-Saxons attempting to win control over the Celtic tribes and other Germanic tribes; such as the Celtic kingdom of the Picts in Northern Scotland, and the Germanic Silures in England, who were in Britain post-Rome's apparent departure between 350AD to 410AD, and assimilating them; a conflict over who gets to be the next patrician class or ruling class tribe. The common people usually fared well during and after a tribal takeover of their nations, and more so if they were the same race or very similar. The patricians, on the other hand, and prior to “controlled opposition” being a critical factor, were much of the time merely executed out of hand, and the Night of the Long Knives, which was an event that apparently witnessed the Angle-Saxons assassinating the entire Celtic hierarchy in one night, and the Norse supposedly executing the entire Pictish hierarchy before becoming the new elites, are but two historical examples of that. The new elites kept the System for themselves. But they did, more or less, treat the common people well; merely left the conquered subjects to get on with it. It made sense for them to do that; it meant more wealth and soldiers for the new elites, so a much better chance of holding on to the new kingdoms they had won, and even go on to build empires for themselves. It was only after the foreign elites or the Eurasian-Romans had taken over Britain that the destruction of “native and nationalist peoples” began.

To conclude on the Germanic Source: That was many of the northern European cultures that had developed in and around the German Homelands, and, although there were lesser cultures in and around those areas, it's very likely it was the same western European or Magdalenian race that Caesar between 100BC and 44BC, and Tacitus between 56AD and 117AD, wrote about, creating, developing, and using them.

Similar to the Celtic cultural transition period that began around 12,000BC and peaked around 800BC at

**Hallstatt, Austria, in Central Europe, the German cultural transitional period began with the Magdalenian culture—began: approx. 17,000BC; ended: approx. 12,000BC—ended with the Hamburg culture—began: approx. 13,000BC; ended: approx. 11,000BC—which makes them the two sources for the people who eventually became the Germans and Norse and created both the Germanic and Nordic cultures. Evidently, then, it was a branch of the Magdalenians or Western Europeans who became the first group of people to move into Northern Europe, so they are now called the “Northern Europeans”.**



Due to Pharaoh Khufu's name being discovered inside one of the interior chambers within the Great Pyramid, Egyptologists assume that the Great Pyramid was built for Khufu. It had taken 10 to 20 years to complete and was finished in 2,560BC. Prior to its partial destruction, it stood at 481ft; it weighs around 6 million tonnes; it was built from 2.3 million blocks of limestone and granite, some weighing up to 80 tonnes, and was covered by casing stones made from limestone, which formed a smooth outer surface.

**Before moving on to point 7, I will give a synopsis on some of the critical points of point 6: The Cromagnons made their way into Europe in 38,000BC but probably dates back much further than that, displaced the Neanderthals then, after making it through the Aurignation, Gravettian, and Solutrian periods, became the White races; they are, the Romans, Greeks, Norse, Germanic, Celtic, and the Slavic peoples. The Celtic and Germanic peoples had both descended from the western European Magdalenian race and, post-ice age, that branch of the Magdalenians who became the Germans were the very first people to move into Scandinavia, Northern Europe, which was around 13,000BC, and for 12,000 years there they remained until 1,000BC when, for unknown reasons; but perhaps a cold spell, overpopulation, or a depletion of trees, many of them migrated from Scandinavia to Central Europe, which obliged the Celts to migrate further west, amongst other places also. It was due to Greco-Roman writers that we know that the Celts and Germans occupied Western Europe, areas in Eastern Europe, Central Europe, North-Central Europe, North-West Europe, and South-West Europe, so we definitely know they were in those areas before the founding of Rome and after.**



## **EVENTS IN EUROPE DURING THE ROMAN WESTERN EMPIRE PERIOD**

**7. Many advanced civilisations arose before the founding of Rome in 753BC, for example, the Egyptian, Sumerian, Babylonian, Troy, Cycladic, and the Indus Valley civilisation, and the Greek historian Herodotus first wrote about the Celts in 517BC, which means the races in Europe were living in close proximity and must have known each other well through trading with each other and such things. It was not long after Herodotus had written about the Celts, however, that serious problems began to develop between the races in Europe, and by the time both Caesar and Tacitus were writing about the Celts and Germans it appears total war was underway. Not much is known about those earliest European conflicts or Rome's arrival in Celtic lands, due to the fact that not much was written on it outwith the probable facts that we know that, according to Livy, Brennus—the Celtic king of the Senones, apparently invaded Rome in 390BC, but, after a long siege, was bought off with a quantity of gold, and Hannibal—the Carthaginian leader, apparently invaded Rome in 218BC, and the Romans first arrived in the Rhone valley, which is in today's southern France where the Celts lived, around 200BC. But by the time Caesar and Tacitus were writing about the Celts and Germans much more was documented, so we know much more about what had happened in Europe after Brennus and Hannibal had invaded Rome. In the end, the Celts lost those early battles with Rome, which meant, after the decisive battle at Entremont in 124BC when Rome defeated the Celts, Rome began building its western empire in Celtic lands, but the Celts continued to resist Roman expansion and settlements for many years after. Rome had many battles with the Celts, and Caesar's campaigns against them, called the Gallic Wars, which began in 58BC and ended in 51BC, and Emperor Claudius's invasion and defeat of the Britons in Britain in 43AD were the more decisive events, which meant, by 43AD continental Celtic forces were all but exhausted through non-unity of their tribes; fighting mostly singularly, incessant war, and the Eurasian-Roman elites having almost inexhaustible forces**

due to the very many foreigners they were constantly given “citizenship” to in order to get them into their legions to help them win their wars.

Incidentally, it was during the Gallic Wars that a decisive battle occurred against Vercingetorix in 52BC. The battle witnessed Caesar, with some 60,000 soldiers, surrounding Fort Alesia where Vercingetorix, with 100,000 soldiers, was camped with a confederation of Gauls from different tribes. It was a time for war and Rome was leading the way, and, outwith the Celts, some of the earliest battles Rome had with the Germans was when Caesar crossed the river Rhine and attacked the tribes that he called "Germanic", around 55BC, and, recall, the Battle of Teutoburg Forest occurred in September 9AD, where, amongst others, Strabo—an ancient chronicler, wrote that “three Roman legions with their general, Quintilius Varus, perished by ambush”.

Writing on Julius Caesar, Suetonius wrote: “During nine years in which he held the government of the province, his achievements were as follows: he reduced all Gaul, bounded by the Pyrenean forest, the Alps, mount Gebenna, and the two rivers, the Rhine and the Rhone, and being about three thousand two hundred miles in compass, into the form of a province, excepting only the nations in alliance with the republic, and such as had merited his favour; imposing upon this new acquisition an annual tribute of forty millions of sesterces. He was the first of the Romans who, crossing the Rhine by a bridge, attacked the Germanic tribes inhabiting the country beyond that river, whom he defeated in several engagements. He also invaded the Britons, a people formerly unknown, and having vanquished them, exacted from them contributions and hostages. Amidst such a series of successes, he experienced thrice only any signal disaster; once in Britain, when his fleet was nearly wrecked in a storm; in Gaul, at Gergovia, where one of his legions was put to the rout; and in the territory of the Germans, his lieutenants Titurius and Aurunculeius were cut off by an ambuscade.”

“For the victories obtained in the several wars, he triumphed five different times; after the defeat of Scipio:

four times in one month, each triumph succeeding the former by an interval of a few days; and once again after the conquest of Pompey's sons. His first and most glorious triumph was for the victories he gained in Gaul; the next for that of Alexandria, the third for the reduction of Pontus, the fourth for his African victory, and the last for that in Spain; and they all differed from each other in their varied pomp and pageantry. On the day of the Gallic triumph, as he was proceeding along the street called Velabrum, after narrowly escaping a fall from his chariot by the breaking of the axle-tree, he ascended the Capitol by torch-light, forty elephants carrying torches on his right and left. Amongst the pageantry of the Pontic triumph, a tablet with this inscription was carried before him: I CAME, I SAW, I CONQUERED."

Two points: 1. Suetonius (Gaius Suetonius Tranquillus) was born in 69AD. He died sometime after 122AD, and wrote the above account in his book *The Twelve Caesars*. 2. As for were the Barbarians illiterate or not, here's something that Cassius Dio wrote when writing on Caesar's war in Gaul, that may indicate that some of them could at least read and the Romans were using clones to infiltrate and spy on their enemies: "So he [Julius Caesar] sent a horseman of the allies who knew their dialect and had dressed himself in their garb. And in order that even he might not voluntarily or involuntarily reveal the secret he gave him no verbal message and wrote to Cicero in Greek all the injunctions that he wished to give, in order that even if the letter should be captured, it might still be incomprehensible to the barbarians and afford them no information. He had also the custom as a usual thing, when he was sending a secret order to any one, to write constantly the fourth letter beyond, instead of the proper one, [Caesar's code box] so that the writing might be unintelligible to most persons."

The Eurasian leaders of Rome did well in their wars against the Celts in Gaul, which is, approximately, in today's France, Belgium, Luxembourg, parts of the Netherlands, Switzerland, and Germany, and the Eurasian leader Charlemagne—Charlemagne became the king of the

Franks in 771AD; he became the emperor of the Holy Roman Empire in 800AD; he united Western Europe; he invaded Muslim-held Spain; he was the enlightened force behind the Carolingian Renaissance, which was the cultural and intellectual upgrade in the Western Church; the Frankish territories under his control were called the Carolingian Empire; he laid the foundations for the nations of France, Germany, and the Low Countries, and he is remembered as the Father of Europe—later becoming the king of the Franks and France in 761AD, is evidence enough for that. But, Gaul aside, just how successful were the Romans in their wars to conquer the Germans and Celts in Britain, and how bad was it for the British? Two critical pieces of evidence that really proves how bad it all became for the Celts and Germans in Britain after the Roman invasion of Britain in 43AD under Emperor Claudius, and how successful the Romans were at conquering people, is the ancient and eerie Hadrians Wall and the just as ancient and eerie Antonine Wall that were built in the north by the Roman invader approximately 80 to 100 years or so after Claudius's invasion of Britain in 43AD. Hadrians Wall is the most impressive of the walls built in Britain by the Romans. The wall was 73 miles long, 20 feet high, and 10 feet wide. Positioned at every one Roman mile was a fort and watchtower that were built to protect the Romans soldiers stationed on the wall. The wall was ordered built in 122AD by Emperor Hadrian, and marks one of the limits of the Roman Empire that was expanding into Northern Britain or today's Northern England and Scotland. The Antonine Wall is the second wall built in Northern Britain by the Romans. It was built between the years 142AD and 154AD under an order from Emperor Antoninus Pius, and lays almost a hundred miles north of Hadrians Wall. It was 39 miles long, 10 feet high, 16 feet wide, had 16 forts along its length, and is the impressive reminder of just how deadly serious Rome was about conquering all of Britain, and just how dangerous Rome was to the non-Romans. The story is, that the walls were built to protect the citizens of Roman-conquered England from the northern barbarians. But only a fool would believe that legend the truth because the walls could never have been built to protect the south from the northern Celts because just how difficult would it be for one

of Lug's warriors (Lug is the Celtic God of War) to breach two walls that were only 10 and 20ft in height? Not so difficult, and, by that time, the Celts were far from the great race they once were; remember Brennus?, so why would they even try? Why would the Caledonians even be thinking about invading conquered Celtic England? To kill their Celtic brothers? To kill the Romans and their settlers? Unlikely; remember, the Celts in Gaul were defeated after Entremont and Caesar's campaigns (the Gallic Wars) against them, and the English Celts were also defeated after the Roman invasion in 43AD and onwards, so it's unlikely the northern Celts would even be thinking about fighting the Romans never mind invading conquered Celtic England just to return home to await the legions paying them back by invading their lands to take revenge on their people, which means it's more likely the Celts would have just been overly worried by the Roman Empire's presence on their border, and merely trying to hold them off by hitting them hard when necessary, which means the walls must have been built and used for mounting attacks from and done, in part, to kill off, integrate, or control the northern Celts. The Romans also built walls in Germany.

For an example of the war between the Romans and Celts in Britain, here is some of what had occurred:

The Western Europeans, or the Celts, Germans, and Norse, were in Britain or England, Scotland, and Wales when Rome invaded in 43AD when the conquest began. It was due to the descriptions written by Pytheus—a Greek geographer who sailed around Britain between 330 and 320BC, who called the island Brettaniai or, in English, the Brittanic Isles, that the Romans later called today's England Brittanica or, in the early age of the Roman Empire, Britanni or Brittanni, which is Latin, but called loosely today's Scotland Caledonia, and today's Ireland Hibernia. In northern Britain, or in the land between Hadrian's Wall and the Antonine Wall and north of the Antonine Wall, the Western Europeans were given different names; for instance, some are called the Ancient Britons or Ancient Celts, and some are called the Picts, but they may also be called the Celts, Germans, and Norse or, more specifically,

regarding the Celtic element, Roman writer Ptolemy, who was writing around 150AD, wrote that the people inhabiting the land between the two walls were called the Otadini, Damnoni, Novantae, and the Selgovae.

Outwith Caesar's invasions in 55BC and again in 54BC, Rome's war to conquer Britain began with Emperor Claudius's invasion of England in 43AD, and by 77AD the war continued under the command of Gnaeus Julius Agricola who expanded the Roman Empire into Caledonia, today's northern England and Scotland, where he defeated an army of British Celts at the Battle of Mons Graupius in 84AD. The following is some of what the ancient Greko-Roman chroniclers wrote on the early Roman conquest of Britain.

In his book *Germany* and *Agricola*, Tacitus wrote: "The military expeditions of the third year [of Agricola's administration] discovered new nations to the Romans, and their ravages extended as far as the estuary of the Tay."

"In the beginning of the next summer, [the 6th year of Agricola's administration] Agricola received a severe domestic wound in the loss of a son, about a year old. He bore this calamity, not with the ostentatious firmness which many have affected, nor yet with the tears and lamentations of feminine sorrow; and war was one of the remedies of his grief. Having sent forwards his fleet to spread its ravages through various parts of the coast, in order to excite an extensive and dubious alarm, he marched with an army equipped for expedition, to which he had joined the bravest of the Britons whose fidelity had been approved by a long allegiance, and arrived at the Grampian hills, where the enemy was already encamped."

"For the Britons, undismayed by the event of the former action, expecting revenge or slavery, and at length taught that the common danger was to be repelled by union alone, had assembled the strength of all their tribes by embassies and confederacies. Upwards of thirty thousand men in arms were now described; and the youth, together with those of a hale and vigorous age, renowned in war, and bearing their several honorary decorations, were still flocking in; when Calgacus, the most distinguished for birth and valor among the chieftans, is said to have harangued the multitude, gathering round, and eager for battle."



**“Whilst Agricola was yet speaking, the ardor of the soldiers declared itself; and as soon as he had finished, they burst forth into cheerful acclamations, and instantly flew to arms. Thus eager and impetuous, he formed them so that the centre was occupied by the auxiliary infantry, in number eight thousand, and three thousand horse were spread in the wings. The legions were stationed in the rear, before the intrenchments; a disposition which would render the victory signally glorious, if it were obtained without the expense of Roman blood; and would ensure support if the rest of the army were repulsed. The British troops, for the greater display of their numbers, and more formidable appearance, were ranged upon the rising grounds, so that the first line stood upon the plain, the rest, as if linked together, rose above one another upon the ascent. The charioteers and horsemen filled the middle of the field with their tumult and careering. Then Agricola, fearing from the superior number of the enemy lest he should be obliged to fight as well on his flanks as in front, extended his ranks; and although this rendered his line of battle less firm, and several of his officers advised him to bring up the legions, yet, filled with hope, and resolute in danger, he dismissed his horse and took his station on foot before the colors.”**

**“At first the action was carried on at a distance. The Britons, armed with long swords and short targets, with steadiness and dexterity avoided or struck down our missile weapons, and at the same time poured in a torrent of their own. Agricola then encouraged three Batavian and two Tungrian cohorts to fall in and come to close quarters; a method of fighting familiar to these veteran soldiers, but embarrassing to the enemy from the nature of their armor; for the enormous British swords, blunt at the point, are unfit for close grappling, and engaging in a confined space. When the Batavians; therefore, began to redouble their blows, to strike with the bosses of their shields, and mangle the faces of the enemy; and, bearing down all those who resisted them on the plain, were advancing their lines up the ascent; the other cohorts, fired with ardor and emulation, joined in the charge, and overthrew all who came in their way: and so great was their impetuosity in the pursuit of victory, that they left many of their foes half dead or unhurt behind them. In the meantime the troops of cavalry took to**

flight, and the armed chariots mingled in the engagement of the infantry; but although their first shock occasioned some consternation, they were soon entangled among the close ranks of the cohorts, and the inequalities of the ground. Not the least appearance was left of an engagement of cavalry; since the men, long keeping their ground with difficulty, were forced along with the bodies of the horses; and frequently, straggling chariots, and affrighted horses without their riders, flying variously as terror impelled them, rushed obliquely athwart or directly through the lines.”

“Those of the Britons who, yet disengaged from the fight, sat on the summits of the hills, and looked with careless contempt on the smallness of our numbers, now began gradually to descend; and would have fallen on the rear of the conquering troops, had not Agricola, apprehending this very event, opposed four reserved squadron of horse to their attack, which, the more furiously they had advanced, drove them back with the greater celerity. Their project was thus turned against themselves; and the squadrons were ordered to wheel from the front of the battle and fall upon the enemy's rear. A striking and hideous spectacle now appeared on the plain: some pursuing; some striking: some making prisoners, whom they slaughtered as others came in their way. Now, as their several dispositions prompted, crowds of armed Britons fled before inferior numbers, or a few, even unarmed, rushed upon their foes, and offered themselves to a voluntary death. Arms, and carcasses, and mangled limbs, were promiscuously strewed, and the field was dyed in blood. Even among the vanquished were seen instances of rage and valor. When the fugitives approached the woods, they collected, and surrounded the foremost of the pursuers, advancing incautiously, and unacquainted with the country; and had not Agricola, who was everywhere present, caused some strong and lightly-equipped cohorts to encompass the ground, while part of the cavalry dismounted made way through the thickets, and part on horseback scoured the open woods, some disaster would have proceeded from the excess of confidence. But when the enemy saw their pursuers again formed in compact order, they renewed their flight, not in bodies as before, or waiting for their companions, but

scattered and mutually avoiding each other; and thus took their way to the most distant and devious retreats. Night and satiety of slaughter put an end to the pursuit. Of the enemy ten thousand were slain: on our part three hundred and sixty fell; among whom was Aulus Atticus, the praefect of a cohort, who, by his juvenile ardor, and the fire of his horse, was borne into the midst of the enemy.”

“Success and plunder contributed to render the night joyful to the victors; whilst the Britons, wandering and forlorn, amid the promiscuous lamentations of men and women, were dragging along the wounded; calling out to the unhurt; abandoning their habitations, and in the rage of despair setting them on fire; choosing places of concealment, and then deserting them; consulting together, and then separating. Sometimes, on beholding the dear pledges of kindred and affection, they were melted into tenderness, or more frequently roused into fury; insomuch that several, according to authentic information, instigated by a savage compassion, laid violent hands upon their own wives and children. On the succeeding day, a vast silence all around, desolate hills, the distant smoke of burning houses, and not a living soul descried by the scouts, displayed more amply the face of victory. After parties had been detached to all quarters without discovering any certain tracks of the enemy's flight, or any bodies of them still in arms, as the lateness of the season rendered it impracticable to spread the war through the country, Agricola led his army to the confines of the Horesti. Having received hostages from this people, he ordered the commander of the fleet to sail round the island; for which expedition he was furnished with sufficient force, and preceded by the terror of the Roman name. Pie himself then led back the cavalry and infantry, marching slowly, that he might impress a deeper awe on the newly conquered nations; and at length distributed his troops into their winter-quarters. The fleet, about the same time, with prosperous gales and renown, entered the Trutulensian harbor, whence, coasting all the hither shore of Britain, it returned entire to its former station.”

“The account of these transactions, although unadorned with the pomp of words in the letters of Agricola, was received by Domitian, as was customary with that prince, with outward expressions of joy, but inward

anxiety. He was conscious that his late mock-triumph over Germany, in which he had exhibited purchased slaves, whose habits and hair were contrived to give them the resemblance of captives, was a subject of derision; whereas here, a real and important victory, in which so many thousands of the enemy were slain, was celebrated with universal applause.”

Incidentally, not to mistrust everything I read, but, regarding Tacitus' statement above, which is, “the bravest of the Britons whose fidelity had been approved by a long allegiance,” just how likely was it that the Romans would view the British tribes in an alliance with them against their own Celts as “the bravest of the Britons”? Unlikely, I would think, and the Romans surely must have viewed them as traitors and fools, if it even occurred.

After the battle at Mons Graupius, Agricola was recalled back to Rome, but the war continued to such a serious level that, at separate times, emperors Hadrian and Antoninus ordered the two northern walls built to seal in the northern Celts. It was around the time that Hadrian's Wall began to be built that, as evidence of how dangerous a place Caledonia was to the Romans, the famous Roman legion; the Legio IX Hispana or 9th Legion, vanished without a trace after marching into Caledonia. No one's so sure what happened, but we know that around 4,000 Roman soldiers from the Ninth, who had been stationed in Britain after the Roman invasion in 43AD under Emperor Claudius, vanished, never to be seen again.

Although the northern war made things dangerous for the Romans, they held on in Caledonia due, in part, to their forts on the Gask Hills, and the Antonine and Hadrian walls that proved an effective barrier, so Rome was making progress. Fighting continued, and perhaps around 164AD the Romans were forced to abandon the Antonine Wall and retreat southwards back to Hadrian's Wall in Northern England, but, although they retreated, they still held on to several of the forts they had previously built in Caledonia. In 180AD under the reign of Emperor Commodus, the Caledonians attacked and captured Hadrian's Wall—Cassius Dio wrote: “When the tribes in that island, crossing

the wall that separated them from the Roman legions, proceeded to do much mischief and cut down a general together with his troops, Commodus became alarmed but sent Ulpius Marcellus against them”—and, after Commodus died and civil war broke out in Rome, a relative peace emerged but did not hold. The civil war between the handful of the Roman elites who were competing to become the emperor, was won by Emperor Severus who, along with both his sons Caracalla and Geta, and after enacting the Severan Reforms, which were political, social, and economic reforms, that divided Britain into Britannia Superior and Britannia Inferior, and provoked by the Maeatae—a Celtic tribe in Caledonia, arrived in Britain Superior in 208AD with perhaps 50,000 soldiers, before marching north to Hadrians Wall to put down the rebellion. Severus and Caracalla were also seeking to expand the empire through conquering Caledonia, and in 209AD, after repairing Hadrians Wall, Severus marched north to the Antonine Wall and into the Highlands. Reaching the Highlands was no easy march for Severus who sustained heavy losses due to the Caledonians' guerrilla war tactics, and the Celts were killed on sight, so it must have been a horror show for the northern Celts who were merely trying to slow down the Roman advance to conquer all, and not just plundering the south which would bring more legions upon them to their inevitable grievous harm. In 210AD Severus's son, Caracalla, who had become the emperor, led more forces north of the Antonine Wall, but, due to his father falling ill, aborted his plans and, after making a peace treaty with the Caledonians, returned to Rome after his father had died at Eboracum, which is today's York, in 211AD. Severus and Caracalla's war on the Caledonians came to an abrupt end after Severus died on February 4, 211AD, but the Roman war dead, during the Severus/Caracalla war against the Caledonians, is substantial; it's claimed that 50,000 Romans were killed due mostly to disease, and nobody really knows how many Celts fell. Just so you know how bad it was, Cassius Dio wrote: “So Severus, desiring to subjugate the whole of it, invaded Caledonia. While traversing the territory he had untold trouble in cutting down the forests, reducing the levels of heights, filling up the swamps, and bridging the rivers. He fought no battle and beheld no

adversary in battle array. The enemy purposely put sheep and cattle in front of them for the soldiers to seize, in order that the latter might be deceived for a longer time and wear themselves out. The Romans received great damage from the streams and were made objects of attack when they were scattered. Afterward, being unable to walk, they were slain by their own friends to avoid capture, so that nearly as many as fifty thousand died.”

To follow the story through, Dio goes on to write: “But the emperor did not desist till he had approached the extremity of the island. Here he observed very accurately to how slight a degree the sun declined below the horizon and the length of days and nights both summer and winter. Thus having been conveyed through practically the whole of the hostile region,—for he was really conveyed in a covered chair most of the way on account of his weakness,—he returned to [A.D. 210] friendly territory, first forcing the Britons to come to terms on condition that he should abandon a good part of their territory. When the inhabitants of the island again revolted, he summoned the soldiers and ordered them to invade the rebels' country, killing everybody they met; and he quoted these words: "Let no one escape sheer destruction. No one our hands, not even the babe in the womb of the mother. If it be male; let it nevertheless not escape sheer destruction."

After those events and according to historians, the Romans retreated back to Hadrian's Wall—the Romans' first fortified line, and never again campaigned in Caledonia, Northern Britain. But just how true is that? Historians tend to favour the Romans failing to conquer Caledonia. But judging who the “British” nobility were in the 7th century AD, which was only a few hundred years or so after Caracalla had withdrawn his forces from Caledonia, it looks like the Romans had actually won the war against the northern Celts in Caledonia, which means they lied or are confused, and, in reality, it appears that some of the Roman elites and their settlers in fact settled in to become the new patrician class and people, and they lied about the fall of the Roman Western Empire to look to a future free from the guilt of being imperialist Romans; now they are the British.



Here's my conclusion on the two northern walls and what Rome's intention was towards the Britons in the Brittanic Isles: The walls appear more like forward operating bases for the Romans to attack and break the northern Celts from, rather than innocuous lines of defence built to protect the Roman settlers and the conquered English-Celts and Germans who lived south of the first wall. Rome's thirst for conquest was the true cause of the conflicts in Britain and Caledonia. But if the two walls are creepy indications of genocide, then how much more is the disappearance of the great Caledonian forests that not only sheltered the people and animals but gave the people wood to burn to keep warm in those cold northern places? Is their disappearance evidence of genocide by the Romans? According to Roman writers, Caledonia and the Highlands were covered in forests when the Romans first arrived in Scotland just after 77AD, and the Romans weren't so kind to the natives; recall what Cassius wrote, "Let no one escape sheer destruction. No one our hands, not even the babe in the womb of the mother. If it be male; let it nevertheless not escape sheer destruction.", and recall what Tacitus wrote, "These plunderers of the world, after exhausting the land by their devastations, are rifling the ocean: stimulated by avarice. To ravage, to slaughter, to usurp under false titles, they call empire; and where they make a desert, they call it peace." But looking today for the great Caledonian forests and finding nothing but empty glens, towns populated by the settlers, and Cassius writing about "cutting down the forests" (see above), then you may be forgiven for thinking that the Romans did in fact destroy the trees to stop the natives using them to shelter in and keep warm, thereby speeding up their demise. The evidence for genocide or ethnic-cleansing is very good, of course, but the natives must have also added to the destruction of the great Caledonian forest. Incidentally, in America, we see similar occurrences with the U.S. cavalry eradicating the buffalo in order to kill off the Plains Indians through starvation, which means, destroying resources to help destroy people does happen. All things considered, I really doubt the Romans won their wars by destroying enemy forests, but, of course, they would have if they could, and certainly they must have tried. So if you're wondering where

the native White people went, what I think happened, or what my research led me to believe, is that, the legions, along with much killing on sight during times of war, merely defeated enemy forces before bringing in their White-looking Eurasian settlers, and not so White, to slowly displace and integrate them.

I will close this with a speech that Tacitus wrote on behalf of the down-on-their-luck British and probably Calgacus who fought Agricola in the Highlands in 84AD:

"When I reflect on the causes of the war, and the circumstances of our situation, I feel a strong persuasion that our united efforts on the present day will prove the beginning of universal liberty to Britain. For we are all undebased by slavery; and there is no land behind us, nor does even the sea afford a refuge, whilst the Roman fleet hovers around. In all the battles which have yet been fought, with various success, against the Romans, our countrymen may be deemed to have reposed their final hopes and resources in us: for we, the noblest sons of Britain, the Caledonians, and therefore stationed in its last recesses, far from the view of servile shores, have preserved even our eyes unpolluted by the contact of subjection. We, at the furthest limits both of land and liberty, have been defended to this day by the remoteness of our situation and of our fame. The extremity of Britain is now disclosed; and whatever is unknown becomes an object of magnitude. But there is no nation beyond us; nothing but waves and rocks, and the still more hostile Romans, whose arrogance we cannot escape by obsequiousness and submission."

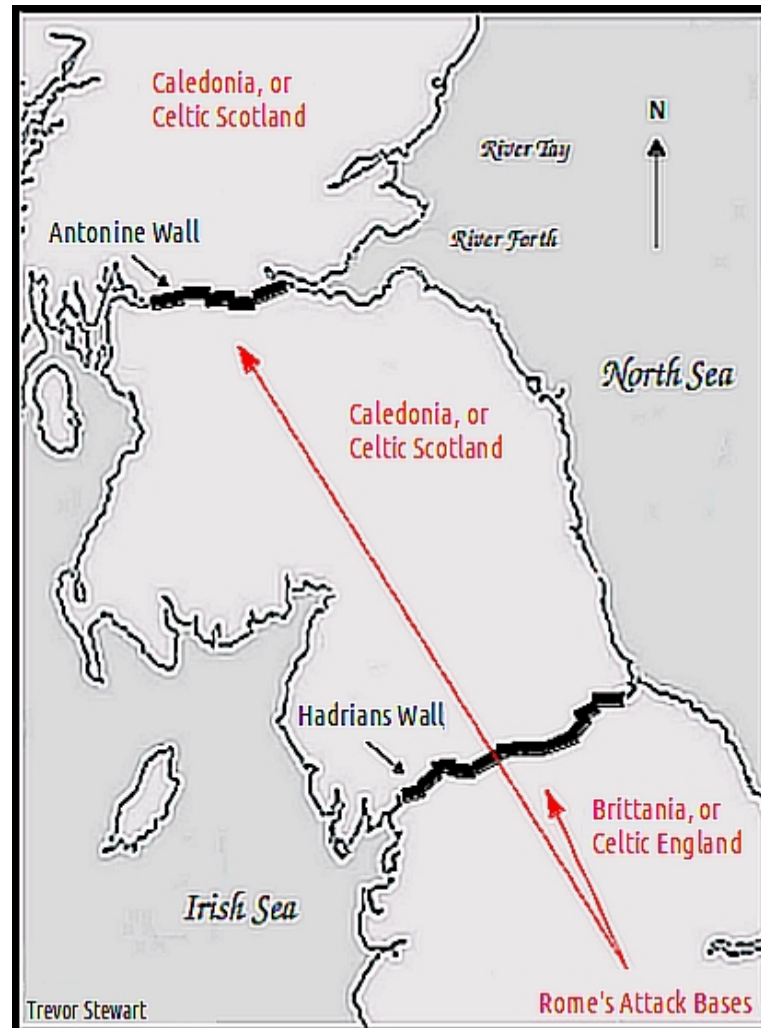
"Our children and relations are by the appointment of nature the dearest of all things to us. These are torn away by levies to serve in foreign lands. Our wives and sisters, though they should escape the violation of hostile force, are polluted under names of friendship and hospitality. Our estates and possessions are consumed in tributes; our grain in contributions. Even our bodies are worn down amidst stripes and insults in clearing woods and draining marshes. Wretches born to slavery are once bought, and afterwards maintained by their masters: Britain every day buys, every day feeds, her own servitude. And as among domestic slaves

every new comer serves for the scorn and derision of his fellows; so, in this ancient household of the world, we, as the newest and vilest, are sought out to destruction. For we have neither cultivated lands, nor mines, nor harbors, which can induce them to preserve us for our labors. The Trinobantes, even under a female leader, had force enough to burn a colony, to storm camps, and, if success had not damped their vigor, would have been able entirely to throw off the yoke; and shall not we, untouched, unsubdued, and struggling not for the acquisition but the security of liberty, show at the very first onset what men Caledonia has reserved for her defence?"

"Can you imagine that the Romans are as brave in war as they are licentious in peace? Acquiring renown from our discords and dissensions, they convert the faults of their enemies to the glory of their own army; an army compounded of the most different nations, which success alone has kept together, and which misfortune will as certainly dissipate. Unless, indeed, you can suppose that Gauls, and Germans, and (I blush to say it) even Britons, who, though they expend their blood to establish a foreign dominion, have been longer its foes than its subjects, will be retained by loyalty and affection! Terror and dread alone are the weak bonds of attachment; which once broken, they who cease to fear will begin to hate. Every incitement to victory is on our side. The Romans have no wives to animate them; no parents to upbraid their flight. Most of them have either no home, or a distant one. Few in number, ignorant of the country, looking around in silent horror at woods, seas, and a heaven itself unknown to them, they are delivered by the gods, as it were imprisoned and bound, into our hands. Be not terrified with an idle show, and the glitter of silver and gold, which can neither protect nor wound. In the very ranks of the enemy we shall find our own bands. The Britons will acknowledge their own cause. The Gauls will recollect their former liberty. The rest of the Germans will desert them, as the Usipii have lately done. Nor is there anything formidable behind them: ungarrisoned forts; colonies of old men; municipal towns distempered and distracted between unjust masters and ill-obeying subjects. Here is a general; here an army. There, tributes, mines, and all the train of punishments inflicted on slaves; which

**whether to bear eternally, or instantly to revenge, this field must determine. March then to battle, and think of your ancestors and your posterity."**

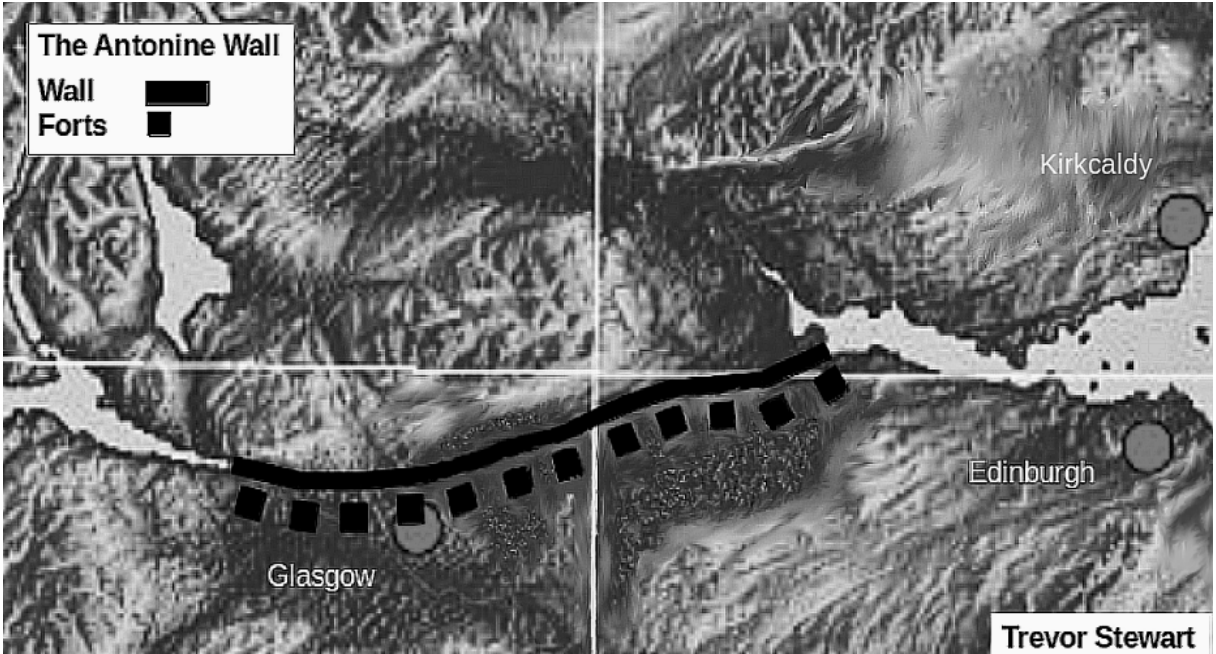
**"These plunderers of the world, after exhausting the land by their devastations, are rifling the ocean: stimulated by avarice. To ravage, to slaughter, to usurp under false titles, they call empire; and where they make a desert, they call it peace."**



*Hadrian's Wall began construction in 122AD. The Antonine Wall began construction in 142AD. The race war between the Romans and Celts in Britain, began with Caesar's invasion in 55BC. The Romans had defeated the Celts in Gaul, and also defeated them in England (approx. central and southern Britain). Now they would make their last stand in approx. Scotland north of Rome's frontier walls. In the end, the Romans and their settlers had taken over all of Britain including Caledonia or Scotland, but many of the Celts survived to be somewhat lost and integrated amongst the new people.*



*A section of the almost 2,000 year old Hadrians Wall where the Romans would advance into the Celtic north where the once great Celtic race was making its final stand, kill anyone who resisted Roman expansion and control, only to return to their bases behind the wall. The wall was 73 miles in length, was 20ft in height, and was 10ft in width.*



*This is the Antonine Wall, positioned 100 miles north of Hadrians Wall.*



*A section of the almost 2,000 year old Antonine Wall. It was 39 miles in length, was 10ft in height, was 16ft in width, and had taken 12 years to build.*



As I have shown, there was serious conflict in Europe from shortly after the Greek historian Herodotus had first written about the Celts in the 6th century BC, and from 43AD onwards the Romans began to steadily conquer their way across Celtic and Germanic Britain crushing all who impeded their advance and design, and the killing of Boudicea in 66AD, Agricola's battle with Calgacus in the Grampian Mountains in 84AD, Hadrians Wall starting to be built in 122AD, and Emperor Caracalla's peace treaty with the Caledonians in 211AD, is evidence enough for that. Throughout those conflicts in Europe, and as time went by, the Eurasian settlers increased their numbers through only breeding with themselves or the very White-looking Eurasians for security reasons; I suppose, to conceal their Asiatic and Oriental features, all the while many of the White warriors captured may well have been killed in their amphitheatres—see Dio Cassius's statements and the Circus Maximus and Colosseum image below—or torn to pieces by the slaughtermen and the starving lions in front of tens of thousands of insane and cruel people that, incidentally, has been covered up by the leaders of today, with no memorial plaques to the Westerners; only to the Jews and Christians, to remind us that Rome was indeed a brutal, racist, state and also a hypocritical state because Rome very often promoted a multicultural or leftist outlook.

*Circus Maximus on the left; Colosseum on the right.*



*Rome's greatest amphitheatre was called the Colosseum. Construction began under Emperor Vespasian in 72AD, and was completed in 80AD under Emperor Titus. The Colosseum could hold up to 60,000 spectators, and the sand came from the Nile. Before the Colosseum was built, the "games" were held in the Circus Maximus, along with other venues.*

The following is some of what the ancient Roman and Greek writers wrote on the “games”. Suetonius wrote: ”The Circensian games were shows exhibited in the Circus Maximus, and consisted of various kinds: first, chariot and horse-races, of which the Romans were extravagantly fond. The charioteers were distributed into four parties, distinguished by the colour of their dress. The spectators, without regarding the speed of the horses, or the skill of the men, were attracted merely by one or the other of the colours, as caprice inclined them. In the time of Justinian, no less than thirty thousand men lost their lives at Constantinople, in a tumult raised by a contention amongst the partizans of the several colours. Secondly, contests of agility and strength; of which there were five kinds, hence called Pentathlum. These were, running, leaping, boxing, wrestling, and throwing the discus or quoit. Thirdly, *udus Trojae*, a mock-fight, performed by young noblemen on horseback, revived by Julius Caesar, and frequently celebrated by the succeeding emperors. Fourthly, *Venatio*, which was the fighting of wild beasts with one another, or with men called *Bestiarii*, who were either forced to the combat by way of punishment, as the primitive Christians were, or fought voluntarily, either from a natural ferocity of disposition, or induced by hire. An incredible number of animals of various kinds were brought from all quarters, at a prodigious expense, for the entertainment of the people. Pompey, in his second consulship, exhibited at once five hundred lions, which were all dispatched in five days; also eighteen elephants. Fifthly the representation of a horse and foot battle, with that of an encampment or a siege. Sixthly, the representation of a sea-fight (*Naumachia*), which was at first made in the Circus Maximus, but afterwards elsewhere. The combatants were usually captives or condemned malefactors, who fought to death, unless saved by the clemency of the emperor. If any thing unlucky happened at the games, they were renewed, and often more than once.”

Cassius Dio wrote: “At the consecration of the hero-shrine there were all sorts of contests, and the children of the nobles performed the Troy equestrian exercise. Men who were their peers also contended on chargers and pairs and

three-horse teams. A certain Quintus Vitellius, a senator, fought as a gladiator. All kinds of wild beasts and kine were slain by the wholesale, among them a rhinoceros and a hippopotamus, then seen for the first time in Rome. Many have described the appearance of the hippo and it has been seen by many more. As for the rhinoceros, it is in most respects like an elephant, but has a projecting horn at the very tip of its nose and through this fact has received its name. Besides the introduction of these beasts Dacians and Suebi fought in throngs with each other. The latter are Celts, the former a species of Scythian. The Suebi, to be exact, dwell across the Rhine (though many cities elsewhere claim their name), and the Dacians on both sides of the Ister.”

Cassius Dio wrote: “A festival extraordinary was conducted by the dancers and horse-breeders. The Feast of Mars, because the Tiber had previously occupied the hippodrome, was this time held in the forum of Augustus and honored by a kind of horse-race and by the slaughter of wild beasts.”

Cassius Dio, reflecting on Claudius's rule as emperor, wrote: “Having finished this business he held the festival following the triumph and assumed for the occasion some of the consular authority. It took place in both the theatres at once. In the course of the spectacle he would frequently absent himself while others superintended it in his place. He had announced as many horse-races as could find place in a day, but they amounted to not more than ten altogether. For between the separate courses bears were slaughtered and athletes struggled. Boys sent for from Asia also executed the Pyrrhic dance. The performers in the theatre gave, with the consent of the senate, another festival likewise intended to commemorate the victory. All this was done on account of the successes in Britain, and to the end that other nations might more readily capitulate it was voted that all the agreements which Claudius or the lieutenants representing him should make with any peoples should be binding, the same as if sanctioned by the senate and the people. Portions of Britain, then, were captured at this time in the manner described. After this, during the second consulship of Gaius Crispus and the first of Titus

**Statilius, Claudius came to Rome at the end of a six months' absence from the city (of which time he had spent only sixteen days in Britain) and celebrated his triumph."**

**"Vespasian in Britain had been hemmed in by the barbarians and was in danger of annihilation, but his son Titus becoming alarmed about his father managed by unusual daring to break through the enclosing line; he then pursued and destroyed the fleeing enemy. Plautius for his skillful handling of the war with Britain and his successes in it both received praise from Claudius and obtained an ovation. [In the course of the armed combat of gladiators many foreign freedmen and British captives fought. The number of men receiving their finishing blow in this part of the spectacle was large, and he took pride in the fact]."**



*Now extinct due to hunters not Rome, the North African Barbary lion was predominantly used in Roman games.*

**Incidentally, the last segment of Dio's statement, which is, "[In the course of the armed combat of gladiators many foreign freedmen and British captives fought. The number of men receiving their finishing blow in this part of the spectacle was large, and he took pride in the fact]", is in brackets, which means someone must have placed that statement in after Dio had written it, so it's difficult to say if it's true or not. But it shows that the Romans did actually send captured soldiers to their theatres to be humiliated and killed in front of their mobs, and it appears they always came from the White West, so more evidence to prove that some of the Romans were White-Asians or Eurasians, and**



**Vespasian, recall, who even has “ASIAN” in his name, was the Emperor who built the Colosseum. It may be difficult for you to tell if he was a Eurasian, but, to me, the author who discovered the 6 White races of Europe; Russian whites; Polish whites; Italian whites; Nordic whites; Celtic whites; German whites, and discovered the Eurasians as well, he was one of the Eurasians.**

**It was an impressive show the Romans put on to become the masters of Europe and Britain, but the Celts and Germans hadn't a chance because they just couldn't unify their race; tribes fought the Roman armies mostly singularly, so, at each and every engagement to stop Rome's advance into their homelands, it would cost them thousands of fighting men that were very difficult to replace due to the small size of their tribes. The Romans, on the other hand, what with their tribes being unified and their sneaky “multicultural outlook” that had smartly but cheaply won them probably millions of foreigners to fight for them is why Rome, in essence, gave foreigners Roman citizenship, had it very easy; could always replace their dead, mostly always outnumbered the singular tribe they were fighting, so they won the war. Simple as that. But not always in the field, but by, first, defeating the tribe, second, subjecting the tribe, third, bringing in Roman settlers, fourth, not Romanising them but assuming their identity; wearing their style of clothes; talking their language, and fifth, displacing and integrating them. The Romans also had a ruthless system where they would, without provocation, invade foreign territory in order to slaughter the people just in case they, as they multiply and grow stronger, attacked them! Livy, a Roman historian, wrote: “They led one army against the Æquans, not to war, but from motives of animosity, to lay waste their territories, lest they should leave them any strength for new designs.” Making war also brought great wealth or tribute and plunder to the Roman emperors. Tacitus wrote: “Gaius had now spent practically all the money in Rome and the rest of Italy, gathered from every source from which he could in any way get it, and as no resource that was of any value or practicable could be found there, his expenses became a source of great annoyance to him. Therefore he set out for Gaul, declaring hostilities**

against the Celtae on the ground that they were showing some uneasiness, but in reality his purpose was to get money from that region and Spain, where wealth was also abundant.” In fact, much of Rome's temples, aqueducts, and theatres were built from the plunder, tributes, and the gold of Gaul after a triumph or a victory celebration. Suetonius wrote: Caesar, after pacification, he imposed “upon this new acquisition an annual tribute of forty millions of sesterces. [1 sesterce was worth 1½ donkeys] With money raised from the spoils of the war, he began to construct a new forum, the ground-plot of which cost him above a hundred millions of sesterces. He promised the people a public entertainment of gladiators, and a feast in memory of his daughter, such as no one before him had ever given.”



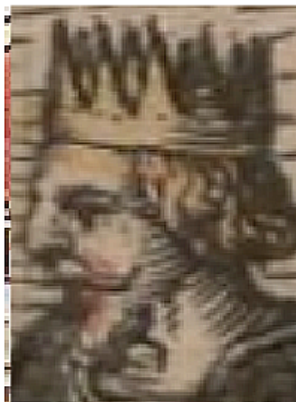
## **EVENTS IN BRITAIN AFTER THE FALL OF THE ROMAN WESTERN EMPIRE; MOPPING UP, FEUDALISM, AND MULTICULTURAL BRITAIN**

**8. Judging by the media, the ruling elites want the people to believe that the Romans weren't so bad to the British even though they called them barbarians or even the Barbarians, which answers that point, and at the end of the almost 400-year battle for Britain the Romans had to withdraw due to the continental Germans sacking Rome in 410AD, and Odoacer overthrowing Emperor Romulus in 476AD which brought about the collapse of the Roman Western Empire. But how do we know that the Romans really did withdraw their peoples from Britain after the Germans had sacked Rome, and if the Germans even did sack Rome? Historians have been making those claims for probably over a thousand years. But, hear this for evidence of a conspiracy, if the Romans really did withdraw their forces and peoples from Britain after Rome was sacked as historians claim, then how do they explain the fact that in the Celtic and Germanic West only a hundred or so years after the supposedly collapse of Rome's Western Empire the British nobility were clearly Eurasian peoples and not Germanic or Celtic peoples? See images below for evidence. I dated the Roman-Eurasian-British nobility back to the early 7th century AD, but no further due to failing to locate statues or portraits to see if they were Eurasians or not, but they must date back much further. The Eurasians may have moved into Britain after the sacking of Rome, of course, if the sacking did happen. But there's no record of any invasions into Britain after the sacking of Rome in 410AD, outwith the Scots from Ireland who made their settlement at Argyle on the east coast of Scotland in 600AD, and the invasion by the Angle-Saxons around the 5th century AD. It isn't impossible that the Scots and Angle-Saxons were also Eurasians and it was them who actually became the nobility. But I don't think so, and there's no portraits of them to attempt to identify their race. So, what I think happened, it appears the Eurasian-Roman elites and settlers never withdrew from Britain after Alrich had supposedly sacked Rome in 410AD, at all, but actually remained in**

**Britain, living amongst the natives, assuming their identity; speaking their languages, wearing their style of clothing, controlling their nation, and had already become the British nobility due to the “mopping up” operations that followed on from Rome's invasion of Britain in 43AD.**

**Here is my evidence; the following images, to support my claim that in the Celtic and Germanic West merely one hundred or so years after the supposedly collapse of Rome's Western Empire the British nobility were Eurasians when, of course, if the Germans really had won and the Romans really had withdrawn their forces from Britain, they should have been Germans and Celts. Before viewing the evidence, let me say, that, while “some” of the subjects don't appear “ever so” Asiatic or Oriental and “none” of them appear Celtic or Germanic or even British, it's evident that “most” of them do have Asiatic and Oriental features however subtle, and the Roman-Eurasians do attempt to breed those non-White features out by breeding mostly only with the very non-Asiatic-Oriental-looking Roman-Eurasians, which, of course, helps fool the true White peoples to win the race war, and vice versa in the other nations.**

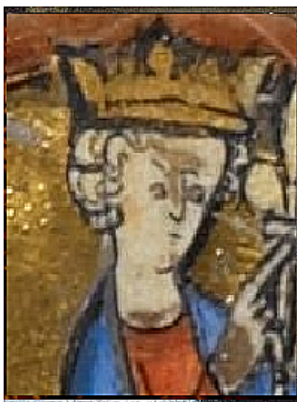
SOME OF THE EURASIAN ENGLISH  
KINGS AND QUEENS



*Cynegils: King of Wessex, Eng. from 611-642AD*



*Cædwalla: King of Wessex, Eng. from 659-689AD*



*Ecgbert: King of Wessex, Eng. from 771-839AD*



*William I: King of Eng. from 1087-1100AD*



*Henry I: King of Eng. from 1100-1135AD*



*Richard I: King of Eng. from 1177-1199AD*



*Henry V: King of Eng. from 1413-1422AD*



*Edward I: King of Eng. from 1272-1307AD*



*Lady Margaret Beaufort mother of King Henry VII*



*Henry VII: King of Eng. from 1485*



*Henry VIII: King from 1509-1547AD*



*Mary I: Queen from 1553*



*Elizabeth I: Queen from 1558-1603AD*



*James I: King from 1603-1625AD*



*Charles I: King from 1625-1649AD*



*Cromwell; Lord Protector from 1653-1658AD.*





*Charles II: King from 1660-1685AD*



*James Stuart II: King from 1685-1688AD*



*William III: King from 1689-1702AD*



*George I: King from 1714-1727AD*

**SOME OF THE EURASIAN SCOTTISH  
KINGS AND QUEENS**



*Donald I: King of Scot. from 858-862AD*



*Constantine I: King of Scot. from 862-877AD*



*Aodh Mac Choinnich: King of Scot. from 877-878AD*



*Griogair Mac Dhunghail: King from 878-889AD*



*Donald Mac Choseim: King of Scot. from 889-900AD*



*Dubh Mac Mhaoil Chaluin: King from 962-967AD*



*Alexander the III: King of Scot. from 1249-1286AD*



*James I: King of Scot. from 1406-1437AD*



*James Stuart II: King of Eng. Scot. and Ire. from 1685-1688AD*



*William III; William of Orange: King of Eng. Scot. and Ire. from 1689-1702AD*

**I hope you enjoyed viewing the above images and found them as interesting as I had. But, to reiterate, be aware that I failed to locate any images before the early 7th century AD on the nobility in Britain, but they must have been there due to the Eurasian-Roman conquest of Britain which began in 43AD. The Eurasians may have infiltrated Britain from before Caesar's British invasions in 55 and 54BC, of course, which is something to be aware. As for France and Russia, etc., their elites also fit that Eurasian profile.**

**I know that the Eurasian-Romans supported a multicultural outlook in order to encourage foreigners to enlist in their legions to help win their empire, hold on to their empire, and win the race wars that had began sometime before 390BC, and I know that, once the Eurasian-Romans elites had won those wars, they faked the fall of the Roman Western Empire in order to cover up their takeover of Western Europe, as they settled in to become the new patrician class. I know that the Eurasian-Romans elites went on to found the British, Russian, Spanish, and French, empires, etc., that had arisen after the apparent fall of Rome, as the Eurasian-Roman elites, due to Rome's bad reputation, I suppose, let Rome fade away into the Italian states, as the Roman elites became the popes, etc., and the Roman Empire became the Holy Roman Empire also known as the Roman Catholic Church. But, in Britain, what did I discover just 300 years or so after the apparent fall of Rome's western empire and Rome's apparent withdrawal from Britain? I discovered, along with the “mopping up” war to displace and integrate the Highlanders who descended from the Caledonians or the Northern Celts that fought the Romans, the rise of a tyrannical new social organisation system and theory called the feudal system and Feudalism, which, the system, began in the 9th century AD, started to disappear in the 15th, but held on in many of the White nations up until the 1860s AD. The feudal system was an undemocratic, totalitarian, social organisation system identical to slavery and euphemistically called “Serfdom” to disguise its true essence, and it worked like this: Before the feudal system was implemented, the people owned the land they were born onto, lived on, and farmed on. But after the**

implementation of the feudal system, through “Power of Force”, the elites now owned the land, which meant the people lost their rights and became tenants. After the construction of the feudal system, the people were called “Vassals”; the land they lived and farmed on was called a “Fief”; the elites who ruled over the vassals were called the “Feudal Lords”, and the feudal lords were subordinate to the king or queen. So the farmers became landless tenants. But it gets worse. After the rise of the feudal system, hear this, the people would be thrown off their farms if they refused to fight for their feudal lords, pay a regular tax to their feudal lords, and fulfil other duties, if the need arose, to their feudal lords! So it was a tyrannical new system and it emerged just a few short centuries after the supposedly collapse of the Roman Western Empire even though Rome had already conquered Western Europe, and the Eurasian-Romans, who later, or after the conquest, called themselves English and Jews, were behind it. Incidentally, “Power of Force” is the undemocratic system where one group; in this case, the ruling class, wins power over the other group; in this case, the lower class, through having, hear this, “an army”, thus becoming the self-appointed kings, queens, and nobles, then constructs a government with courts and laws to force the people into compliance. To challenge their new order, guess what the people must do? They must form their own army because there was no election system to vote the elites and their feudal system down! After the construction of the feudal system, the Industrial Revolution occurred, which proved just as bad for the people as the feudal system had, and I will tell you about that momentous occasion which really did break much of the people, later.

As I have shown with the feudal system, by the 9th century AD the new Eurasian-Roman elites were much more crueler to the people than the tribal leaders of old who fought the Romans with axe and sword. But what happened next? Events moved forward and, due to some of the Romans appearing physically similar to the natives, the Roman settlers, or the Romano-British, continued to live amongst the natives, speaking their language, wearing their style of clothes, assuming their identities, and it's difficult to tell if conflict continued between them, but undoubtedly it



had because it wasn't long before the “Jews” became the big enemy and thorn in the side of the native peoples. Hear this, the Jews were first noticed and written about in England in the 12th century AD! So conflict continued, but now the Eurasians, and just as they do in all the nations they settled in, had divided their race into Jews and British, or the Eurasians who don't look so White; more Asian, became the Jews, and the Eurasians who look more White were pretending to be the White-British! During the race war, to throw off the blind and foolish natives, the good clones merely blamed the Jews for all the problems. Simple as that. But it gets better: If you, a native, blame the Jews, like Hitler did, the Eurasians pretending to be White will call you an “anti-Semite”!

So the Eurasian-Romans conquered Britain and did not leave. But more astonishing events I discovered during my great studies, concerned one of the longest wars on record and relative to the Caledonians or Northern Celts who became the Highlanders. After Roman General Agricola's battle with the Caledonians at Mons Graupius in 84AD, and after Hadrian's Wall and the Antonine Wall were built as forward operating bases to attack and subdue the Caledonians from, and after Emperor Caracalla's peace treaty with the Caledonians, and after the Eurasian-Romans faked the fall of the Roman Western Empire and settled in to become the new elites over the native Celts and Germans and also their own Eurasian-Roman settlers, the “long war” against the Caledonians or Scots and Highlanders continued when the Eurasian King Edward I (also known as the Hammer of the Scots) became the king of England in 1276AD—see note 2: Defensive Wars—and, with that, emerged the anti-Scottish and anti-Highlander propaganda and also wars with the Scots that led to the great Scottish patriot William Wallace invading England in 1297AD after defeating English forces at Stirling Bridge in the same year. Incidentally, King Edward I ruled England until 1307AD. During his reign he purportedly expelled the Jews from England in 1290AD. Was this genuine? Was Edward trying to fool the natives? Well, like the Jews, he was Eurasian, so I'll leave it for you to decide.

After Edward's war on the Scots and Highlanders, the war on the Highlanders continued only this time it was with Eurasian-Cromwell who claimed he was subduing the catholic threat, and it began in the near mid-17th century AD at the time of the English Civil War. After Cromwell's war on the Highlanders, the war continued with Eurasian-William III, who became the protestant king of England in 1689AD after the Glorious Revolution in 1688AD when the catholic Stuart king was deposed, who also claimed he was subduing the catholic threat, but, once again, the Highlanders held on, but the Eurasian elites got them in the end. Hear this for one of the longest wars on record: although the Eurasian-Romans began the war on the ancestors of the Highlanders shortly after Agricola was posted in England in “77AD”, and by 84AD was fighting the Highlanders at the Battle of Mons Graupius in the Highlands, shockingly so, “1800 years” or so after Agricola's invasion of the Highlands, the Long War against the Highlanders was still underway only now the Eurasian-Roman-British-Hanoverian elites of Great Britain—the English and Scottish parliaments were unified during the Act of Union in 1707AD under Queen Ann's rule, which meant Scotland was ruled from London—were now demonizing them, in order to destroy their race and society, through “idealistic phrases” such as “tribal societies are backwards”! So the elites had stopped the “conventional war” they began shortly after 77AD against the Highlanders and their ancestors, which was difficult to justify in the 18th century, and began a sneaky “intellectual war” that they backed up with morality, laws, and courts.

Incidentally, the anti-tribal and anti-nationalist society rhetoric I discovered being deployed by the Eurasian-Roman-British elites against the Highlanders back in the 16th century AD and onwards, was in essence leftist; or multicultural; or early communist, rhetoric, and it was being deployed decades even before Rousseau and Voltaire, who were two Eurasian-French intellectuals and writers who supported multicultural nations and “equality for all” and who I will write on later, appeared on the political scene, which means the Eurasian-Roman-British elites were working to forcibly exchange racial and

**nationalist societies for multicultural ones long before the French Socialists appeared on the scene with, as you will see later, Voltaire stating, or words to this effect, that “is a Chinaman not equal to a Frenchmen”, but done, of course, not because he was idealistic, but, the opposite, to obliterate the natives.**

**That's what happened in Britain after the Eurasian-Roman elites faked the fall of the Roman Western Empire in the 5th century AD, and settled in to become the new patrician class to rule over the natives and also their own settlers. What I will do now, I will take you through a more in-deph understanding of those “mopping up” events in regards to the Highlanders or the post-Roman Age military assaults on the Highlanders by the new elites. I will explain which of the elites were involved in those assaults on the Highlanders, and tell you about the other critical incidents in the Long War to destroy the Highlanders and their tribal society, which ended with the Highland Clearances, which was an event that saw the Highlanders being evicted from their homelands, and, outwith being evicted from their homelands, it was much the same story in all the White nations the new elites came to rule over.**

**(1) Just after the English Civil War and after the Cromwellian Wars that lasted from 1642AD to 1653AD, or from Cromwell's first battle at Edgehill in England in 1642AD to the last Irish capitulation at Galway in 1653AD, Cromwell—one of the Eurasians who, after the civil war, allowed the Eurasian-Jews back into England in 1657AD, began his assault on the Highlanders but claimed he was at war with the “pro-royalist catholic element” that supported King Charles II that he was locked in a war with, and not the Highlanders because of their race; (2) after the Glorious Revolution in 1688AD, which witnessed the protestant and catholic Eurasian kings; William III and James II, possibly faking a revolution to, I suppose, reduce more of their racial and class enemies or to weed out the best of them, over a wooden military fort built in 1654AD by Cromwell, King William III built a new military fort as a secure base to control and hunt the highland clans through, and called it Fort William. As with Cromwell, William III also claimed**

he was at war with the “catholic element” in the Highlands, and it wasn't about cleansing the Highlanders because of their race; (3) the catholic Jacobite uprisings in 1689AD, 1715AD, 1719AD, and 1745AD, were fake uprisings or revolutions done to set up the Highlanders so the British Government could justify new laws to move against them and oppress them, which they did with (1) the Clan Act that was issued in 1715AD after the uprising by the Old Pretender from the House of Stuart. After the failed 1715AD revolution, many of the catholic Highlanders began emigrating to the U.S. (the Americas); (2) the Disarming Act that was issued in 1716AD by the British Government due also to the Old Pretender's 1715AD uprising. The Disarming Act outlawed the Highlanders from having in “his or their custody, use, or bear, broad sword or durk, side pistol gun, or other warlike weapon.” Incidentally, the London elites were banning weapons in Scotland 279 years before James Carter and Ronald Reagan—two ex-American Presidents, were supporting the call to ban certain types of weapons in the U.S. in 1994AD; (3) the Act of Proscription that was issued in 1745AD after the last Jacobite uprising led by the Young Pretender; (4) the Dress Act that was issued in 1746AD after the Young Pretender's 1745AD uprising and the decisive battle at Culloden in 1746AD that witnessed the Scottish Highlanders being outlawed from wearing their clan colours or tartans; (5) in 1792AD a clan of highland farmers led a protest, called the Rights to Land, against the landlord elites, by driving away thousands of their sheep and reclaiming the lands stolen from them through the feudal system and the later used Insecure Tenancy Argument that was deployed by the System to further deny them legal ownership of the land, which meant the government betrayed the Highlanders by siding with the landlords. In response to the Rights to Land protest, the System sent in the Black Watch—a regiment in the British Army, who broke the protest and arrested the leaders.

Incidentally, the Insecure Tenancy Argument is clearly a devious fraud issued by King George III's British Government against the people, because, firstly, back in the late 18th century AD the people had “no vote” on who their government were; secondly, the right to own land must

forever be enshrined within a human being's rights because of their very existence on Earth; all men must be equal and all men must own the land they are born onto. But due to the construction of “class”, that natural order broke down, which meant, due to higher class; the elites or nobles, making the lower class; the people, tenants in place of equal landowners, then living as slaves on a noble's land, with no rights whatsoever, was the inevitable outcome. So, unfortunately for those without Power of Force, when the feudal system was implemented in the 9th century AD in Europe, the people “lost” their right to own the land they once naturally thought theirs, which meant the people became unequal, so were subjugated and forced to obey the new world order or pay a heavy price; eviction, which meant they would have to seek sustenance elsewhere and, being outcasts, without their feudal lord's protection.

(6) for more evidence that the Clearances were engineered by the Eurasian-British elites, and Bonnie Prince Charlie (the Young Pretender) had very likely set up the people living in Northern Scotland, or evidence that some of the elites were mocking their race and class enemies through the creative use of anagrams, know this: Before the battle at Culloden Moor in 1746AD—Culloden Moor was the decisive battle that had unfolded “before” the evictions or clearances on the Scottish “mainland” began—the battle area was known as Drumossie Moor. But after the battle of Drumossie Moor in 1746AD, that pitted the Red Coats: protestant British Army soldiers fighting for King George II and the government of Great Britain against the Jacobites: catholic Highland Scots led by Prince Charlie whose mission was probably to betray them by rising against the government so the government could have the excuse to move against them with new oppressive laws, which they did, someone “changed the name” of the battlefield to “Culloden”, which, once interpreted, reads “den of the cull”; (7) the Highland Clearances from the 1730s to the 1850s AD.

The Highland Clearances was a sweeping event that witnessed millions of families being forcibly evicted and encouraged to leave their homelands in Northern Scotland,

by the landlords, while the British and U.S. governments sat back and watched even though the U.S. was meant to be the heroic “republican state” that had thrown the imperialist British Empire off its back during the War of Independence that began in 1775 and ended in 1783AD. The Clearances began when the chief of Clan MacLeod evicted his tenants from “his lands” on the Isle of Skye in 1732AD, and with Admiral John Ross of Balnagowan Castle displacing his tenants for sheep in 1762AD, and the Clearances came to an end around the 1850s AD; the possible race war and certainly class war was won; the clans were all but gone—see note 3: Who Were The Displaced Highlanders—and nothing much remained of their ancient clan society and people, whose warriors had held the sword for almost 30 centuries; from approximately 600BC to 1850AD, but the hundreds of empty glens and the cheap excuse for the Clearances; which was, “the more profitable sheep”, which doesn't work at all due to there being plenty land for both the people and sheep to live on, which means they wanted the Highlanders gone due to “race”, “class”, “catholic religion”, and “profiteering”. On that subject of western and northern European natives and races being displaced or integrated, I discovered something one of the Left's more popular Socialists or Communists; Friedrich Engels, had written on the Clearances, and his sentiments fit precisely with what I had long thought; that perhaps it was a covert race war against the Celts, Norse, and Germans of Britain and Ireland, and obviously Engels, who was one of the Eurasian Marxist leader elite who had co-wrote critical works with Marx, would have know that, if anyone did. Perhaps alluding to the over 2,000-year old secret race war hidden behind his “historical revolution” phrase, Engels wrote:

“There is no country in Europe that does not possess, in some remote corner, at least one remnant-people, left over from an earlier population, forced back and subjugated by the nation which later became the repository of historical development. These remnants of a nation, mercilessly crushed by the course of history is always the fanatical representative of



**the counter-revolution and remains so until it is completely exterminated or de-nationalised, as its whole existence is in itself a protest against a great historical revolution.”**

**Unsettling language and “exterminated” an unsettling choice of words. But because Engels did offer having that “remnant-people” “de-nationalised” as an option to consider, then, I suppose, he wasn't so bad. Engels made no explicit reference to the Highlanders in the above statements, but it was probably the Highlanders he was thinking about when he wrote those enlightening words, and both he and Marx were operating in and around the same time as the Clearances were drawing to a close. Engels, of course, or I suspect, was alluding to the Eurasian takeover or agenda; which was, the destruction of racial and nationalist societies, and was given his opinion on how best to preclude a counter revolution from the very peoples it most effected. But Marx, on the other hand, was much more explicit on the events that had unfolded in the Scottish Highlands after the Glorious Revolution in 1688AD, and after the Disarming Act was issued in 1716AD, he blamed the “capitalist landlords” for the Clearances. Referring to the Highland Clearances, in Das Kapital Marx wrote:**

**“The spoliation of the church's property, the fraudulent alienation of the State domains, the robbery of the common lands, the usurpation of feudal and clan property, and its transformation into modern private property under circumstances of reckless terrorism.”**

**Although it may appear that I have taken a negative perspective on Engels, I would say that it's difficult to tell if he were a true humanitist or not, or was he, just as his Eurasian comrades; Rousseau, Voltaire, and Payne, were surely doing before him, out to destroy his White enemies? However, even if he was, the important work he did on behalf of the poor may have been of great value to the people who lived during the 19th century, but certainly to posterity; it taught them just how corrupt and cruel the elites were to the peasants during the Industrial Revolution**

age. Further, however we may appreciate and admire non-racial societies, the fact is, for good or for bad, Nature did create racial and nationalist societies where the tribe or family look out for each other, not communist multicultural or non-racial societies where the nation means nothing to them merely something to cheaply feed off of, and worse, who can you trust, who is deceiving you, and who is discriminating against you? In Mein Kampf, here is some of what Hitler had to say about Marxism or Communism:

**“The Jewish doctrine of Marxism denies the noble goal of Nature and sets mass and dead weight of numbers in place of the eternal privilege of strength and power. It denies the value of personality in man, disputes the significance of nation and race, and deprives mankind of the essentials of its survival and civilization. As a foundation of the universe, Marxism would be the end of any order conceivable to man. The result of applying such a law could only be chaos. Destruction would be the only result for the inhabitants of this planet. If, through his Marxist faith, the Jew conquers the peoples of this world, his crown will be the death and destruction of all mankind. Earth would again move uninhabited through space as it did millions of years ago. Eternal Nature takes revenge for violation of her commandments. I believe I am acting today in the spirit of the Almighty Creator. By standing guard against the Jew, I am defending the work of the Lord.”**

As expected from the early Eurasian-Roman Communists who had taken over Britain and the West by long forgotten battles and slight of hand, the propaganda against the Highlanders was “anti-tribal and anti-nationalist” in essence, and, while the demonization of the Highlanders persisted for a colossal 250 years; from the 13th century to the end of the Clearances in the mid-19th century AD, hear this for evidence of a inter-generational network and agenda being promoted by powerful people

from the Eurasian network, it was the exact same propaganda and agenda that Franz Boas, Felix Weil, Sigmund Freud, and their Marxist comrade George Lucaks—four Eurasian communist agents who I will write on later, were deploying in the U.S. and Germany from the 1900s AD onwards through the Boasian School of Anthropology, the Institute for Social Research, and the Frankfurt School, and had returned a very similar outcome; while the Highlanders were eventually driven out from their ancient homeland, the Eurasian and White natives in the U.S. and Germany were eventually overrun by foreigners and non-Whites, and if they protested were cast down as racists by the ruling class-controlled media in disguise as idealistic and kindly multiculturalists and Jews! It was due to those social engineering schools in the U.S. and Germany, that led to the rise of the National Socialists with their social-political theory; National Socialism, which means, “the people and the nation”, and the rise of the Nazi Party in the early 20th century AD, and with Hitler, after becoming Chancellor of Germany in 1933AD, and the Head of State in 1934AD, as a pro-nationalist, pro-working class, and anti-communist leader, obliging Weil and his Marxist comrades from the Institute for Social Research, to escape Germany for America via Geneva. If all is to be believed, Hitler was the great White hope, or the last stand against permanently subjugated White peoples drowned out in a communist, fascist, NWO of forced multicultural societies with police states to watch over them and keep them in check, and the following evidence should help you understand why he hated the communist leaders and viewed them as a serious threat to not only his freedom, but to his actual White race itself: (1) the Red October or Bolshevik Revolution in 1917AD, just prior to the end of WWI—World War One lasted from 1914 to 1918AD. Hitler viewed the Bolshevik Revolution as a communist-Jewish plot aimed at destroying the White-Russian race. In *Mein Kampf* and referring to Russia and the Red October, Hitler shockingly wrote:

“the Jew has killed or starved close to thirty million people, sometimes using inhuman tortures to enforce his savage fanaticism and assure domination over a great people.”

**(2) the November Revolution in 1918AD in Germany at the end of WWI. Hitler viewed the leaders of the November Revolution as mostly Marxist-Jews who, along with the nationalist government, were conspiring against the German people; he believed the Marxist-Communists were hiding behind socialist ideals and pro-working class rhetoric in an attempt to win political power for themselves before turning on the people as they had previously done in Soviet-Russia, and he believed their actions during WWI were subversive; that they undermined the German effort to secure victory;**  
**(3) the communist oppression of the peoples, called the Red Terror, and Collectivism, carried out in Soviet-Russia during and after the Bolshevik takeover in 1917AD.**

**Point 3 is in reference to Hitler's comment highlighted above, of course. Regarding Hitler's comment, let me say, that the death-count in Russia was probably higher than the death-count of WWI, and, get this for evidence of a subversive “international network” reaching all the way from Europe, across the Atlantic Ocean, into the United States, the Red October was actually planned and financed by powerful communist groups and elitist people operating in the U.S.; they being, the New York Intellectuals that Leon Trotsky was a member of, and Jacob Schiff was the American citizen who financed Vladimir Lenin—one of the leading Bolshevik revolutionaries, and all of them, excluding none, were Eurasians and Eurasian-Jews. Furthermore, if you think U.S. citizens and groups financing communist revolutionaries who went on to kill millions of people and the Russian Royal Family is suspicious, then what about the incriminating fact that the U.S. Government did not intervene to stop Schiff and the New York Intellectuals as they plotted the destruction of the Russian peoples and many others, but merely left them to get on with it! Further, come WWII, the U.S. Government entered into an alliance with those very same Soviet-Russian Communists against nationalist Hitler and his Third Reich empire.**

**To conclude on Events in Britain after the fall of the Roman Western Empire; mopping up, feudalism, and multicultural Britain: The war against the Celts in Northern Britain, or the Caledonians who became the Scots and**

**Highlanders, began with Rome, of course, but continued during the reigns of the following elites of Britain and Great Britain who were all Eurasians: Cromwell (Lord Protectorate from 1642-1658AD); King William III (king from 1689-1702AD); King George I (king from 1714-1727AD); King George II (king from 1727-1760AD); King George III (king from 1760-1820AD); King George IV (king from 1820-1830AD); King William IV (king from 1830-1837AD), and Queen Victoria I (queen from 1837-1901AD). See Images for portraits.**

**Excluding these probably mostly false reasons: a “religious and royalty” conflict between the catholic House of Stuart and the protestant House of Hanover and the British Empire, and the more profitable “sheep”, here is my own reason for the Banishment of the Gael and the Highland Clearances: racial animosity, from a Eurasian-controlled British capitalist society ruled over by a parliament, directed at a tribal-based: clan leaders held the power, organised White-Celtic society. Bear in mind, however, that the Eurasian-Roman settlers surely must have occupied the Highlands at the time of the Clearances, so you can add the Eurasians to that lot, and also “class”. Further, Bonnie Prince Charlie, out of a community of a few million Highlanders, put only “8.000” catholic-Highlanders in the field against King George II and his protestant-Redcoats. Therefore that “8,000” could never be viewed as evidence that the Highlanders were pro-war. But, still, the British government permitted their displacement.**

## **DEFENSIVE WARS**

**Note 2. Down throughout history the people living in Scotland and Northern Scotland were engaged in a series of “defensive” wars against the Romans, apparently the Saxons and Norse, King Edward I of England, Cromwell, William III, and the British-Hanoverians who all had designs to control and tax them, displace and integrate them. As for England’s King Edward I’s war on the Scots and Highlanders, to achieve his objectives, and precisely as the Romans had done some 1,000 years before him, he deployed the following Roman system: (1) Invade enemy territory with a substantial force; King Edward I could put up to 40,000 soldiers in the field against the Scots, but could deploy many more if they weren’t tied up in his French and Irish campaigns; (2) occupy enemy forts and castles or construct your own; (3) protect those strongholds with soldiers or garrisons, and use those defensive positions and garrisons to govern, control, and tax the conquered peoples. It wasn’t a foolproof system; there were major uprisings against the invaders, from time to time, with many thousands dead on all sides, but that’s how it was before, throughout, and for a time after the Medieval Age in Scotland.**



## **WHO WERE THE DISPLACED HIGHLANDERS?**

**Note 3. (1) The Celts first crossed into Britain from the continent around 600BC, which was around 200 years after the Celtic Hallstatt community was founded, but the Magdalenians, who the Celts descended from—see Celtic Sources & Events In Europe Before Rome’s Founding—were the first people into Britain that we know of, and this was around 11,000BC or around the time the last Ice Age was ending; (2) according to the Roman writer Tacitus, the people living in Northern Britain, which is part of today's Scotland, who the Romans called the “Caledonians”, looked like Germans. Tacitus wrote:**

**“Some evidence, however, may be drawn from the differences of physique that prevail. The red hair and the large limbs of the Caledonian peoples testify to a German origin. The swarthy complexion of the Silures and the frequency of curling hair among them, with the fact that Spain lies opposite their district, lead us to believe that the ancient Iberians crossed the sea and settled in those parts. The tribes that dwell nearest to the Gauls are likewise similar to them: it may be because they were originally descended from them, and still show it; or because, though the countries extend in opposite directions, the climate has produced similarity of physique.”**

**(3) according to the Angle-Saxon writers of old, the Angle-Saxons invaded Britain in the 5th century AD after the apparent fall of the Roman Western Empire, and were later fighting the Celtic-Pictish tribes at Dunnichen in Northern Scotland in 685AD, which means, if that is to be believed, the Germans were not only in Britain from before 500AD, which they were, but, merely 200 years or so after Hengist and Horsa—two Germanic commanders, moved into England, were colonising Northern Scotland as early as 700AD; (4) there's more evidence that suggests the Germans**

had won control or were winning control over areas within Scotland before the Clearances occurred in the Scottish Highlands, and the English language being used by the Scottish elites around 1230AD is just one supporting piece of that; (5) the once Pictish—the Picts, due to similarities in culture, ought to have descended from the Celts—culture in Northern Scotland had, by around the 10th century AD and due to its conquest by the Gaels from Ireland, changed into a Gaelic one, which means the Celtic-Gaels, who spoke a Celtic language, had conquered Northern Scotland; (5) prior to that, however, the Norse, also known as the Vikings and Norsemen, had invaded and began colonising large areas within Northern Scotland, amongst other areas also, around 800AD.

That's the accepted narrative on who the Scots were; which was, the Celts, Germans, and Norse. But, get this for a shocking revelation, if the earliest Scots kings were Eurasians instead of Western or Northern Europeans, which they were—see image of King Donald of Scotland for one example, and please see Eurasian-Roman Infiltration to view more of the Eurasian kings of Scotland for evidence—then it's very likely that much of the population of Scotland was Eurasian throughout those times.

To conclude on Who Were The Displaced Highlanders: Because there were no more non-Celtic and non-Germanic invasions of Britain after the Roman invasion in 43AD—recall that Hengist and Horsa, the Gaels that had invaded Scotland in the 6th century AD, the people behind the Norse invasion that put King Canute on the English throne in the 10th century AD, and the people behind the Anglo-Norman conquest in 1066AD that put William the Conqueror on the English throne are meant to be Celtic, Norse, and Germanic-type peoples; but, of course, as I alluded to in Eurasian-Roman Infiltration, due to the conquest of the West by Rome, they were likely to have been the Eurasians in disguise as Westerners—then the people displaced from the Scottish Highlands in the Highland Clearances from 1732 to the 1850s AD, were very likely to have been not just the Celts, Norse, and Germans but also the Eurasian peoples. Outwith the Scots kings and queens

that you can view in Eurasian-Roman Infiltration, for more evidence that the Eurasians were in Northern Scotland during the Clearances, know that Flora MacDonald, who assisted Prince Charlie's escape from the Red Coats after his decisive military defeat at Culloden in 1746AD, was a Eurasian woman, and Charlie a Eurasian man. See images below.



*Prince Charlie*



*Flora MacDonald*

## **EURASIAN INCIDENTS FROM THE ROMAN PERIOD TO THE 21ST CENTURY**

**9. I know that the Eurasian-hybrids were in Israel, Greece, Rome, Britain, France, and all the White nations from the earliest times right up, and sometimes their Asiatic and Oriental features are so subtle that one could easily overlook them. I know that the Eurasian-hybrids assume the identity of the true White peoples they came to rule over and live amongst during the period of Roman occupation. I know that the Eurasian-hybrids that appear very White call themselves Russians, French, and English, etc., and the Eurasian-hybrids that don't appear ever so White call themselves the Jews. So what I will do now, I will show you how, down throughout time, some of the Eurasian elites who appear more White, and some of the Eurasian elites who appear less White, conspire against the non-Eurasians.**

**What you are about to read shows shocking examples of incidents, played out over a time period of over 2,000 years, that are not only symptomatic of a race war between the Eurasians, which includes the Eurasian Jews who are a strategic part of the Eurasian network, and the true White peoples and others, but actually, if Hitler was genuine, culminated in the rise of the Third Reich in the 1930s AD with Hitler, as some of the Romans had done 2,000 years before him, also accusing the Jews of being involved in a covert race war against the White races. Before I begin, first I will tell you what the Eurasian activists, who appear more White, or “the leaders of the goyim”, say about the Eurasian Jews who appear less White:**

**They don't ram the message home until blue in the face, but some of the Eurasian activists and researchers claim that the Jews are a mix of Oriental and Slavic peoples from Eastern Europe, or Eastern Europeans, who first arrived in Rome, Central, Western, and Northern Europe around 2,000 years ago as emigrants and traders, and were “permitted” to occupy areas within those non-Jewish and non-Slavic lands by the White elites who controlled the**

**White nations, for a price. After their arrival, working together as a race within a race, and building a state within a state, they eventually acquired major power and influence through unethical and anti-social practises such as usury: which is the lending of money at a “unfair high interest rate” that leads to mass poverty due to “debt”, and, although I personally believe that the “White” elites were permitting the Jews to do that essentially because they were not White; that is, they were the Eurasians who just look more White, and were, together with the Eurasian Jews, conspiring against the true White peoples, the Eurasian activists maintain that the “White” elites were merely permitting their operations to continue not because they were the same race but “because they were receiving a large share of the usury profits”, or words to that effect. So the Eurasians who look more White and control the “fightback” against the anti-White agenda, want the White people to believe that their own leaders sold them out merely for lots and lots of money and not because they were the same race, which, I say, they were. One piece of evidence, that proves the Eurasian elites, pretending to be White, favoured the Eurasian Jews, is what Hitler wrote in Mein Kampf:**

**“It is because of the German princes that the German nation could not free itself from the Jewish troublemaker.”**

**What the Jews were accused of doing caused many problems in the White nations they settled in; for instance, the native people would occasionally rise against them and sometimes even kill them or pogrom them, as the killing of Jews came to be known, leading to the Eurasian elites, who were pretending to be White, occasionally issuing new laws to stop their unethical practices and such things, or pretending to, and even supposedly expelling them from the White nations from time to time. It was due to those unethical practises over the past 2,000 years, amongst other reasons also, or, at least, what the Jews were accused of doing by some of the natives, that led to, hear this, hundreds of laws, hundreds of expulsions, and hundreds of pogroms being directed against them! Some of those incidents—and be aware that the following data I exhibit is only a small number of the Jewish incidents that had occurred over the**

**past 2,000 years or more, and, this is critical, the following “Romans” and others who were against the Jews may have been lying is why the Jews survived time and time again—were:**

**(1) Jews were first expelled from Rome by Gnaeus Hispanus in 139BC; (2) Cicero—a Roman writer, writing in 59BC, complained that “the Jews hold too much power in the public assemblies”; (3) in 19AD Emperor Tiberious expelled many thousands of Jews from Rome; (4) in 50AD Emperor Claudius (who began the conquest of Britain in 43AD), outlawed the Jews from holding meetings in Rome, and later expelled them from Rome; (5) between 66AD and 73AD the Great Jewish Revolt was blown out by Vespasian and Titus—two Roman soldiers; (6) between 608AD and 610AD there were massacres of Jews in the Roman Byzantine Empire; (7) in 1124AD the Jewish sector; Kiev in Russia, was destroyed; (8) in 1147AD Jews were expelled by the Arabic Moors, from Muslim-held European-Spain; (9) in 1181AD the Assize of Arms act confiscated all weapons held by the Jews in England, which meant the Jews couldn't defend themselves during anti-Jewish riots; (10) in Germany in the 13th century AD, saw the manifestation of Judensau—extreme anti-Jewish propaganda; (11) in 1376AD Jews were expelled from Hungary, and some of them migrated into nearby Greece; (12) in 1458AD all Jews were expelled from Germany; (13) in 1492AD King Ferdinand II ordered the expulsion of hundreds of thousands of Jews from Spain; (14) in Germany in 1543AD, Martin Luther—divider of the Christians, published an article called The Jews and Their Lies; (15) in 1727AD Catherine I of Russia expels the Jews; (16) in 1791AD Catherine II of Russia restricts the Jews to the Pale of Settlement; (17) in 1835AD Tsar Nicholas I of Russia issues anti-Jewish edicts; (18) in 1844AD Karl Marx publishes The Wordly Cult Of The Jew; (19) in Germany in 1878AD, Adolf Stoecker founded the anti-Jewish Christian Social Party; (20) from 1881AD to 1884AD in Russia, pogroms oblige the Jews to leave the Pale of Settlement, and some emigrate to the United States; (21) in Russia in 1882AD, Tsar Alexander III issues the anti-Jewish May Laws; (22) in Germany in 1899AD, Houston Stewart Chamberlain**



**publishes Die Grundlagen Jahrhunderts; (23) in 1903AD The Protocols Of The Elders Of Zion was published in Russia, which I view as a counter-intelligence book whose objective was to protect the Good Clone Eurasians by blaming the Bad Clone Eurasian Jews for the anti-White agenda and class war; (24) in 1910AD a pogrom against the Jews, occurred in Iran, Persia; (25) in the U.S. in 1920AD, Henry T. Ford (American industrialist), prints half a million copies of the Protocols; (26) inserted below is an edited version of an article Winston Churchill published in the Illustrated Sunday Herald on February 8, 1920AD, on the “bad Jews” claiming they were mostly the driving-force behind the Russian Bolshevik Revolution that occurred in 1917AD. On those bad Jews, Churchill wrote:**

**“In violent opposition to all this sphere of Jewish effort rise the schemes of the International Jews. The adherents of this sinister confederacy are mostly men reared up among the unhappy populations of countries where Jews are persecuted on account of their race. Most, if not all, of them have forsaken the faith of their forefathers, and divorced from their minds all spiritual hopes of the next world. This movement among the Jews is not new. From the days of Spartacus-Weishaupt to those of Karl Marx, and down to Trotsky (Russia), Bela Kun (Hungary), Rosa Luxembourg (Germany), and Emma Goldman (United States), this world-wide conspiracy for the overthrow of civilisation and for the reconstitution of society on the basis of arrested development, of envious malevolence, and impossible equality, has been steadily growing. It played a definitely recognisable part in the tragedy of the French Revolution. It has been the mainspring of every subversive movement during the Nineteenth Century; and now at last this band of extraordinary personalities from the underworld of the great cities of Europe and America have gripped the Russian people by the hair of their heads and have become practically the undisputed masters of that enormous empire. Terrorist Jews. There is no need to exaggerate the part played in the creation of Bolshevism and in the actual bringing about of the Russian Revolution by these international and for the most part atheistical Jews. It is certainly a very great one; it probably outweighs all**

others. With the notable exception of Lenin, the majority of the leading figures are Jews.”

(27) in the U.S. in 1921AD, the Ku Klux Klan began campaigning against the Jews; (28) in 1920AD Hitler founded the Nazi Party; (29) in Germany in 1923AD, The Attacker (Ger. Der Sturmer) a Nazi newspaper, was published by Julius Streicher; (30) in Germany in 1925AD, Hitler published Mein Kampf—a controversial book that exposes a Jewish conspiracy to enslave and destroy the White race along with all the other races; (31) in 1935AD in Nazi Germany, the Nuremberg Laws—laws to protect Germans from Jewish infiltrators, were issued; (32) in 1938AD at the Evian Conference, over 30 nations deny the Jews, who were escaping from Nazi Germany, entry into their nations, so the Jews moved into Poland; (33) in the U.S. in 1938AD, Father Charles Coughlin begins his anti-Jewish radio transmissions; (34) in 1938AD Kristallnacht—a pogrom against Jews in Germany, occurred; (35) from 1939AD to 1945AD the Jewish Holocaust occurred but is somewhat disputed; (36) in the U.S. in 1941AD, in a speech called Who Are The War Agitators?, Charles Lindbergh (first American to fly across the Atlantic Ocean), warns that the Jews have gained “large ownership and influence in our motion pictures, our press, our radio, and our government, and that the Jews, the British, and the Roosevelt administration are agitating for war against Germany.”; (37) In the U.S., George Lincoln Rockwell publishes White Power, which warns about a Oriental-Jewish plot to destroy the White race.

Supposedly there were serious problems between the White peoples and the Jews in Europe and the U.S., over a colossal time scale of approximately 2,000 years, that led to supposedly hundreds of moves against them by many of the Roman emperors and later European kings and queens who, I say, were mostly Eurasians, that eventually, and due to the Jews being permitted to return again and again, and just going straight back to business as if nothing had ever happened, led to the birth of the Third Reich in 1934AD, and Hilter also complaining that the Jews are at war with the White race and also conspiring against the Germans.

**But as many of those leaders who appeared to be against the Jews, there were just as many who appeared to be supporting them, which is more evidence to support my conclusion that some of the Whites who were helping the Jews were in fact the Eurasians pretending to be the true Whites, and the Jews themselves were Eurasians. Some of the “Whites” helping the Jews, were:**

**(1) in 212AD Emperor Caracalla permitted the Jews, who were living in the Roman Empire, citizenship; (2) in Italy in 224AD, the Jews were obliged to convert to Christianity or face expulsion; (3) in 361AD Emperor Julian permits the Jews to return to Jerusalem to rebuild their temple that had been previously destroyed; (4) in 590AD Pope Gregory I supports the Jews who refuse to convert to Christianity; (5) in 1189AD Frederick I—Holy Roman Emperor, orders christian priests not to preach against the Jews; (6) in Jerusalem in 1190AD, Saladdin permits the Jews to return after the Crusaders had expelled them; (7) in 1198AD Philip Augustus of France permits the Jews to return to Paris; (8) in France in 1315AD, King Louis X permits the Jews to return after King Philip IV had expelled them in 1305AD; (9) in 1360AD and due to a pogrom against the Jews, Peter of Castile publicly kills the suspects; (10) in Venice in 1520AD, Pope Leo X permits the Jews to print the Talmud; (11) in Hamburg, Germany, in 1612AD, Jews were permitted to return; (12) in 1622AD King Christian IV permits Jews into Denmark; (13) in Poland in 1632AD, King Ladislaus IV bans anti-Semitic books; (14) post-English Civil War—see note 4: The English Civil War & Republicanism As A Weapon To Kill—Oliver Cromwell permits the Jews to return to England in 1657AD, 367 years after Edward I had supposedly evicted them; (15) in France in 1797AD, Napoleon calls for an end to Jewish segregation and full “equality” for them; (16) in the U.S. in 1915AD, the Anti-Defamation League—a Jewish defence organisation, was founded.**

**Some of the information in the paragraph above, reader, may be included in the paragraph below.**

**Just as the European Jews, who I'm convinced were the Eurasians and blood-related to the Eurasian princes and kings, etc., who controlled the White nations and were assisting them, were noticed and written about in ancient Rome thousands of years ago, in around 1200AD onwards they were also “first noticed” and written about in England. Here are some of the more interesting incidents relating to the Eurasian Jews operating in England, and it was much the same story right across Europe and all the nations the Jews found themselves in.**

**The following paragraphs will run through the many Jewish incidents in England. However, bear in mind, some of the following events may not have actually happened; that is, it's very likely that the elites were merely “pretending” to deal with the Jews.**

**(1) in 1181AD the Assize of Arms act led to the confiscation of all weapons held by the Jews in England; (2) in 1189AD under King Richard I's (the Lionheart) reign, there was a pogrom against the Jews in London and other Jewish quarters in England; (3) in England in 1253AD, King Henry III issued anti-Jewish laws; (4) in England in 1264AD, Simon de Montfort encouraged the massacre of Jews in London; (5) in England in 1275AD, King Edward I issued laws obliging the Jews to wear yellow badges and banning them from usury; (6) in England in 1290AD, King Edward I issued the Edict of Expulsion act against the Jews, for persisting with usury after being outlawed from doing so; (7) Cromwell permitted the Jews re-entry into England in 1657AD, 8 years after the execution of Charles I and 367 years after King Edward I first evicted them.**

**Before closing this piece, in the following 9 images I will show some of the Eurasians, the Eurasian Jews, and some of the true White peoples or, at least, two people who don't have any obvious Oriental or Asiatic features, for you to compare: top-left is Woodrow Wilson—a Pakistani-Pole Eurasian and ex-U.S. President; top-centre is Captain Scott—a true White German who successfully led the second team to the South Pole; top-Right is Charles Linburgh—probably a true White Pole and the first to fly across the**

Atlantic Ocean; centre-left is Leopold II—a Pakistani-Pole Eurasian royalist involved in the Napoleonic Wars; centre-centre is Robert E. Lee—a Pakistani-Pole Eurasian and southern commander during the American Civil War; centre-right is Thomas Payne—a Pakistani-Pole Eurasian republican who supported both the American War of Independence and the French Revolution; lower-left is George Lukacs—a Pakistani-Pole Eurasian Jew associated to the multicultural-supporting Marxist Institute for Social Research and the Marxist Frankfurt School; lower-centre is Franz Boas—a Pakistani-Pole Eurasian who founded the Marxist Boasian School of Anthropology; lower-right is Henry VII of England—a Chinese-Pole Eurasian. Judging by his offspring, Henry VII is actually one of the triple mixers, or Oriental-White-Pakistani, but the Asian part is not noticable in the image.



## **THE ENGLISH CIVIL WAR AND REPUBLICANISM AS A WEAPON TO KILL**

**Note 4. The Eurasian-Romans had conquered Europe through the Western Empire and the Byzantine Empire, and had later set up the Barbarian Nations and the feudal system in the 9th century AD. By the 16th century AD the cull was on and, using Republicanism, it began in England.**

**England had been a catholic nation right up until the Reformation under Henry VIII—one of the Tudor kings, and this was when England became a somewhat protestant nation and the English Christians were recklessly divided, which meant, if it were the intention, it became much easier for the elites to set the people against each other, using religion, in order to keep their numbers down. England, at that time, was also under the social organisation system called fascist Absolutism, which means, the monarch has “absolute” control over the parliament, or the monarch, as they please, has the right to open or dissolve the Parliament. Religion and Republicanism, therefore, are the two key factors that led to the English Civil War, that lasted from 1642 to 1653AD, whether the elites where conspiring against the people or not.**

**The road to England becoming a republic began after Queen Elizabeth I of England—Elizabeth I was King Henry VIII's daughter; Henry VIII was Henry Tudor VII's son—who was a protestant, died without children and a protestant heir to the English throne, and, due to the English nobility preferring a protestant successor to Queen Elizabeth, King James Stewart VI of Scotland, who was also a protestant and the son of Mary—queen of Scots, and a great-great-grandson of Henry VII, was invited to claim the English crown. Becoming the king of England in 1603AD as King James I, it was a critical event known as the Union of the Crowns, which meant, although both nations maintained their own separate parliaments, judiciaries, and laws, King James I had personal control over both of them as an absolute monarch. King James I's rule was eventful;**



he styled himself as the King of Great Britain and Ireland; there was less conflict between England and Scotland during his reign; the plantation in Ulster and British colonisation of the Americas began; he had the Bible translated into English, called the King James Bible, and he died peacefully in 1625AD, which was when his son Charles Stuart I—a Roman catholic, became king and, because of his absolutist outlook, religious reforms, and anti-Reformist actions, civil war became imminent. Incidentally, “Stewart” is protestant; “Stuart” is catholic.

The civil war really began to heat up when, during the Thirty Years' War—the Thirty Years' War, from 1618 to 1648AD, was a war fought, mostly in Central Europe, between the Catholics and Protestants and between the French and Habsburgs—and due to the catholic English Duke of Buckingham failing to assist the protestant French Huguenots who were under siege from catholic, French, royalist, soldiers in La Rochelle in 1627AD, the Parliament, viewing Buckingham as a traitor to the new protestant religion and the Reformation under the Tudor monarch, moved to impeach him which led to King Charles I closing the Parliament to protect Buckingham from investigation. Buckingham was saved due to the king closing Parliament, but conflict, between the catholic absolutist King Charles, the Catholics, and the protestant Parliamentarians, was now underway.

The king closed Parliament to save Buckingham—one of his leading catholic soldiers who had been fighting in France against the Protestants, which turned the English Protestants against him if they ever did support him. But later, although the king closed Parliament to save Buckingham, because the king required revenue, which he collected through taxes, he reopened Parliament, which he did in 1628AD, and this was when Oliver Cromwell, who believed that the Reformation had not gone far enough; that catholic beliefs and practices should have been completely removed from the churches, became an elected member.

After Charles I reopened Parliament, to collect his revenue the Parliamentarians would make a deal with him

by blackmailing him. What they would do, they would force the absolutist king to accept the 1628AD Petition of Right constitution, that reminded the king of the restrictions placed on the monarch as stated in the Magna Carter constitution that was enacted in 1215AD by King John, or he gets no revenue, that they were obliged to collect for him through taxes, simple as that. It was a bold move by the Parliamentarians, and, although reluctant, the absolutist king accepted the terms of the Petition of Right.

Although the king had sworn to honour the new constitution, events changed for the worse when the king discovered that some of the Parliamentarians were refusing to sanction his revenue-making scheme that seen the king collect taxes on tonnage and poundage that he had been collecting since 1625AD without Parliament's consent, so, due to that, the king moved against them and had several of the elected members arrested and imprisoned where one of them, John Eliot, died and became a martyr for parliament. After the death of Eliot, the king again closed Parliament and it remained closed for 11 years, which is a period called the "Eleven Years' Tyranny".

Throughout the eleven years period, or Personal Rule, of the catholic Stuart king, he made peace with catholic France and Spain, which brought an end to Britain's participation in the Thirty Years War, but he also undermined the Reformation by introducing catholic practices into the protestant churches. What he did, he increased ceremonies and replaced the wooden communion tables with stone altars, and backed it up by appointing the catholic William Laud as Archbishop of Cantebury, which caught the attention of the Puritans, who were a group of English Protestants who viewed the Reformation of the Church, under Elizabeth I (Henry VIII's protestant daughter) as incomplete; for instance, Elizabeth was more tolerant towards pomp and splendour in the churches, and the Puritans believed that nothing in the church was better than something.

During the 11 years period and during the religious disputes, the Puritans took offence to Laud forcing catholic practices into their churches, and also wrote pamphlets attacking Laud's views, which was an act that cost them dearly because in 1637AD the king not only had some of

them arrested for attacking Laud, but severely punished them by ordering their ears cut off. The Puritans who had their ears cut off were John Bastwick, Henry Burton, and William Prynne, and it was an event that greatly upset the Protestants. As bad as it all became, the king went further in his attempt to bring the Puritans and Protestants to obedience, by permitting the Church to introduce laws that fined the Puritans for failing to attend catholic Anglican Church service, which frustrated the Puritans and Protestants even further. And while the king was stirring up the Protestants in England, in Scotland events would also heat up when, after forcing on the Scots a High Anglican-Catholicism version of the English Book of Common Prayer in 1637AD, which was part of the catholic king's plan to unify the Church in the Three Kingdoms, or England, Scotland, and Ireland, a riot broke out in Edinburgh—Scotland's capital city. Legend tells that it began in St. Giles's Cathedral by protestant reactionary forces led by Jenny Geddes, but no one's exactly sure what happened, only that it did.

After the riot in Edinburgh, in 1638AD the Scots codified their objections, to the king's new religious laws, in the National Covenant document that made absolutely clear that they reject all changes without consent from Parliament's leaders of the Church. Angry at the rebel Scots for their rebuke, in 1639AD the king mobilised his forces and marched on the Scots rebels. The conflict that followed, between the king and the Scots, or Covenanters as they are called, is called the Bishops' Wars, and it lasted from 1639 to 1640AD.

The king's northern military campaign, against the Scots, proved a stalemate; met with a truce that did not hold, and the king had a second campaign against the Scottish Covenanters, beginning in 1640AD, but the Scots defeated the king and captured and occupied Newcastle in England, and the king honoured that he would not interfere in the Church of Scotland.

By the time the catholic king was defeated by the protestant Scottish Army, he was running short on revenue, which he required to put down the rebellion in Scotland, so he reopened Parliament with new elected members in 1640AD, and it was an act that opened the door to the king

being criticised by the members of parliament whose leader was John Pym who was against invading Scotland to put down the Covenanters. Due to the criticisms, the king again closed Parliament, which is a period called the Short Parliament, and again attacked Scotland, but it ended in disaster with a Scots army invading and occupying areas in England. At the same time in Ireland, the king's Lord Deputy of Ireland, one Thomas Wentworth—a catholic who had been collecting revenue for the king from the Irish catholic elites who had agreed to increase their taxes in return for religious reforms in favour of the Catholics, was, in 1640AD and the same year the king closed Parliament, brought to England and the king made him the Earl of Strafford with the intention of, as he did with the catholic Irish against the protestant English, using the catholic Scots against his protestant parliamentarian enemies in England, but Scottish anti-catholic forces invaded and defeated the king's catholic English forces in 1640AD, before occupying most of Northern England and forcing the king to pay them off to preclude them from advancing further, which was such a serious threat that it forced the king to reopen the Parliament, which he did on November 1640AD in an event called the Long Parliament, to seek revenue to pay off the Scots.

No sooner had the king reopened Parliament than the Parliamentarians were again accusing him and his men of all sorts; past crimes and illicit dealings, and they forced through a new constitution called the Protestation Act, on May 3, 1640AD, which was reluctantly honoured by the king, which gave them all something by legally obliging all signatories to uphold the following acts (1) to defend the religion of Protestantism; (2) that Parliament should convene at least once every 3 years and without the king's permission; (3) the king cannot legally impose taxes without Parliament's consent; (4) the king cannot legally dissolve Parliament without Parliament's consent; (5) to defend the king. It was also during the Long Parliament session that one of the king's most loyal men, Wentworth, was accused by Pym and some of the other Parliamentarians who became leaders of Parliament during the Short Parliament period, of using the catholic Irish against their protestant forces in England, which greatly angered the protestant

**Parliamentarians, and, in the end, to save himself and avert civil war, the king had no other choice but to sign the bill for the lawful execution of Wentworth, due to Parliament requiring the king's signature in order to lawfully execute any and all subjects of the Crown and Parliament, and, with that, Wentworth was beheaded on May 12, 1640AD. The king was saved and Wentworth was executed but conflict, between the king's High Anglican Catholics and the parliamentarian puritan Protestants, continued, even after the Protestation Act was agreed upon by both the king and Parliamentarians, and the first sign of trouble was in Ireland followed in 1642AD by the catholic king attempting to again arrest some of the elected members of parliament for treason. After those events, it appears civil war was unavoidable, which meant the British and Irish were now forced to show their colours and take sides; they were either on the king's side whose supporters are known as the Catholics, Royalists, Cavaliers, or the Covenanters who later changed sides, or on the Parliamentarians' side whose supporters are known as the Protestants, Parliamentarians, Puritans, Roundheads, or the Covenanters until they changed sides. Very much, then, led by crusading religious men or defenders of their faiths who also battle for their rights in Parliament, the Catholics and Protestants, Absolutists and Parliamentarians, were now about to settle old scores, or the people were about to be set up and culled by the elites.**

**After the king raised his standard at Nottingham on August 22, 1642AD, royalist and parliament forces met and engaged at the Battle of Southam on August 23, 1642AD, but there's no data on who won that battle. The Battle of Powick Bridge came next, which occurred on September 23, 1642AD, and the engagement ended in a royalist victory. After the Battle of Powick Bridge, came the first major engagement in the civil war. So starting with that, I will run through the engagements: the Battle of Edgehill occurred on October 23, 1642AD, and ended with both sides claiming victory; the Battle of Aylesbury occurred on November 1, 1642AD, and ended in victory for the Parliamentarians; the Battle of Brentford occurred on November 12, 1642AD, and ended in victory for the Royalists; the stand-off at Turnham**

**Green occurred which forced King Charles I and the Royalists into retreat; the Battle of Muster Green occurred in early December 1642AD, and ended in victory for the Parliamentarians; the Battle of Braddock Down occurred on January 19, 1643AD, and ended in victory for the Royalists; the Battle of Hopton Heath occurred on March 19, 1643AD, and proved inconclusive; the Battle of Seacroft Moor occurred on March 30, 1643AD, and ended in victory for the Royalists; the Battle of Camp Hill occurred on April 3, 1643AD, and ended in a royalist victory; in 1643AD royalist forces won the Battle of Lichfield; the Battle of Sourton Down occurred on April 25, 1643AD, and ended in victory for parliament forces; the Battle of Stratton occurred on May 16, 1643AD, and ended in victory for the Royalists; the Battle of Chalgrove Field occurred on June 18, 1643AD, and ended in a royalist victory; royalist forces defeated the Parliamentarians at the Battle of Adwalton Moor on June 30, 1643AD; the Battle of Burton Bridge occurred on July 4, 1643AD, and ended in a royalist victory; the Battle of Lansdowne occurred on July 5, 1643AD, and ended in a royalist victory; the Battle of Roundway Down occurred on July 13, 1643AD, and ended in a royalist victory; in 1643AD Cromwell formed the Ironsides who went on to win the Battle of Gainsborough on July 20, 1643AD; the Battle of Aldbourne Chase occurred on September 18, 1643AD, which proved inconclusive; fighting on the side of Parliament forces, Essex faced the Royalists at the Siege of Gloucester, before defeating royalist forces at the First Battle of Newbury on September 20, 1643AD; the Parliamentarians won the Battle of Winceby on October 11, 1643AD; around the same time as the Battle of Winceby occurred, there was a ceasefire in Ireland, and the Parliamentarians sought back-up from the Scots, in return for favours; the Battle of Nantwich occurred on January 26, 1644AD, and ended in victory for the Parliamentarians; the Battle of Cheriton occurred on March 29, 1644AD, and ended in victory for the Parliamentarians; the Battle of Cropredy Bridge occurred on June 29, 1644AD, and ended in victory for the Royalists; the Battle of Marston Moor occurred on July 2, 1644AD, and ended in victory for the Parliamentarians. Marston Moor stood out Cromwell as a competent military leader; the Battle of Lostwithiel**



occurred from August 21 to September 2, 1644AD, and ended in victory for the Royalists; the Battle of Aberdeen occurred on September 13, 1644AD, and ended in victory for the Royalists. In 1645AD the Parliament passed the Self-Denying Ordinance Act, which meant all members of the Parliament were obliged to integrate their forces into the New Model Army, and permit command under General Thomas Fairfax with Cromwell as his second-in-command and Lieutenant-General of Horse. The Second Battle of Newbury occurred on October 27, 1644AD, and ended in victory for the Old Ironsides or the Parliamentarians; the Battle of Auldearn occurred on May 9, 1645AD, and ended in victory for the Royalists; the Battle of Naseby occurred on June 14, 1645AD, and ended in victory for the Royalists; the Battle of Alford occurred on July 2, 1645AD, and ended in victory for the Royalists; the Battle of Langport occurred on July 10, 1645AD, and ended in victory for the Parliamentarians; (33) the Battle of Kilsyth occurred on August 15, 1645AD, and ended in victory for the Royalists; the Battle of Philiphaugh occurred on September 13, 1645AD, and ended in victory for the Parliamentarians; the Battle of Rowton Heath occurred on September 24, 1645AD, and ended in victory for the Parliamentarians; the Battle of Torrington occurred on February 16, 1646AD, and ended in victory for the New Model Army; the Battle of Stow-on-the-Wold occurred on March 21, 1646AD, and ended in victory for the Parliamentarians. On May 5, 1646AD, Charles surrendered to the Scots at Southwell, Nottinghamshire, who later turned him over to the Parliamentarians. On October 9, 1646AD, episcopacy—bishops; not government, control the churches—was abolished in the Church of England by the Parliamentarians, and England held onto its Presbyterian outlook until the Restoration occurred in 1660AD. Later in 1647AD, although the king had been turned over to the Parliamentarians, by whatever means, he went on to make a secret deal with the Scots, called the Engagement, which promised to establish Presbyterianism—councils or courts; not government, control the churches—in Scotland if the Scots invade England to restore him to power, and many uprisings occurred in 1648AD in England shortly after the king's secret deals, and also in Wales, and a Scots army,

loyal to the king, did in fact invade England to assist the king, but most of the royalist uprisings including the Scottish invasion were ended by pro-Parliament forces. In 1648AD “unpaid” parliament forces betrayed the Parliament by changing sides in the conflict, but were defeated at the Battle of St. Fagans that occurred on May 8, 1648AD, and the rebel leaders surrendered to Cromwell on July 11, after a 2-month siege; the Battle of Maidstone occurred on June 1, 1648AD, which brought victory for Fairfax and the Parliamentarians, and more sieges followed in Colchester, with much fighting in Northern England; Cromwell defeated a Scots army under the command of the Duke of Hamilton, at the Battle of Preston on August 17 to 19, 1648AD, and Hamilton was captured and later executed. Incidentally, before the battle at Preston, the Covenanters were at war with the Royalists. However, because the Covenanters believed that the Parliamentarians in England would remove Scottish independence and fail to impose Presbyterianism in Scotland, they ended up in a war with Cromwell and the Parliamentarians; the Battle of Winwick Pass also occurred on August 19, 1648AD, and ended in victory for the Parliamentarians. After the engagement at Winwick Pass, came the trial of King Charles I for treason.

Using Irish and Scottish catholic forces against the protestant English and Parliament's forces, and the king's secret deals with them, closing Parliament after the new constitutions—the Petition of Right signed during the Short Parliament; the Protestation Act signed during the Long Parliament—forbade him from doing so, and his catholic religious reforms, or anti-Reformist actions, all conspired to seal his fate for many in the Three Kingdoms, but some of the Parliamentarians, along with Army leaders and Fairfax, still favoured him which caused Thomas Pride—one of the Army leaders that hadn't favoured the king as much as Fairfax and others had, to invade Parliament, in December 1648AD, to arrest some of the pro-king Parliamentarians and to exclude them from entering Parliament. Once that was done, Pride and others then set up the Rump parliament that would become a court for the trial of King Charles I for treason. Because of the arrests and exclusions from Parliament by Pride, Fairfax resigned as Army leader,

**and Cromwell—the puritan soldier who fought for equality for the English parliament, became Army leader.**

**At the trial of King Charles I, where the king was accused of being a “tyrant, traitor, murderer, and public enemy”, he was eventually found guilty and sentenced to death by beheading, which occurred in front of the Banqueting House, which is attached to the Palace of Whitehall, on January 30, 1649AD, and England became a republican state called the Commonwealth of England, and the Rump parliament was officially founded; later, Scotland and Ireland would join the Commonwealth. Shortly after the execution or regicide of King Charles I on February 5, 1649AD, the Scottish parliament recognised his son, Charles II, who, like his father, was also a Roman catholic, as the king of Scotland, which meant, along with the Covenanters, the Scottish parliament had now changed sides in the civil war conflict.**

**Following on from the execution of King Charles I and King Charles II's crowning as the king of Scotland, war broke out in Ireland between the Parliamentarians and the Confederates who were in an alliance with the Royalists in England, but the Parliamentarians defeated them at the Battle of Rathmines on August 2, 1649AD. After the Battle of Rathmines, the fighting increased to such a level that Cromwell himself actually invaded Dublin, in Ireland, on August 15, to take control of the war against the pro-royalist forces, which, incidentally, began controversial events that led to Cromwell being accused of murder itself. This is what happened: After the siege at Drogheda in 1649AD, Cromwell's forces killed 3,500 “unarmed” people, but Cromwell insists they were carrying arms. Incidentally, in 1957AD, which was 306 years after the siege at Drogheda, this is what Churchill wrote on that matter that caused then to the Irish and brought later to the British much grief to those on both sides of the religious divide:**

**“...upon all of these Cromwell's record was a lasting bane. By an uncompleted process of terror, by an iniquitous land settlement, by the virtual proscription of the Catholic religion, by**

**the bloody deeds already described, he cut new gulfs between the nations and the creeds. 'Hell or Connaught' were the terms he thrust upon the native inhabitants, and they for their part, across three hundred years, have used as their keenest expression of hatred 'The Curse of Cromwell on you.' ... Upon all of us there still lies 'the curse of Cromwell'."**

**In Scotland post-execution of King Charles I in 1649AD, the wars between the royalist-Catholics and the parliamentarian-Protestants or Covenanters continued, and the Marquess of Montrose—one of the important Scottish leaders who had first fought against the Royalists at the start of the civil war conflict, but had later changed sides from covenanter to royalist due to King Charles II promising to establish and protect Presbyterianism in Scotland, was in exile until King Charles II, who continued the fight against the Parliamentarians and Protestants after his father was executed by the Rump, sought Montrose out to raise an army of pro-royalist, catholic, Highlanders, to fight for him, but Montrose failed to raise many of the Highlanders, so, with only an army of mercenaries he raised from Norway, may have lost him the Battle of Carbisdale, that occurred on April 27, 1650AD, to the Covenanters, before he was captured and turned over to the Scottish Government and Parliament in Edinburgh, where the Parliamentarians, who were at this time in an alliance with the English Parliamentarians, sentenced him to death by hanging, which occurred on May 21, 1650AD.**

**After the execution of Montrose, King Charles II landed in Scotland on June 23, 1650AD, and formalised a deal with the Covenanters and the Scottish Government and Parliament who had changed sides after the Treaty of Breda was made in 1650AD. This is what happened: The Scots Covenanters, the Scottish Government, and Scottish Parliament would recognise Charles II as the king of Scotland if, along with the Treaty of Breda, he also signed the National Covenant that was founded in 1638AD, and the Solemn League and Covenant that was founded in 1643AD, which would legally oblige Charles II to protect Presbyterianism in Scotland, and also support an**

**independent Scotland free from the control of the English parliament, which meant, the new Stuart king now had the Covenanters, the Scottish Government, and the Scottish Parliament as allies against the Parliamentarians.**

**The war continued, and Cromwell, who was in Ireland fighting to hold down the pro-royalist and catholic forces who had fought for the dead Stuart king and were now fighting for the new Stuart king, moved across into Britain and arrived in Scotland on July 22, 1650AD, to fight the Covenanters, and immediately attacked Edinburgh with his New Model Army about him. Fighting continued in Scotland, and, later, Cromwell defeated King Charles II's forces at the Battle of Dunbar on September 3, 1650AD, the Battle of Hieton on December 1, 1650AD, the Battle of Inverkeithing on July 20, 1651AD, and the Battle of Upton on August 28, 1651AD, which ended in victory for the Parliamentarians. After the Battle of Inverkeithing, King Charles II retreated by moving some of his forces south into England, with Cromwell following close behind. Before leaving Scotland to move south in pursuit of Charles II, Cromwell left George Monck in command of Parliament forces in Scotland, who later captured Stirling and Dundee in 1651AD, so, by that time, the war against the pro-royalist Scottish Government and the Scottish Covenanters was all but won. Monck went on to pacify Scotland before being given the title Governor of Scotland, and, under a new treaty called the Tender of Union, where the Scottish parliament was dissolved and Scotland was ruled from London and governed by a joint group of English military personal and a Scottish council of state, the Scots were awarded 30 power-seats in the London parliament, but King Charles II still had one more battle in him when, after raising more pro-royalist forces, he engaged Cromwell and Parliament forces at the Battle of Worcester on September 3, 1651AD, but was defeated before making his escape into France where, incidentally, Marat, Napoleon, and the rest of the Republicans and Socialists would later also end up in a war against the absolutist monarchs, and, very much, it looks like the French elites were following the British system for creating costly conflict; which was, religion and Republicanism.**

**The Battle of Worcester left more dead soldiers on all sides, and the Roundheads had defeated the Cavaliers in the Three Kingdoms, so, although resistance continued for a time after, now the Parliamentarians were in control of the Republic of England, Scotland, and Ireland where the Parliamentarians had defeated the last of the catholic-royalist forces at Galway, in Ireland, in 1653AD. After the Irish campaign, the Irish Catholics lost much of their lands to the Roundhead, republican, soldiers who fought for the Parliamentarians, and English, protestant, settlers were brought in to settle and colonise.**

**Up until this time, although the Parliamentarians had defeated the Royalists, something strange was about to occur. Although Cromwell supported one group controlling the government parallel to a one-nation liberal church in order to unify all and preclude further issue and conflict, and the elected members appear to have been slowing the process of healing the nations down and even ignoring him as they went about their other duties, matters escalated when in early-April 1653AD Cromwell entered the Parliament and, as well as shouting to the Rump members that "you are no Parliament. I say, you are no Parliament. I will put an end to your sitting", he also demanded that the Rump members establish a caretaker government before abdicating their positions. However, the Rump members ignored Cromwell's demands to form a caretaker government before abdicating, therefore, on April 20, 1653AD, with 40 of his most loyal musketeers behind him, Cromwell re-entered Parliament to annul it, which he did, and the caretaker government he set up went on to draw up a new constitution and debate what form it should take, and puritan saintly was the outcome of the new Barebones' Parliament that Cromwell supported but had not joined, that opened on July 4, 1653AD. The Barebones' was also tasked with resolving the religious disputes that the old Rump parliament failed to do.**

**The old Rump Parliament had been shut down and, with Cromwell's support, the Barebones' Parliament had arisen in its place with, what was thought to be, puritan men until, that is, the Barebones' founders began to suspect**



that radical Fifth Monarchists, who were an extreme, apocalyptic, puritan sect who believed the world would end in 1666AD, had infiltrated their group, so, fearing a Fifth Monarchists takeover, the Barebones' founders dissolved it on December 12, 1653AD, and, on December 16, 1653AD, invited Cromwell to accept the position of Lord Protector of the Commonwealth of England, Scotland, and Ireland. Cromwell accepted the position of Lord Protector, which meant he held the authority to call and dissolve parliaments, but it was still different from the absolutist system, due to Cromwell having to first win the support from the majority, during a Council of State meeting in the Parliament, before he could enact any new laws.

Cromwell did well during the closure of the Rump to becoming the Protector, unlike the Rump members who appeared to be betraying the reformed faith in the Three Nations, and may even have been pro-royalist infiltrators, and he remained Lord Protector until he died on September 3, 1658AD, which was when his son Richard Cromwell became the Lord Protector. But what happened after Cromwell died and after his son was forced to resign on May 1659AD is another reason why I came to suspect that the entire civil war affair may have been an elitist plot to weed out and reduce their enemies and that the Rump and the Barebones' had been infiltrated by the Royalists and Catholics. So what happened? Get this, although a hundred thousand people or more had died violently fighting for the elites who controlled both the Cavaliers and Roundheads during the war—seems a little light if you consider it was a 9-year war with around 50 engagements—not to mention the crimes Cromwell was accused of committing in Ireland where half a million may have perished, after Cromwell died in 1658AD, and his son was forced to resign as Protector in 1659AD due to having no adequate support from the Army, Cromwell's man in Scotland, Governor Monck, with command over the New Model Army, that, recall, was founded and created by the Parliamentarians to fight the Royalists, marched into London and into the Republic's parliament to rework the Republic's constitution to not only dismantle the Republic that his idealistic men had all died for in battles ranging from Edgehill to Worcester, but,

**shockingly so, hear this, to reinstate the royalist monarch! The restoration occurred on May 29, 1660AD, with Charles II's arrival in London, England, but his actual coronation occurred on April 23, 1661AD.**

**To Conclude on the English Civil War And Republicanism As A Weapon To Kill: The English Civil War began because a Roman catholic and absolutist became the king of Britain and Ireland. England, recall, had been a catholic nation up until the Reformation under the Tudor king Henry VIII when control over the Church of England was removed from the catholic Pope Clement VII and England became a somewhat protestant nation. But because some of the monarchs remained Catholics after the Reformation, problems began once they became the king or queen and if they began to force their religious beliefs and practices on the churches of others; which some of them did, recall, when the protestant Stuart king, King James I, died in 1625AD, and his catholic son, Charles I, became the king of England, he began a campaign of religious reforms that were anti-reformist and anti-protestant, that led to catastrophic disputes between the religious peoples in the Three Nation, when he forced the catholic prayer book on the Protestants forcing them to honour mass, etc.**

**The catholic monarchs caused problems, for sure. But the Puritans, on the other hand, that Cromwell was linked to, were just as guilty and just as extreme as the catholic kings; recall, they wanted to ban all catholic practices and fought for one church representing all the Christians, which would be unified under puritan beliefs and practices.**

**That's one critical aspect that caused the civil war; the other was “equality” between the powerful elites, or the Parliament's members and the absolutist monarch. The kings and queens had always been absolutists, of course, which meant the monarchs hold the power over the subjects in the kingdom for all time, and has the right to open or close Parliament as they see fit, and they successfully fought to hold on to their absolutist outlook even though some of their fellow elites attempted to curve their dictatorship powers through constitutions; for instance, the Magna Carta and the Bill of Rights. But when King Charles I—an absolutist, became the king of England and many times**

**closed Parliament because of the intrigues mentioned previously; which were, protecting Buckingham and Wentworth, pro-catholic; anti-Reformist, policies, and the elected members withholding one of his revenue-making rights on import and export tax, it led to the king acting violently towards some of the Parliament members, to the Parliamentarians raising forces to protect themselves and to stop the king closing Parliament, and to the English Civil War.**

**In England, if religion and the republican movement weren't being used by the elites to weed out the fighters of Britain and Ireland, leaving but fools and cowards behind for the elites to effortlessly rule over, then they would have been very effective if they were. So was the English Civil War a conspiracy against the people? Was the elites dragging the people into a 9-year war that led to the English monarchy being replaced with a republic only for the monarchy to be reinstated after they had killed a hundred thousand people suspicious or was it a legitimate conflict? For one, I think it is suspicious. But, not only that, what happened after religion and Republicanism were being used to start wars in the British Isles, made me even more convinced that Republicanism was being used by the elites as a tactic to reduce the people or keep their numbers down. So what happened? “Republicanism” was used by the elites to start the American War of Independence that led to America becoming a republic with many of the common people dead; “Republicanism” was used to start the French Revolution and to France becoming a temporary republic with many of the common people dead; “Republicanism” was used to start the Napoleonic Wars that left many of the people dead and, as in England post-Cromwell's death, the monarchy being suspiciously restored afterwards, and “Republicanism” was also used to start the communist movements that led to the Russian revolutions (the February Revolution and the Red October Revolution) and to millions more of the common people dead!**

**All-in-all, it looks like the American, French, and Russian revolutionary elites were copying the tried and tested British system for creating conflict; which was,**

**Republicanism or even Socialism. But, recall, the British elites were also using “religion” to begin conflict, which, incidentally, religious conflict dates back to the creation of Christianity and with the Ministry of Jesus from 27 to 30AD when the Christians and Pagans began war with each other; for instance, during the Roman Empire age, Emperor Nero, between 64 and 68AD, persecuted the Christians, and, also during the Roman Empire age, Constantine the Great, who lived between 306 to 337AD, persecuted the Pagans before converting to Christianity.**

**The religious conflicts, between the Catholics and Protestants, didn't end after the English Civil War with the restoration of the monarch under the catholic Charles II from the House of Stuart in 1660AD, they continued with the catholic brother of King Charles II, James II, who became the king of England after Charles died in 1684AD, being deposed by his protestant uncle, William of Orange, during the British Glorious Revolution in 1688AD. After King James II was deposed, the war continued with a series of Jacobite (approximately, Jacobite is latin for James) uprisings starting in 1689AD when John Graham of Claverhouse raised the standard of the deposed King James II of Eng. & VII of Scot. on the Law Hill in Dundee. Amongst others, the Battle of the Boyne in Ireland in July 1690AD was fought and lost by James II's forces, and, although King William of Orange, also known as William III and King Billy, after winning the British and Irish crown, attempted to bring an end to those religious and royal conflicts by banning all Catholics from ascending to the English throne through the Act of Settlement that was enacted in 1701AD, the war continued with the 1715AD catholic Jacobite uprising ("the Fifteen") under the Old Pretender, who was the son of James II, and with the 1719AD catholic Jacobite uprising ("the Nineteen") under Cardinal Giulio Alberoni<sup>1</sup>, and with the catholic Jacobite 1745AD uprising ("the Forty-five") under the Young Pretender, who was the grandson of James II of Eng., that also attempted to reclaim the kingdom and crown for the House of Stuart. The Stuarts failed to reclaim the crown lost in 1688AD, but James II's protestant daughter, Mary Stuart, married William III to become the king and queen**

of Great Britain and Ireland. Incidentally, when Mary died in 1694AD, and William died in 1702AD, another of James II's protestant daughters, Anne, became queen of Great Britain; when Queen Anne died in 1714AD, George I became the protestant king of Great Britain and Ireland, and the first of the Hanoverian kings to rule over Britain and Ireland. Further, it was in 1689AD and shortly after the revolution in 1688AD that the Bill of Rights was enacted in England under William III's reign, which meant England became a constitutional monarchy, or restrictions were placed on the power of the English monarchs. Placing restrictions on the power of the English monarchs dates back much further than 1689AD; however, in fact, restrictions on an English monarch's power through constitutions date back to 1215AD with the Magna Carta Libertatum that limited King John's power, and to 1258AD with the Provisions of Oxford that limited King Henry III's power. The elites winning parliament power over the English monarchy didn't prove absolutely successful and it wasn't at all as idealistic as it sounds; attempting to win power for themselves at the cost of the king's own inner network being their true motive most historians suspect. But limiting a monarch's power in England began with the Magna Carta.

## **CHAPTER 2**

### **THE INDUSTRIAL REVOLUTION & THE MULTICULTURAL OUTLOOK OF ROUSSEAU, VOLTAIRE, & PAINE**

**Throughout the Industrial Revolution age, that lasted from approximately the 1750s to the 1850s AD and was a critical event that had undoubtedly killed a great deal many of the people and witnessed the fascist, capitalist, elites make fortunes, millions of people, whose ancestors hailed from much healthier societies where they had mastered the art of farming and looked out for one another, were encouraged to leave the countryside to live and work in the new houses and factories that the elites had built for them in the cities. In one masterstroke, the elites had not only cleared the people from the countryside and discovered a new way to make fortunes through using them as a form of cheap labour, but, at the same time, thanks to the the lack of facilities in the tenement-houses built to shelter them in; difficult access to clean water, lack of heating, and no bathrooms, etc., and the dangers in the factories; unprotected machines, coal dust, chemicals, etc., a new way to kill them! It was due to these massive changes in their nations, or the shift from, post-Roman conquest, free farming societies to absolutist-dictatorships during the feudal system age, the immense suffering of the people during the Industrial Revolution age, and the people being without the vote and the welfare state, that led to the republican and socialist movements in the mid-17th and upper-18th century AD.**

**For an example of how bad it all became for the poor people back in the late-18th and early-19th centuries AD or throughout the Industrial Revolution Age, know that the British Government, and similar to the French elites, enacted the Poor Law in 1834AD, and built poorhouses for the most poorest of the families, but, evilly so, did their very best to stop them from entering them! Here this, according to the assistant commissioner for government poorhouses called Thomson, the British government was hell-bent on making life a complete misery for the poor people. Thomson wrote:**



**“Our intention is to make the workhouses as much like prisons as possible. Our object is to establish a discipline so severe and repulsive as to make them a terror to the poor and prevent them from entering”.**

**A second example of how bad it became post-farming societies, was when Engels, who studied the conditions of the working classes during the Industrial Revolution, published his book called The Condition of the Working Class in England. Prepare for a shock. Engels wrote:**

**“The manner in which the great multitude of the poor is treated by society today is revolting. They are drawn into the large cities where they breathe a poorer atmosphere than in the country; they are relegated to districts which, by reason of the method of construction, are worse ventilated than any others; they are deprived of all means of cleanliness, of water itself, since pipes are laid only when paid for, and the rivers so polluted that they are useless for such purposes; they are obliged to throw all offal and garbage, all dirty water, often all disgusting drainage and excrement into the streets, being without other means of disposing of them; they are thus compelled to infect the region of their own dwellings. Nor is this enough. All conceivable evils are heaped upon the heads of the poor. If the population of great cities is too dense in general, it is they in particular who are packed into the least space. As though the vitiated atmosphere of the streets were not enough, they are penned in dozens into single rooms, so that the air which they breathe at night is enough in itself to stifle them. They are given damp dwellings, cellar dens that are not waterproof from below or garrets that leak from above. Their houses are so built that the clammy air cannot escape. They are supplied bad, tattered, or rotten clothing, adulterated and indigestible food. They are exposed to the most exciting changes of mental condition, the most violent vibrations between hope and fear; they are hunted like game, and not permitted to attain peace of mind and quiet enjoyment of life. They are deprived of all enjoyments except that of sexual indulgence and drunkenness, are worked every day to the point of complete exhaustion of their mental and physical energies, and are thus constantly**

spurred on to the maddest excess in the only two enjoyments at their command. And if they surmount all this, they fall victims to want of work in a crisis when all the little is taken from them that had hitherto been vouchsafed them.”

“How is it possible, under such conditions, for the lower class to be healthy and long lived? What else can be expected than an excessive mortality, an unbroken series of epidemics, a progressive deterioration in the physique of the working population?”

“Compulsory school attendance does not exist. In the mills it is, as we shall see, purely nominal; and when in the session of 1843 the Ministry was disposed to make this nominal compulsion effective, the manufacturing bourgeoisie opposed the measure with all its might, though the working-class was outspokenly in favour of compulsory school attendance. Moreover, a mass of children work the whole week through in the mills or at home, and therefore cannot attend school. The evening schools, supposed to be attended by children who are employed during the day, are almost abandoned or attended without benefit. It is asking too much, that young workers, who have been using themselves up twelve hours in the day, should go to school from eight to ten at night. And those who try it usually fall asleep, as is testified by hundreds of witnesses in the Children's Employment Commission's Report. Sunday schools have been founded, it is true, but they, too, are most scantily supplied with teachers, and can be of use to those only who have already learnt something in the day schools. The interval from one Sunday to the next is too long for an ignorant child to remember in the second sitting what it learned in the first, a week before. The Children's Employment Commission's Report furnishes a hundred proofs, and the Commission itself most emphatically expresses the opinion, that neither the week-day nor the Sunday schools, in the least degree, meet the needs of the nation. This Report gives evidence of ignorance in the working-class of England, such as could hardly be expected in Spain or Italy. It cannot be otherwise; the bourgeoisie has little to hope, and much to fear, from the education of the working-class. The Ministry, in its whole enormous budget of £55,000,000, has only the single trifling item of £40,000 for public education.”

**“In Manchester more than fifty-seven per cent of the children of the working-class perish before the fifth year, while but twenty per cent of the children of the higher classes perish before the fifth year”.**

**Having read the above accounts, now you know how cruel the elites were to the people. In fact, they wanted it all for themselves, and, excluding some coal, bread, rotten fruit and vegetables, got it.**

**It was because of those cruelties and inequalities that the people became unhappy and willing to fight and die for reforms in their nations, and being the majority could easily lead to the overthrow of the ruling hierarchy if the people could only find it in themselves to lead themselves, so, what the elites would do, they would construct the peoples' movements of Republicanism and Socialism for them before a true leader of the peoples gets in first and really does create a fairer society and System, and they would also encourage the people to fight for reforms and equality through idealistic literature so they could fool them onto the battle-field in order to get rid of them and to shut them up. It was a disturbing act to betray them like that, but it was a effective strategy and straight out of a page of The Prince. Some of those leading, wealthy, republican, socialist, writers that, through idealistic and revolutionary literature, were supposedly supporting the people, were, from France, Jean-Jacques Rousseau and Francois-Marie Arouet or Voltaire, and, from America, Thomas Payne, and all of them had descended from the Eurasian-Roman network that came into the West with the Romans and very likely some time after the Gallic Wars had concluded around 51BC. Rousseau, Voltaire, and Payne are important figures in the bloody world of war and “equal rights for all”, so, what I will do now, I will take you through some of the critical things they were involved in throughout their careers:**

**(1) Rousseau—one of the Eurasian-French, socialist, republican, revolutionary writers and thinkers, was supporting equality and multicultural societies and wrote two revolutionary books prior to the French Revolution dealing with many of the critical concepts prevalent during**

his time; for instance, “equality”, “absolutism”, and “ownership of land”. The first book he had written on those important subjects, was a book called the Discourse on the Origin and Basis of Inequality Among Men, which he wrote in 1754AD, which means, and as you shall see, it preceded Voltaire, Payne, and Marx's later contribution in the field of socialist and leftist ideals, which makes him, outwith the British Empire that permitted the landlord elites to wipe out the Highlanders and their tribal society, the post-classical source for holding an academic multicultural outlook; Rome being the true non-academic source. The second of Rousseau's important works was a book called the Social Contract, that he wrote in 1762AD, which also tackled the important subjects of the time; such as, the Divine Right of Kings to Rule or Absolutism, which means the king holds all the power over the people and government for all time, rather than a parliament having that power;

(2) Voltaire was also one of the Eurasian-French, socialist, republican, writers and thinkers and supporters of equality and multicultural societies who was writing on the important subjects of the time; such as, “freedom of speech” and “freedom of religion”, and was also one of the early propagandists who was supporting equality that arose in the West after the Roman Western Empire apparently began to collapse in 410AD. Voltaire published an article in 1763AD, exactly 26 years before the French Revolution began (and 200 years prior to President Kennedy's assassination in 1963AD), promoting tolerance and equality amongst the races of the world. He wrote:

“It does not require great art, or magnificently trained eloquence, to prove that Christians should tolerate each other. I, however, am going further: I say that we should regard all men as our brothers. What? The Turk my brother? The Chinaman my brother? The Jew? The Siam? Yes, without doubt; are we not all children of the same father and creatures of the same God?”

**(3) Payne was an American republican and one of the Founding Fathers of America who lived from 1737 to 1809AD. He was also supporting equality amongst the peoples and with the elites, just as Cromwell, who fought for equality in the Parliament, the British Empire, whose communist government permitted the landlord elites to wipe out the Highlanders and their tribal society, Rousseau, and Voltaire had done before him. Payne appeared on the political-scene just after the American War of Independence had ended. But, just after the War of Independence—see note 5: The Company & The War Of Independence—had ended in 1783AD, and right in the middle of the French revolution and shortly before the Napoleonic Wars had began in 1803AD, he published two important books; which were, the Rights of Man that was published in 1791AD, and the Age of Reason that was published in 1794AD, supporting the French revolution and justifying the French people rebelling against their aristocratic-rulers.**

**So what was going on?**

**As previously stated, the people were agitating for reforms in their societies, and the elites, fearing the power of the people if they find a true leader to lead them, required to get in first, or to set up political reform movements with their own class leading them, to control the fightback against themselves! So, what they did, first, they would condition the people for rebellion and war through idealistic literature written by Rousseau and Voltaire, and, second, shortly after Rousseau and Voltaire had published their heavy books inciting the peoples into action, hear this, comrade, the bloody American War of Independence began in 1775AD, the French Revolution began in 1789AD, and the Napoleonic Wars began in 1803AD! Those wars, that emerged off the back of Rousseau and Voltaire's works, left, collectively, millions of the common peoples dead!**

**Payne is also an important writer in the world of “literature preceding mass conflict” that left millions of the people dead and nothing to show for their sacrifice but a new name and social-organisation system for their nations. Payne appeared on the political-scene shortly after the American War of Independence had ended. But what was**

**Payne doing, comrade? Precisely the same as elitist writers Rousseau and Voltaire were doing; he was supporting the French revolution, which was the bloodiest war in history at that time, and justifying the French peasants rebelling against their aristocratic-elites, which effectively meant war with a great number of the common people killed, and that, reader, as history has shown time and time again, is a very suspicious pattern and just one of the reasons why I suspect Paine, along with Rousseau and Voltaire, were betraying the French peasants so the elites could cull them and shut them up, which they did in the American War of Independence, the French Revolution, and the Napoleonic Wars.**

**To conclude on The Industrial Revolution And The Multicultural Outlook Of Rousseau, Voltaire, And Paine: The French people were agitating for change due to the injustices in their societies; such as, their lands being stolen from them in the Feudal Age, the suffering throughout the Industrial Age, and being without the vote and welfare, so the elites plotted to start wars to cull them down and shut them up. The plan was, they would go on to copy the British system, or the Stuart kings', Eliot's, Essex's, Cromwell's, and the British Empire's, which, recall, was to use Absolutism and Republicanism to justify war against themselves, and they would also destroy much of the peoples through leftist or communist ideals; for instance, first, through elitist leftist writers such as Rousseau, Voltaire, and Payne, they would use “equality” to destroy racial and nationalist societies and peoples, or those “remnant-people” who survived Rome's advances into their tribal lands, but also the Eurasian-Roman settlers who became the natives, through persistently encouraging the natives to view all non-Whites and White foreigners as equal to themselves; for the natives not to worry about all the foreigners living in their nations; second, also through Rousseau, Voltaire, and Payne's work, they would make the intellectual and moral arguments required to “justify” and “encourage” a war against the royalist-elites; third, they would construct the republican and socialist movements—for instance, on June 17, 1789AD, the Third Estate, who were wealthy Republicans and Socialists who created clubs called “friends of the Blacks”, and were supposedly representing the**

**French peasants, declared themselves, in a apparent “class war takeover” of Louis XVI’s capitalist, absolutist, France, the National Assembly (NA), which was the new, revolutionary, government claiming to be against the capitalist-elites who were abusing the peasants and feeding on them through taxation—for more of this, see The Multicultural French Revolution & The Napoleonic Wars—as organisations to rally the peasants behind and to control their premeditated wars; fourth, along with the volunteers, the warmongering elites pretending to be class warriors on the side of the Third Estate and peasants, would conscript millions of peasants into their elite-controlled royalist and republican-socialist armies, to set them up, cull them down, and murder them, which they did.**

**The Eurasian-Roman nobility had long controlled France and England by the time the French Revolution had began; remember the Battle of Entremont in 124BC, or the Gallic Wars from 58 to 51BC, or even Rome's invasion and occupation of England in 43AD, which was when, give or take, Rome began building its western empire in Celtic and Germanic lands, so it was a plan that worked well for them. In fact, it was just after Rousseu, Voltaire, and Payne had written up the intellectual arguments needed to justify and encourage rebellion by the people against the aristocratic-elites that, suspiciously so, the most serious conflicts ever witnessed in American and European history occurred and ended with millions of the common people dead; for instance, Rousseau, Voltaire, and Payne had in fact inspired the Founding Fathers of America who fought the America War of Independence that began in 1775AD against the British Empire and ended with the U.S. becoming a republic, and inspired the six critical leaders behind the French Revolution that began in 1789AD, and the Napoleonic Wars that began in 1803AD, whose wars had very likely left, collectively, 10s of millions of the common people dead.**

**Incidentally, some of those republican Founding Fathers of America were Benjamin Franklin, Thomas Jefferson, Thomas Payne, and George Washington. And six of the critical leaders behind the French Revolution and Napoleonic Wars were Robespierre, Brissot, Danton, Marat, Carnot, and Napoleon.**



**The wars to cull the people who were agitating for reforms in their fascist-controlled nation-states, would continue through the Spring of Nations up to WW1, and would finally come to a end after WW2 had concluded when the founding of the critical welfare state slowed the peoples down somewhat, and the people became pacified. The elites still wanted to cull the peoples down to a few million, of course, due to less peasants being easier to control, so, although they were using non-Whites against them from before WW2 and WW1—Pakistanis began migrating into Britain in 1920AD, and, in Mein Kampf, that was published in 1925AD, Hitler tells of non-Whites taken German jobs—which they were doing to steal away native jobs and to help impoverish and break them, they moved forward with their class war strategy of using non-Whites against them to break them while the rich multiply to become the majority, and, post-WW2, began cramming even more poor immigrants into the Eurasian/White cities in order to bring about collapse and starvation that would, end game, when millions of have died, bring in their Brave New World—a utopian world, at least for the elites, and a fascist state protected by mercenary police and soldiers, with only a few million people, controlled through sterilisation, to do the tasks that the elites won't do. This, comrade, is the essence of class war: kill of your class enemies winning it all for your own class.**

## **THE COMPANY & THE WAR OF INDEPENDENCE**

**Note 5. In the following, I will take you through the events that had occurred before the War of Independence, the events that caused the war, what occurred after the war, and what I suspect it was really about.**

**During the Age of Discovery; between 1400 and 1600AD, Portugal and Spain founded trading empires in the foreign lands they were exploring, which brought great wealth to their elites, so England, through the East India Company or the Company—the Company was founded in 1600AD by John Watts and George White who received a Royal Charter from Queen Elizabeth I of England, and was the driving force behind the English, and later British, Empire—along with arch-enemy France and the Netherlands, set out to establish their own colonies, trade routes, and networks where they sold, along with smoking tobacco, cotton, wheat, fur, fish, lumber, and iron, African slaves into the Americas and Asia.**

**Incidentally, the African slave trade lasted from the 16th to the 19th century AD, and was just a ruthless way for the traders and plantation owners to make easy money. As for the trade itself, it began with the Portuguese in 1526AD when, after buying Africans from the West African slave traders who were themselves Africans, they made their first voyage across the Atlantic Ocean to Brazil carrying the slaves. Being such a profitable trade, other privateers soon got involved; for instance, in 1562AD England's John Hawkins set sail from Sierra Leone, Africa, with three ships carrying 300 slaves to the plantations in the Americas where he traded the slaves for pearls, hides, and sugar.**

**In today's world of lies, brainwashing, and inciting the races against each other to kill each other, which is part of the NWO's cull & chaos programme, it's difficult to tell exactly how many Africans were shipped across the Atlantic Ocean to work on the coffee, tobacco, sugar, and cotton plantations and in other industries such as mining, but the estimation is in the millions.**

**The first signs of the African slave trade, or cashcow”, ending was in 1778AD in Virginia, America, when it was outlawed in their state, and the Quakers, a religious group, began objecting to it throughout the 1780s AD. After that, Thomas Clarkson set up his anti-slavery club in England in 1787AD; Jacques Pierre Brissot set up his anti-slavery club, called the Society of the Friends of the Blacks, in France in 1788AD, and William Wilberforce, a British politician, began complaining about the slave trade in Parliament in 1789AD. In the end, all nations banned the slave trade; revolutionary France in 1794AD; Denmark in 1803AD, and Britain in 1833AD with the Slavery Abolition Act.**

**Slavery is, of course, appalling. However, bear in mind that slavery, while it mostly ended with the Africans, did not begin with the Africans; in fact it dates back to the ancient world; recall, Jewish captivity in Egypt and Babylon; Rome also had a slave industry, as did the Mongols, etc.**

**Outwith Leaf Ericson who was probably the very first known European to have set foot in North America (Vinland), which may have been around 1,000AD, some of those earliest explorers and pioneers into the Americas were Christopher Columbus who landed in Puerto Rico in 1493AD; the Spanish Conquistadors who landed in Florida in 1513AD; the French who made settlements along the Mississippi River, and English colonization began when they founded colonies along the eastern coast of North America, which began with the Virginia Colony in 1607AD at Jamestown, and with the Pilgrims' Plymouth Colony in 1620AD. In 1619AD the English colonists founded America's first elected legislative assembly called Virginia's House of Burgesses, and the Mayflower Compact and the Fundamental Orders of Connecticut established “self-government” that later developed through the American colonies. Scotch-Irish and other peoples later migrated to North America which added to the English colonies that later became the 13 colonies that the English had originally established along the east coast of North America.**

**Incidentally, the Company was an empire-building tool used by the aristocratic British elites who held the**

shares and granted monopolies to it. Outwith the thousands of soldiers the Company hired and trained to protect its trading interests, it stood its own naval fleet that consisted of hundreds of warships and heavily armed merchant vessels called East Indiamen. It was through the Company that England, and later Britain, due to the Act of Union in 1707AD, after England's victories over the Netherlands and France in the 1600s and 1700s AD, became the dominant force in North America, won an empire in India—"the Jewel in the Crown", after the Company's victory over the Mughal Empire's Mughal Bengal at the Battle of Plassey in 1757AD, and later, after being caught smuggling opium into China which was made illegal by the Qing rulers, fought and won the First Opium War that occurred between 1839 and 1842AD, before negotiating a treaty that secured land and trading rights for the British in China.

The European elites had established colonies in South and North America. In North America, most of the British colonists were small farmers and such things, and the British Government permitted them to govern themselves, so the colonists were happy enough until, after the French-Indian War ended in 1763AD—the French-Indian War was a war fought from 1754 to 1763AD between the American colonists with King George III's British Government and Army assisting them, and the French colonists, or New France, with Louis XVI's French Government and Army assisting them, and they all had support from some of the Native Indian tribes—the British Government, in order to recover the money that the British East India Company had lost due to helping the Americans fight in the war against the French colonists and New France, began taxing them and "banned" them from ruling themselves to control their own affairs, which caused conflict between them. The new taxes were also to help pay the British Army who were protecting the American colonists, post-war with New France, as they expanded westwards to fulfil their Manifest Destiny, which means, the Americans will settle from the east coast of North America to the west coast of North America, or from Sea to Shining Sea.

Although the conflict, between the American colonists and the British Government, that led to the Revolutionary

War began after the French-Indian War ended in 1763AD, conflict between the British and American colonists dates back prior to 1763AD when the British parliament enacted laws that gave the British East India Company a monopoly on importing tea to the American colonies in 1698AD, and, as the popularity of tea increased, in 1721AD passed an act stopping all competition by forcing the colonists to import tea only from Great Britain. Due to that British monopoly the American tea importers viewed it as unfair, immoral, and designed to destroy their businesses, and began to view the British parliament as an enemy.

Some of those new laws, that were written to tax the colonists shortly after the French-Indian War had ended, that helped start the Revolutionary War, were the Sugar Act, enacted in 1764AD, the Currency Act, enacted in 1764, the Quartering Act, enacted in 1765AD, the Stamp Act, enacted in 1765AD, and the Townshend Revenue Acts, enacted in 1767 to 1768AD. The Sugar and Stamp Acts dictated that the colonist must pay a tax to the British Army for protecting them as they settled their way west. The Currency Act dictated that all paper money issued by the colonists would be regulated in order to protect British merchants and creditors from being paid in depreciated colonial currency. The Quartering Act dictated that local colonial governments are to provide British soldiers with housing and food. The Townshend Revenue Acts dictated that British agents were to raise revenue in the colonies to pay the salaries of governors and judges to keep their loyalty to Great Britain, and establish the precedent that Parliament had the right to tax the colonies.

The British parliament's new taxes and laws played so hard on the American colonists that nine of them, who referred to themselves as The Loyal Nine—once their movement expanded, The Loyal Nine, in 1765AD, changed their name to the Sons of Liberty—began protesting the Stamp Act, etc., and boycotting imported British goods. Some of the Loyal Nine were Samuel Adams, Joseph Warren, Paul Revere, Benedict Arnold, Benjamin Edes, John Hancock, and Patrick Henry.

So the colonists began protesting. But events would escalate when, after the Bengal famine in 1770AD and the

**Company was nearing bankruptcy, the Company's directors asked Parliament for financial aid which led Parliament to enact even more anti-American and anti-free-market laws; for instance, the Tea Act that was enacted on May 10, 1773AD, that not only gave the Company a monopoly on the sale of tea to the colonists without the Company paying import tax, but also had a “stealth tax” attached to it for the colonists to pay, which was 3 pennies on every pound of tea. Once uncovered, the hidden tax caused such a storm and added to the resentment that the colonists again began protesting claiming it violated their rights as Englishmen and they shouldn't have to pay taxes due to them being without “representation” in the British Parliament. But, as they protested and were shouting such things as "no taxation without representation", relations deteriorated further when, get this, Parliament provoked the colonists further by insisting that it had the right to legislate for the colonies "in all cases whatsoever"!**

**Due to those new anti-American and anti-free-market laws, at one protest in Boston a skirmish broke out between the British Red Coats and the colonists and perhaps five colonists were shot and killed in an event called the Boston Massacre. But, still, worse was to follow. After the Boston Massacre on December 16, 1773AD, the colonial Sons of Liberty rose violently against Parliament's taxes and laws and the British for killing their men, in an event known as the Boston Tea Party, where, hear this, the Sons of Liberty stormed the British cargo ships and threw the British tea in the ocean! It was a bold act and an act that couldn't go unpunished. But what the British would go on to do in reply to the Boston Tea Party, would lead to all-out war itself and to the loss of a great province. Get this, in reply to the rebellion, Parliament went on to enact even more anti-American and provocative laws; for instance, the Coercive Acts in 1774AD—the American colonists called the Coercive Acts the “Intolerable Acts”—that would restrict American self-governance in the 13 states!**

**Enacted due to the Boston Tea Party incident, the Coercive Acts included the Boston Port Act that shut down the port of Boston until compensation was given; the Massachusetts Government Act that restricted town meetings, etc; the Administration of Justice Act that made**

**British officials immune to criminal prosecution in Massachusetts; the Quartering Act that required colonists to house and quarter British troops on demand, including in their private homes as a last resort; the Quebec Act that gave Canadian Catholics freedom to worship.**

**Incidentally, the rebels at the Boston Tea Party caused so much damage when they destroyed the 340 British chests holding the imported British tea that weighed some 92,000lbs., that the British East India Company suffered a catastrophic loss of some £9,000 pounds or, in today's money, £1.15 million pounds or \$1.7 million dollars!**

**After the Coercive Acts were enacted into law, the American War of Independence began in Massachusetts on April 19, 1775AD, when the Red Coats were ordered to disarm rebel colonists and arrest the leaders which culminated in the Battle of Lexington and the Battle of Concord. After those battles, the American colonists, in the 13 colonies, formed the First Continental Congress that passed an act declaring a trade embargo on all British goods, and formed the American Continental Army on June 14, 1775AD, with George Washington given the command as commander-in-chief. Later, the Sons of Liberty formed the Second Continental Congress that delivered their famous declaration; the Declaration of Independence, on July 4th, 1776AD, which asserted that “Great Britain was not protecting Americans' unalienable rights.”**

**The war, recall, began in 1775AD with the Battle of Lexington and the Battle of Concord. But 3 years later in 1778AD, problems arose for the British when the French allied with the American colonists, Spain allied with France in 1779AD, and the Dutch Republic joined France and Spain in 1780AD. Throughout the war, many battles were won and lost and perhaps just under 200,000 fatalities were reported at the end of it, but mostly caused by disease. But the decisive moment arrived in 1781AD when British forces, under General (Lord) Charles Cornwallis, surrendered to the French-Americans after being defeated at the Battle of Yorktown. So the British lost the war and, it was due to that loss, that Lord North, or peer of the realm Frederick North,**



**2nd Earl of Guilford, resigned as British Prime Minister on March 27, 1782AD, and, since then, became known as “the Prime Minister who lost America”.**

**Post-victory at Yorktown, on September 3, 1783AD, representatives of King George III and Prime Minister Lord Shelburne of Great Britain, and representatives of the United States; Benjamin Franklin, John Adams, and Richard Oswald, to name some, met in Paris and signed the Treaty of Paris which formally concluded the war, recognised American sovereignty, and released all land east of the Mississippi River to the colonists. Later, in 1787AD the Nationalists wrote the United States Constitution, ratified it in 1788AD, and in 1789AD George Washington—the U.S. general who led the Continental Army to victory over the British Army, became the first U.S. President elected under the new U.S. constitution. The Bill of Rights was ratified, along with the Second Amendment, on December 15, 1791AD.**

**So what was it really about? Was the Revolutionary War a genuine struggle between the American colonists who wanted “no taxation without representation” in the British Parliament, and self-governance that was denied them, and the British fascist-state who wanted the colonists just to obey them as the British back home do? I doubt it was a genuine war; rather, (two reasons for why the elites wanted war), (1) after the British realised that the American colonists weren't such the fools and cowards they thought they were; recall, the American colonists reacted badly towards British monopolies, the Sugar Act, and Stamp Act, they stepped up their provocation after the Boston Tea Party incident by, get this, enacting the divisive Coercive Acts or Intolerable Acts in 1774AD which banned American self-governance and imposed direct British rule on them! So why would the British do that? Was that meant to calm the situation down; preclude war, or provoke the colonists into a war where, if the British win, they can hold on to their lucrative province and British monopolies? (2) the elites on all sides were conspiring against the British, American, French, Dutch, and Spanish soldiers and subjects and plotted the American War of Independence to get rid of**

**their racial and class enemies, or the toughest, bravest, and brightest of them leaving but weaklings, cowards, and idiots behind so they can rule over them, make profit from them, cull them, deny them rights, abuse them, and oppress them better than ever before and more easily.**

**It's difficult to find fault with the Founding Fathers; for instance, example 2 is more a traditional peoples' belief; that the ruling elites abuse and conspire against the peoples, rather than being so well proven. However, be that as it may, it must be said, do you recall what some of them were doing before, during, and after the War of Independence? How they permitted African slavery! Or what about what the U.S. Government and Army did to the Native American Indians as their peoples settled their way across North America to fulfill their Manifest Destiny? How the U.S. Army, much of the time, killed and displaced them, How, and get this for irony and supreme evidence of a conspiracy, merely "1 year after" the elites freed the enslaved Africans (1780s AD onwards) and gave them civil rights (1866AD onwards), in 1867AD they unleashed General George Armstrong Custer to fight in the American Indian Wars which, once concluded, left the Native American Indians all but ethnically cleansed!**

**Incidentally, the Native Indians that survived were left to languish in the reservation or concentration camps that the U.S. Government had ordered built to hold them in.**

**So do you see how the political elites treated them differently? How the hypocrits freed the African slaves and gave them civil rights but, near the same time, cleansed the Native Indians! Further, if the U.S. political elites, who descended from the Sons of Liberty and Founding Fathers, were so loyal to their American peoples who won the wars for them against King George III's tyrannical parliament and the Confederate slavers from the southern states, then why didn't the Unionist-elites repatriate the Africans after their emancipation, that would avert future problems which, as all surely knew, must, and did, arise due to the Left's destructive policy of "forced integration"? And why did they later go on to allow America to be overrun by non-White immigrants? Was it due to their idealism or was it a sinister conspiracy against their racial and class enemies?**

# **CHAPTER 3**

## **THE MULTICULTURAL FRENCH REVOLUTION, & THE NAPOLEONIC WARS**

**The Eurasian-Roman armies had conquered Western Europe. The conquest began from 124BC with Entremont and continued with the Gallic Wars and the invasion of Britain in 43AD. Once completed, they faked the narrative that the Germans had defeated Rome freeing the West, before settling in, assuming the identity of the conquered, and hoped nobody would remember their violent takeover, and the evidence I have shown in this book to prove that, amongst other things, is the two Roman frontier walls in Northern Britain, and the images of the British nobility which, recall, I dated back to 610AD or from just after the apparent fall of the Roman Western Empire, and many of those nobles show Oriental and or Asiatic features, however subtle, which means they are Eurasians and not, who they should be, Germans and Celts.**

**The new Eurasian-Roman elites were much more authoritarian, distant, and crueller to the people they came to rule over, and the evidence for that is the fuedal system they created in the 9th century AD, which, recall, through Power of Force, the elites stole the land from the people, and, in the process, made them tenants and serfs, and, because there was no voting system in place; only a fascist dictatorship, the only way the people could reverse that unfair system was by raising forces to fight them and their well-trained armies, so not much hope of that. After the people were feudalised and turned into serfs and tenants, the next big historical events were the rise of the republican movement in England that witnessed Cromwell and the Rump supposedly killing King Charles I of England and establishing England as a republic, and the Industrial Revolution that witnessed massive suffering for the peoples, massive profits for the elites, and the Factory Acts, along with books, such as, The Condition of the Working Class in England, that was published in 1844AD by Engels, bear witness to that. It was due to those crimes against the peoples and their children during the Industrial Revolution Age, that the people began to fight back to stop the abuses**

and to win a more equal say in the running of their nations, which meant the elites, fearing their time had come, really needed to control any political movements that may appear to fight for the oppressed peoples, or, better still, set them up themselves, before a true leader gets in first, so this was when we see, outwith the republican movement in England in the 17th century AD, the rise of the republican and socialist movements in France in the 18th century AD, and, recall, they were supported by elitist French, communist-leftist, writers, such as Rousseau and Voltaire, who were laying the intellectual arguments required to justify the people moving violently against the elites, which suspiciously occurred just before the American War of Independence, the French Revolution, and the Napoleonic Wars began. Now, then, I will tell you about the French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars that had endured for “26 years”, and, just like the English Civil War, how it was very likely a great conspiracy to kill those brave souls who were risking their lives to establish a fairer society for themselves and their children.

The French Revolution began with the storming of the Bastille on July 14, 1789AD, and ended when the Directory, or French Government, collapsed due to a coup led by Napoleon in 1799AD; the Napoleonic Wars lasted from (nonmeclature) 1799AD, or May 18, 1803, to November 20, 1815AD.

Under the Ancien Regime of France, The Estates-General, or French parliament, was organised into three estates: (1) the First Estate represented the catholic Church and clergy who owned around 10% of the land and collected an income tax, called the “tithe”, of around 10% on all peasant crops, and peasant lands were controlled by bishops and abbots. The First Estate Church was exempt from paying taxes to the French government; (2) the Second Estate represented the French nobility who owned around 25% of the land and also collected rents from their peasant tenants; (3) the Third Estate represented 95% of the French people, or lawyers, officials, land owners, tradesmen, and the peasants.

**During the French Revolution, there were two groups of political French elites that held the power; they were, the Girondins and the Montagnards. The right-wing Girondins were named after the Gironde region in France, but were also known as the Brissotins after one of their leaders Jacques Pierre Brissot. The left-wing Montagnards first came to be known during the late-National Legislative Assembly, or NLA, period in 1792AD, and were supposedly composed of mostly middle class members from the Jacobin and Cordelier clubs. The Montagnards were supported by the working class sans-culottes. The Girondins were active in the NLA and the National Convention, or NC, governments, and, along with the Montagnards, before they became enemies, were both part of the Jacobin movement. The Girondins were the strongest group in the Jacobin Revolution until their fall during the insurrection between May 31 to June 2, 1793AD, in which the Montagnards purged them marking the start of the Reign of Terror. Similar to the Montagnards, the Girondins advocated global war against the royalist-held nations, and were, before the purge, the war party during the French war against the First Coalition which consisted of Austria, Prussia, and Britain, and lasted from April 20, 1792 to October 17, 1797AD. Along with some of the other Jacobin figures, Girondin-Brissot plotted to turn Europe into a republic and liberate the oppressed peoples by conquering the Rhineland, Austria, Poland, and the Netherlands. The Girondins and Montagnards were wealthy Communists; for instance, Girondin-Jacques Pierre Brissot led the anti-slavery movement through his club, the Society of the Friends of the Blacks, that he created in Paris in 1788AD, shortly after a similar anti-slavery club had been founded in England in May 1787AD by Thomas Clarkson, and Montagnard-Maximilien Robespierre, who founded the Jacobin Club in 1788AD, whose motto was “Friends of Freedom and Equality”, was a member of the Society of the Friends of the Blacks. Brissot and Robespierre—two important leaders during the French Revolution, and all the elites from the Enlightenment were supporting “equality” for all; they were anti-absolutists; they were Republicans, and they were also anti-Christians.**

**Louis XVI became king of France on May 10, 1774AD, and, due to the ideals of the Elightenment (“liberty”, “equality”, “fraternity”) and the peoples agitating for reforms, made attempts to reform the French nation which included abolishing serfdom, removing land-tax, tolerance toward non-Catholics, and abolishing the death penalty for deserters forced to fight due to the act of conscription. The king's attempted reforms failed due to hostility from the majority of the nobility, which, along with deregulating the grain market that led to an increase in bread prices, and bad harvests leading to near famines, led to a peasant revolt in 1775AD, and a greater dislike of the Ancien Regime.**

**Due to the Seven Years' War and the American Revolution that Louis was engaged in, matters grew worse when France was declared on the brink of bankruptcy. The king's Finance Minister, Anne–Robert–Jacques Turgot, was given the blame before being dismissed and Jacques Necker was brought in. Similar to Turgot, Necker argued that the nobility and clergy should now pay tax to alleviate the financial crisis, which didn't go down well, so Necker was replaced with Charles Alexandre de Calonne who also proposed a new tax code, or a land tax, aimed at increasing tax on the highest earners, the clergy and nobility, but failed to satisfy the First and Second Estates, so, faced with opposition from the king's parliaments, Calonne summoned the Assembly of Notables, but the Assembly failed to endorse Calonne's proposals. In response, the king announced the calling of the Estates-General for May 1789AD, which was the first time the body had been summoned since 1614AD.**

**The Estates-General convened in the Grands Salles des Menus-Plaisirs in Versailles on May 5, 1789AD, with the Third Estate, which represented the largest and poorest class, demanding more votes from the king.**

**Incidentally, the voting system and the entire scam against the Third Estate went this like: each estate held 1 vote each, which meant the First Estate and the Second Estate could always vote down the Third Estate with a 2-1 sickening blow.**

**King Louis's government failed to give double representation or more votes to the Third Estate, so, on June 17, 1789AD, the Third Estate declared themselves the National Assembly (NA).**

**During the Estates-General parliament ordered by the king, resentment towards the Church greatly weakened the clergys' power, which meant, come the founding of the National Constituent Assembly (NCA) in June 1789AD by the Third Estate—the National Constituent Assembly was created on July 9, 1789AD; abolished on September 30, 1791AD, and was succeeded by the National Legislative Assembly (NLA)—the clergy voted to join with them thus disempowering the Estates-General as a governing body. After the Third Estate declared itself the NCA, Louis ordered the closure of the Salle des Etats building where the NCA met, claiming that carpenters required preparing the hall for a royal speech in two days, so the NCA government moved to a nearby indoor tennis court where they swore the Tennis Court Oath on June 20, 1789AD, and swore not to leave until they had given France a constitution. Power was being won and lost, and, after much of the clergy and a minority of nobles joined the Third Estate and the NCA, pro-royalist military units began deploying around Paris and Versailles. It was due to the Third Estate creating the NCA that, in the first place, made Louis, if all is to be believed, panic and close the NCA's parliament and made many of the Parisians suspect he was against the new government by the people, of the people, for the people, but it was the arriving pro-royalist soldiers that sent the people into a blind panic and made the revolutionaries prepare for battle. As the fear took hold in Paris, the NCA went into nonstop session mode to prevent another eviction from their meeting place, and, with that, began the riots in Paris. The rioters won much support from some of the French Guard who were well armed and trained soldiers, and on July 14, 1789AD, the insurgents attacked the Bastille Fortress—a symbol of royal power, that stored weapons and ammunition, as the nobility hastily emigrated or escaped into royalst-held nations as emigres, where they set about financing counter-revolutionaries and sent dispatches to the rest of the monarchs imploring them to help win back the**



**government of France for them. As King Louis retreated out of France, on August 4, 1789AD the NCA went on to abolish the ancient feudal system, which meant the Church could no longer collect its tithe or tax on peasant crops, and the Third Estate no longer had to pay a tax or seigneurial rights to the Second and First Estate. Later still, on August 26, 1789AD, the NCA published the Declaration of the Rights of Man and of the Citizen, which was influenced by Thomas Jefferson (American) working with General Lafayette (French) who introduced it.**

**Now gathering pace, on October 5, 1789AD, after hearing rumours that the king's bodyguards trampled on the national cockade—a coloured tie of ribbons, worn on a hat, that denotes one's political leanings, a group of woman protesters marched to the Hotel de Ville demanding an end to bread shortages and that the king stops blocking the NCA and relocate to Paris to show loyalty to the people. However, ignoring their demands, thousands of armed woman then marched on Versailles where the king was in residence in the Palace of Versailles, and attacked the palace as General Lafayette, with 20,000 National Guardsmen under his command, tried to hold them off. Several of the king's guards were killed during the assault, and things were looking grim, so, after advise from Lafayette, on October 6 the king gave in to the protesters and relocated to Tuileries Palace under the escort of his guards, and the NCA kept the power in France.**

**On November 2, 1789AD, to improve the financial crisis, the NCA declared all Church property the nation's. After seizing Church holdings, the NCA used it to back its new currency; the assignats, and, in December, began selling Church lands to the highest bidder to raise revenue, effectively decreasing the value of the assignats by 25% in just two years. Between 1789 and 1790AD the NCA abolished monastic vows, which meant the religious orders were dissolved and monks and nuns were obliged to return to private life and marry. A new law, called the Civil Constitution of the Clergy, passed on July 12, 1790AD, reduced the clergy to employees of the state, which established an election system for parish priests and bishops, and set a pay rate for the clergy. Many Catholics**

objected to the election system due to it empowering the French Church over the Pope's power in Rome. Later in November 1790AD, the NCA began to require an oath of loyalty to the Civil Constitution from all the members of the clergy, which led to a division between those clergy who swore the required oath and accepted the new arrangement and those who remained loyal to the Pope. Overall, only 24% of the clergy took the oath, so new laws were enacted forcing those who refused to be executed, sent into exile, or deported. Pope Pius VI never accepted the Civil Constitution of the Clergy, which further isolated the Church in France.

On June 21, 1791AD, the French royal family attempted to escape their prison palace in Tuileries, Paris, to the royalist fortress town of Montmedy on the northeastern border of France, hoping to join the rest of the emigres and seek protection from Austria, but were arrested at Varennes-en-Argonne, and, under guard, escorted back to Tuileries arriving on June 25.

The revolution was well underway by the time the royal family was placed under house-arrest in Tuileries Palace causing alarm to the pro-royalist forces, and this was when King Leopold II of Austria, who was the brother of Queen Marie Antoinette, Louis wife, and King Frederick William II of Prussia, along with emigres French nobles, issued the Pillnitz Declaration on August 27, 1791AD, declaring he would restore the French monarch if the European monarchs assisted, and threats were given to the revolutionaries if any harm comes to Louis and his family. In response, on September 3, 1791AD, the NCA forced King Louis XVI to accept the French Constitution, founded in 1791AD, thus turning the absolute monarch into a constitutional monarch, and revolutionary France declared war on the Habsburg monarchy that ruled Prussia and Austria, on April 20, 1792AD, igniting the first French war against the royalist-led First Coalition, that lasted from April 20, 1792 to October 17, 1797AD, but French republican forces were defeated.

**Important point: The National Constituent Assembly was abolished on September 30, 1791AD, and was succeeded by the National Legislative Assembly that was created on October 1, 1791AD, and abolished on September 20, 1792AD.**

**In July 1792AD, the Duke of Brunswick, in a coalition with the Austrians, invaded revolutionary France with a mostly Prussian army, and issued the aggressive "Brunswick Manifesto" on July 25, 1792AD, stating he would end the anarchy, restore the monarch, and severely punish all who resisted his will. But, to his chagrin, shortly after Brunswick's threats reached Paris on August 1, armed revolutionaries attacked Tuileries Palace, where the monarchs was in residence, on August 10, 1792AD, defeating the king's Swiss Guards and forcing the royal family to seek protection from the National Legislative Assembly (NLA). Although under the protection of the NLA, Louis was officially arrested on August 13, 1792AD, and imprisoned in Temple Fortress in Paris. While in prison, along with, on September 3, 1791AD, being forced by the NLA to accept the French Constitution, which turned the absolute monarch into a constitutional monarch, Louis supposedly plotted to escape from France and start a counter-revolution or raise pro-royalist forces to re-capture France.**

**Important point: The National Legislative Assembly was abolished on September 20, 1792AD, and replaced by the National Convention on September 20, 1792AD, after the insurrection on August 10, 1792AD. The National Convention was abolished on November 3, 1795AD, and replaced by the Legislative Body.**

**On September 21, 1792AD, after the French military victory at Valmy on September 20—Valmy was a battle that occurred during the First Coalition War—the monarchy was abolished and the newly created National Convention (NC) declared France a republic. The First French Republic was born. In the same month, the Montagnard-backed September Massacre occurred in 1792AD, that witnessed thousands of Catholics killed.**

**As King Louis was held prisoner in Temple Fortress wondering what his fate would be, events would take a sinister turn when a group, that first came to be known during the NLA period, known as the Mountain Montagnards, demanded that the king be executed. As for the Girondins, they merely advocated holding the king under house-arrest. Due to the stand off, a trial was agreed on, which lasted from December 1792AD to January 1793AD, and, after the trial, the deposed king was convicted of high treason and apparently executed due to his counter-revolutionary activities and his 16-page manifesto, known as the Political Testament of Louis XVI, that rejected the French constitutional system as illegitimate.**

**Post-trial of King Louis, an insurrection, between May 31 to June 2, 1793AD, occurred that seen the Montagnards banning the Girondins from the Jacobin club and the National Convention, and denouncing them as enemies of the revolution and also of reason. A civil-war between the Montagnards and Girondins had commenced, and the assassination of Montagnard-Marat by Girondin supporter Charlotte Corday, on July 13, 1793AD, only increased the hatred towards the Girondins. A short time later, Maximilien Robespierre—one of the Montagnard leaders, began consolidating his control over the Mountain group and Montagnards, through the Committee of Public Safety (CPS)—the Committee of Public Safety was created on April 6, 1793AD, to protect the new republic, and fought the First Coalition and the Vendee revolt—that he was elected to on July 27, 1793AD, but was created on April 6, 1793AD, by Girondin-Maximin Isnard and Girondin-Georges Danton who, after the insurrection, were purged. Through the CPS and the General Police Bureau that gave Robespierre the power to appoint army generals, judges, juries, and deal with domestic threats, he set about eliminating the Hebertists in March 1794AD, and the Dantonists in April 1794AD, due to them apparently colluding against the CPS leaders. Further, post-execution of King Louis, along with an attack on Christians and Christianity that seen churches destroyed and priests massacred and sent to prison, the Reign of Terror occurred from 1793 to 1794AD, under the CPS connected to**

**Montagnard-Robespierre, which witnessed around 20,000 suspected counter-revolutionaries sent to the guillotine. Also in 1793AD the Vendee Genocide occurred with around 200,000 deaths, that witnessed the Vendee peasants rise up against the republican, French, government due to military conscription and changes to the Roman Catholic Church.**

## **THE TRANSITION FROM THE FRENCH REVOLUTION TO THE NAPOLEONIC WARS**

**Between July 1794AD and November 1795AD the Thermidorian Reaction occurred under the leadership of Paul Barras, which was when the Jacobin Club closed. The Thermidorian Reaction occurred when The Plain—a centre political group, and several conspirators, that had broken from The Mountain to form the Thermidorian Left due to Robespierre's centralized government, executed Robespierre on July 28, 1794AD, and the survivors were arrested, executed, and deported. By the end of 1794AD the Mountain devolved into a powerless group called The Crest; by 1795AD the Montagnards had been completely eradicated from the NC. Post-execution of Robespierre and Marat, in a period of violent events called the White Terror, the Thermidorian Left, Monarchists, Gerondins, and the Muscadins hunted down and killed all members of the Jacobin Club and its supporters. On October 5, 1795AD, Napoleon, after given command by Barras, put down a pro-royalist threat to the NC, and a new republican government, called the Directory, was set up on November 2, 1795AD, however, the Directory became so unpopular that Napoleon, through armed force, sacked it on November 9, 1799AD, setting up a dictatorship with him as the Consulate, and, later, on May 18, 1804AD, Napoleon became the Emperor, which brought an end to the First French Republic and brought in the First French Empire.**

## **THE NAPOLEONIC WARS**

**Napoleon rose to power during the French Revolution and became the First Consul of France in 1799AD, then Emperor in 1804AD. Once in power, he created the Grand Army to supposedly protect France from the global**

**Royalists; recall, the English Royalists, who were supposedly at war with the English Republicans during the English Civil War, were restored to the British throne in 1660AD after Lord Protector Cromwell died in 1658AD, so the English Royalists were back in power in Britain.**

**The First and Second Coalitions were put together during the French Revolution Period, and the Second Coalition came to an end after a decade of war when France and Britain signed the Treaty of Amiens on March 27, 1802AD. Due to British anger caused by Napoleon's interference in Germany, Italy, and the Netherlands, however, and also Napoleon annexing Piedmont, his Act of Mediation that established a new Swiss Confederation, and having no say in European affairs, as well as Napoleon being angered over Britain not evacuating Malta as agreed upon, King George III of Great Britain declared war on Napoleon on May 1803AD, and put together the Third Coalition, which lasted from 1803 to 1806AD, and consisted of the Holy Roman Empire, the Habsburg Monarchy, the Austrian Empire led by Leopold II, Russia led by Alexander I, Naples, Sicily, and Sweden. Napoleon responded by assembling 180,000 Blue Coat troops at the staging area Boulogne, to invade Britain, but the planned invasion was eventually called off due to the British fleet's domination of the High Seas, which came about after Britain's decisive defeat over France and Spain at Battle of Trafalgar on October 21, 1805AD. After the British declaration of war, Napoleon invaded Austria and went on to defeat the Austrians during the Ulm Campaign which lasted from September 25 to October 20, 1805AD, and defeated a combined force of Austrians and Russians at the Battle of Austerlitz in December 2, 1805AD, which is considered to be his greatest military victory. A Fourth Coalition, that lasted from 1806 to 1807AD, was formed, which consisted of Prussia, Russia, Britain, Saxony, Sweden, and Sicily, but the French defeated the Prussian Army at the Battle of Jena and the Battle of Auerstedt, then, later, Napoleon invaded Russia and defeated the Russians at the Battle of Friedland in June 1807AD, before forcing the defeated nations of the Fourth Coalition to sign the Treaty of Tilsit in July, which brought about a relative peace in Europe. The peace treaty**

did not hold, however, and, two years later, a Fifth Coalition, that lasted from April 10, to October 14, 1809AD, was formed, which consisted of Austria, Hungary, Tyrol, Britain, Spain, Sicily, Sardinia, and Black Brunswickers, that attacked the French, but was defeated at the Battle of Wagram in July 1809AD. Prior to that, in 1808AD Napoleon invaded Spain and declared Joseph—his brother, the king of Spain, and so began the Peninsular War that lasted for 6 years, and was won by the Spanish, the Portuguese, and the British. On May 16, 1806AD, the British Navy blocked the French coasts, and, later, Napoleon issued the Berlin Decree on November 21, 1806AD, declaring an embargo on Britain.

The war was now causing economic problems for the Russians, so they began violating Napoleon's embargo on Britain. In response, Napoleon invaded Russia in 1812AD with 650,000 Blue Coat troops.

Napoleon's Russian campaign was as follows: After some low-level engagements, the Grand Army defeated a Russian army at the Battle of Smolensk in August, but, after some victories, the Russians retreated deploying the “scorched-earth” tactic to slow the French advance. After months of pursuing the Russians eastwards, the Grand Army lost much of its strength, and much of it due to desertion. Due to the Russian Army's retreat, Tsar Alexander I replaced his Commander-in-Chief before engaging the Grand Army at the Battle of Borodino on September 7, 1912AD, outside Moscow. Around 250,000 men fought in the battle; casualties were around 80,000, but Napoleon failed to destroy the Russian Army, and, unlike the Russians, being so far into enemy territory, he also found it impossible to replace his dead soldiers. Nevertheless, as the Russians again retreated, the bloodied Grand Army moved into Moscow on September 14, but the Tsar did not surrender. The Grand Army was now at a loss; the Russian Army had vanished into retreat; it was now October with temperatures dropping and the dreaded Russian Winter quickly approaching, so, with that, after destroying many Russian cities and farmlands, and many Russians dying as a consequence, Napoleon began the disastrous retreat from Moscow and out of Russia. The retreat was a slow process; the last of Napoleon's troops left



**Russia around December 14, 1812AD, and the Russian campaign was over. At the end of the campaign and the long trek out, due to the winter conditions and coming under constant attack by partisan Russian forces, Napoleon was left with some 30-50,000 soldiers; had lost some 500,000+ men, and a 100,000 of his men were captured. All-in-all, the Russians lost some 200,000 men.**

**In 1813AD a Sixth Coalition, which lasted from March 1813 to May 1814AD, was formed, which consisted of the original coalition, and Napoleon was defeated at the Battle of Leipzig in October 1813AD. After the Allies invaded France and captured Paris in the spring of 1814AD, Napoleon was forced to abdicate on April 6, 1814AD, and he surrendered to the British, before being exiled to the island of Elba near Rome, and the (Capets) Bourbons were restored to power. In February 1815AD Napoleon escaped from his prison on Elba, then, after conquering France by overthrowing the restored catholic monarchy under Louis XVIII—Louis XVI's brother, a Seventh Coalition, also known as the Hundred Days War, which lasted from March 20 to July 8, 1815AD, was formed, that consisted of Britain, Prussia, Austria, Russia, Hanover, Nassau, Brunswick, Sweden, Netherlands, Spain, Portugal, Sardinia, Sicily, Tuscany, Switzerland, Liechtenstein, Denmark, and the French Kingdom, that defeated Napoleon at the Battle of Waterloo on June 18, 1815AD, and Napoleon again surrendered to British forces, but this time at Rochefort on June 22, 1815AD, before being placed under house-arrest on the island of St. Helena. After Napoleon surrendered, the Congress of Vienna, which ended in 1815AD, established new borders aimed at creating a lasting peace, and the Treaty of Paris, that was made on November 20, 1815AD, declared the war over. Post-Napoleon's defeat at Waterloo in 1815AD, as well as the collapse of the Holy Roman Empire, Louis XVIII was restored as the monarch of France, and, to give the people some hope that they hadn't died for nothing when, in fact, they very likely had, the French ruling elites went with the constitutional monarchy system that came into force in 1814AD through the Charter, which replaced the absolutist system of the Ancien Regime of France.**

**So that's what happened throughout the French Revolution. That was the transition from the French Revolution to the Napoleonic Wars, and I also gave you a reasonable and dialectic insight into what had occurred with the Napoleonic Wars. Now, then, let me tell you why I suspect the elites were conspiring against the peasants.**

### **REASONS FOR SUSPECTING THE FRENCH REVOLUTION AND THE NAPOLEONIC WARS A CONSPIRACY**

**The ruling elites would have us believe that the French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars were about the French Republicans moving violently against the global absolute monarchs (the Second Estate nobility), and the Roman Catholic Church (the First Estate clergy), on behalf of the Third Estate and the people in a class war that cost millions of lives, or using the ideals of the Enlightenment, or socio-political concepts, such as, "liberty", "equality", "fraternity", and using revolutionary literature by, amongst others, Emmanuel Joseph Sieyes, Denis Diderot, Adam Smith, Rousseau, and Voltaire, the republican forces swept away Absolutism in France, and also started the decline of the feudal system before the French National Convention declared France a republic on September 21, 1793AD, which abolished the French monarchy, and, during the Napoleonic Wars, Napoleon invaded many of the royalist-held nations to depose the Royalists, and was eventually defeated, but the people still benefited because France became a constitutional monarchy. But, what I believe, the French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars were very likely ruling class conspiracies to kill millions of the common people due to the common people "agitating for reforms" due to the injustices in France; such as, excluding the fascist feudal system that stole the land from the peoples, the horrors witnessed during the Industrial Revolution Age, the people being without the vote, without the trade unions, and without the welfare state, and Napoleon—the commander of the Grand Army, was one of their top French agents tasked with setting Europe ablaze to achieve that objective, which, with assistance from the international Eurasian-Roman ruling class network, he did, and the French elites were**

copying the British and later the American tactic; which was, Republicanism, to agitate the people into rebelling so they could reduce them, and were also using Socialism. Here is the evidence to support my claims:

(1) the French monarchy was suspiciously restored in 1814AD post-French Revolution and just prior to the close of the Napoleonic Wars. So this was identical to what had occurred in England in 1660AD shortly after the close of the English Civil War; namely, the catholic Stuart monarch was restored after Cromwell died in 1658AD; (2) how the elites treated non-Whites compared to their own peoples favours conspiracy; for instance, before and throughout the wars, both the French Montagnard and Girondin elites, and many more of the elites from the Age of Reason and the Enlightenment, were supporting equality for non-Whites, the abolition of the slave-trade, and they were also calling for the Jews to be released from their ghettos. But, recall, it was the “ruling elites” and their “class” who “founded” the African slave-trade, “placed” the Jews in ghettos, and “denied” their own peoples the right to vote. They also gave the peasants the fascist feudal system that began in the 9th century AD, and the savage Industrial Revolution that endured from around the 1750s to the 1850sAD. Further, after Brissot and Robespierre—two of the critical leaders involved in the French Revolution, founded the Jacobin Club and the Friends of the Blacks Club that set the African slaves free on the island of Haiti, hear this, the freed slaves went on to “massacre” all the French-European colonists in 1804AD! Want more? Get this, shortly after Voltaire was shouting such things as “is a Chinaman not equal to a Frenchman?”, his leftist comrades, just as they were also liberating the ghetto Jews and African slaves, were placing Eurasian/White children up the sooted-chimneys, down the dusty-coal mines, and under the dangerous Spinning Jennys where, to collect the fallen cotton, the poor peasant-children would get caught in the moving machinery losing limbs and such things; (3) between those powerful French elites from the first and second estates, they, more or less, gifted the peasants the death penalty for deserters and those who refused conscription to fight in the imperialist, Second Estate, national, armies; a 10% tax on all peasant crops; the

**September Massacre, that occurred in 1792AD, and witnessed thousands and thousands of French peoples killed; the Reign of Terror, that occurred between 1793 to 1794AD, that witnessed thousands of French peoples sent to the guillotine; an attack on Christians and Christianity that witnessed churches being destroyed, priests massacred and sent to prison; the Vendee Genocide that occurred in 1793AD with around 200,000 deaths, and witnessed the Vendee peasants rise up against the republican government due to mandatory military conscription and changes to the Roman Catholic Church; (4) due to the French Revolution, the French elites had done good work getting the people killing each other in their millions, what with conscription, the September Massacre, the Reign of Terror, etc., and the bloody wars against the First and Second Coalitions formed by the global Royalists, but the mass killings of the common, European, peoples came at a heavy price, and the leader-elites looked very suspicious, so now it was time to bring an end to the French Revolution and throw out the old, untrusted, Jacobin, pro-Black, leader-elites who undoubtedly had, by this time, gotten millions of the common peoples killed in their “games”, and bring in their new front-man to continue to carry the bloodshed to the four corners of the world. That new man was, of course, Napoleon, who, get this, suspiciously came to power, post-September Massacre, post-Reign of Terror, and post-Vendee Genocide, or post-mass slaughter of the common peoples, as a dictator after he sacked the French Directory on November 9, 1799AD, which brought an end to the First French Republic and brought in the First French Empire.**

**Incidentally, along with destroying the French economy, the French Directory plundered half of Europe bringing the spoils to the Louvre in Paris.**

**(5) on all sides of the French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars, the leaders; for instance, to name some, King Louis XVI, Maximilian Robespierre, Jacques Pierre Brissot, Georges Danton, Jean-Paul Marat, Lazare Carnot, Napoleon Bonaparte, Horatio Nelson, George III, William Pitt, the Duke of Wellington, Francis I, Leopold II, Alexander I, Gustav VI, and Gebhard Leberecht von Blucher, were Eurasians and elites, and, suspiciously so, outwith the French king and queen, Robespierre, Danton,**

**Nelson, Marat, and Nelson who was killed in combat at the Battle of Trafalgar in 1805AD, none of them were killed; those who did die, however, were millions from the lower ranks; (6) if they did die, the execution of King Louis XVI, who was guillotined on January 21, 1793AD, and Queen Antoinette, who was guillotined on October 16, 1793AD, may very well have been a late strategy, deployed by the elites, to re-authenticate the revolution and the leaders of it due to the elites wanting more victims to enlist in their armies to reduce them, but also to throw off anyone who suspects the wars were a fix. Remember, by that time in European history; around the late-18th century AD, and due to the people having no vote and the dangers in the slums and the factories of the Industrial Revolution—according to writers such as Haley, in England during periods of the Industrial Revolution, life expectancy was between 26 to 45, and 25 to 33% of all children were dead before they were 5 years old—the people had lost all trust in their leaders who ruled their nations, which meant the elites had to sacrifice or fake the deaths of the French king and queen to regain or maintain their trust to keep them fighting so they could continue to get rid of them, and the ruse worked well; millions of the common people killed each other during the French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars.**

**Incidentally, what we witnessed with the apparent execution of the French king and queen may have been the exact same strategy that the future socialist-republican elites deployed after the Bolshevik Revolution occurred in 1917AD, when in 1918AD Bolshevik Command ordered the cold-blooded murder of Tzar Nicholas II and the Russian Royal Family; to reiterate, they killed them, or faked it, to authenticate the revolutionary leaders in order to win the trust of the Russian peasants in order to get them fighting so the revolutionary leaders could kill millions of them, and, of course, millions of the peasants did die;**

**(7) Napoleon invaded many nations in order to defeat the pro-royalist peasant armies and the royalist-elites who had declared war on him in 1803AD; Britain being the guilty party, recall. But although Napoleon defeated their**

armies in the field and city, is why he's viewed as a great commander, he suspiciously failed to purge “any” of his ideological enemies or the royalist elites from those enemy nations; (8) although the French king and queen were both supposedly executed by the very same socialist-republican political movement that Napoleon had sprang from and represented and were related to the powerful royal families he was locked in a war with; for instance, Queen Marie Antoinette of France, who was later sent to the guillotine after the National Convention abolished the monarchy on September 21, 1792AD, was the sister of King Leopold II of Austria who had also declared war on Napoleon, he surrendered twice to the pro-royalist British, but, hear this, “twice” the British elites suspiciously failed to execute him. Specifically, (a) after Napoleon's defeat at Leipzig in October 1813AD, and his subsequent abdication and surrender in 1814AD to British forces, the British failed to execute him; he was merely exiled to Elbe; (b) after Napoleon suspiciously escaped from his prison on Elbe, and his later ultimate defeat at the Battle of Waterloo in 1815AD, he again surrendered to British forces and they again failed to execute him; hear this, he was merely held under house arrest on the island of Saint Helena where he died 7 years after his surrender to the British! Napoleon died in 1821AD; (9) I discovered suspicious flaws in the narratives of the French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars; for instance, the leader elites, due to them failing to execute Napoleon post surrender—which appears suspicious due, recall, to Napoleon being part of that very same socialist-republican gang that had supposedly executed the king and queen in 1793AD, and twice they failed to execute him although the British held Napoleon twice—putting around a late counter-intelligence story; “that perhaps Napoleon was poisoned by the British after his surrender”, is just one of those suspicious flaws; (10) post Napoleon's ultimate defeat by Wellington and Blucher, at Waterloo in 1815AD, the French monarch was restored under Louis XVIII, and—this was the elites calming the people down by given them something back and some hope after millions of them had died in a 26-year pointless war—the monarch's powers was merely restricted through a new constitution called the Charter (implemented in 1814AD), so all that

really changed post-French Revolution and Napoleonic Wars, was that, shockingly so, reader, hear this, France became a constitutional monarch; furthermore, to make up for the fact that the 1789AD to 1815AD conflict or conflicts appears suspicious, the ruling elites put out a second counter-intelligence story stating that the revolution had actually “benefited” the French people by ending the hated feudal system, where, recall, if you failed to obey the feudal lords, they would evict you and your family from your own land and farm. But, hear this, although the republican revolutionaries did abolish the feudal system in August of 1789AD, the feudal system was already grinding to an end thanks to the Industrial Revolution that had already begun decades earlier in England with Samuel Compton's Spinning Muels that he invented in 1746AD, which was when the elites began to move the people out of the countryside and into the cities to work in the unhealthy, dangerous, factories for profit; (11) so if that isn't suspicious enough for you, reader, then what about the incriminating fact, or the key factor that ties the elites together in a neat little bundle of plotting against the French peoples, that the multicultural outlook; which was, equality for non-Whites living in nations not of their own, that was being promoted by the Republicans and Napoleon—for instance, recall, Girondin-Jacques Pierre Brissot led the anti-slavery movement through his club Society of the Friends of the Blacks; Montagnard-Maximilien Robespierre, who founded the Jacobin Club, was a member of the Society of the Friends of the Blacks, and in 1797AD Napoleon called for an end to Jewish segregation and full “equality” for them—“continued” to be promoted in France even “after” the republican revolution and the Napoleonic Wars came to an end and the monarch was restored! So all the elites; both Republicans and Royalists, were anti-nationalist; they were Communists, and the wars were very likely a fix.

Post-wars, the French monarchs did well because they were restored, under Louis XVIII, as a constitutional monarchy. The non-Whites did well because “equality” continued to be promoted and supported. But the European peoples, on the other hand, failed miserably because, although millions had died all across Europe and the



colonies, they were still without the trade unions, still without the welfare state, still suffering in the factories of the Industrial Revolution, and still mostly without the vote or Universal Suffrage! Further, hear this, just a few decades after the 26-year war had concluded with the inevitable defeat of Napoleon at the Battle of Waterloo in 1815AD, things had gotten much worse when African Americans failed to be repatriated after slavery was abolished, but were instead, hear this, given equality; for example, the Civil Rights Act 1866AD, and the Civil Rights Act 1875AD also called the Enforcement Act. The 1875AD Act was signed into law by President Ulysses S. Grant, which “forced” the Americans to share their “accommodation and transport” with non-Whites. Need more? Later still, millions of non-Whites were permitted to relocate in to the White nations, and it wasn't due to idealism; it was to take away White jobs, incite the peoples against each other, and speed up the collapse to reduce the populations!

So the pseudo friends of the Blacks were clearly still in power well after the 1789 to 1815AD war(s) had concluded.

In the end, due to the ruling elites controlling all sides during the French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars, the elites won out and their anti-nationalist and pro-poverty agenda continued with such a pace and caused such a backlash from the peoples in Europe, that, due to the peoples not trusting the republican-Socialists due to the aftermath of the French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars, not only did the elites require and invent a new social organisation theory to lead the peoples to total disaster; which was, Communism, and is rather identical to classical Socialism; both are parochial anti-nationalist; both are pro-multicultural, and require more fixed wars to kill them; which, for instance, was the Spring of Nations that began in 1848AD, and WWI that began in 1914AD and, at the end of it, killed 20 million more of the common people and half of them civilians, but their anti-nationalist and pro-poverty agenda actually later led to the rise of pro-White Hitler and National Socialism in the 1920s, the Third Reich in the 1930s, and to WWII itself!

All-in-all, it appears the French elites were copying the tried-and-tested English strategy for reducing the people or getting rid of their enemies, which, again, was Republicanism, and, recall, Republicanism moved parallel to the elites also using “religion” as a tool to control and kill the masses, which they also successfully did.

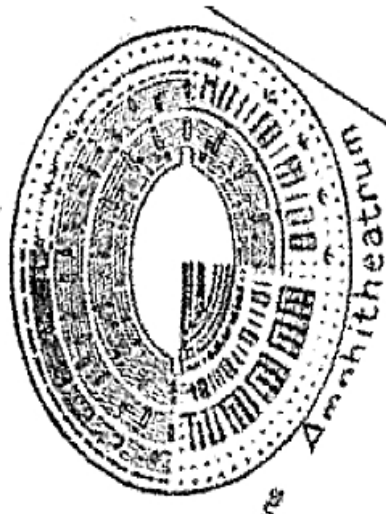
Incidentally, strange that the enlightened republican elites from the Jacobin Club and the Age of Reason would use, as their Seals, the Roman laurel wreath, which means, “the victor”, in the exact shape of the ancient Roman Colloseum where hundreds of thousands were killed for sport and as a punishment, and the Roman fasces, which means “group unity”. So did the elites view the French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars as the Games? See seals below.



Seal – Jacobin Club



Seal – French Republic



Roman Colloseum

# **CHAPTER 4**

## **THE MULTICULTURAL OUTLOOK OF MARX**

**In essence, Communism and Socialism are the exact same social organisation theories; Communism's ethos is equality for all, and “equality for all” is also the ethos of the socio-economic theory defined as “Socialism”. Both promote and support equality, multicultural and classless societies, and they also support the means of production being owned by the worker instead of the capitalist who takes most of the profits but does the least labour. Communists and Socialists are also Leftists.**

**Up to Karl Marx, here are many of the sources for socialist and communist thought and activity: (1) the Arabic Roshinya or Illuminated ones in Afghanistan and Persia. Arabia was the seat of all the knowledge in the world, and the major teachings of the Roshinya were the abolition of private property, the elimination of religion, the abolition of nation states, the belief that illumination emanated from the Supreme Being, and a plan to reshape the social system of the world by first taken control of nations one by one; (2) Ancient Greece; (3) the Roman Empire; (4) in the 5th century AD the Mazdak movement in Persia, today's Iran, were criticising the privileges of the noble classes, the clergy, the holders of private property, and wanted to create an egalitarian society; (5) the medieval Christian Church; (6) in 1516AD Thomas More published the treatise Utopia, where he wrote about a society based on common ownership of property; (7) in the 17th century AD the Puritan Diggers advocated the abolition of private ownership of land; (8) Rousseau, Voltaire, and Payne, and with the French Socialists winning political power through the French Revolution which began in 1789AD; (8) the trades unions; (9) Owenism and Chartism; (10) Marx and Engels in the mid-19th century AD.**

**Incidentally, it was due to the Reform Bill of 1824AD in England, that working men won the right to “associate” with each other, which quickly led to, throughout the industries, trade unions being formed to protect the workers**

from the elites and the factory/housing owners who, in turn for their hard labour, gave them mostly low wages, bad clothes, tarnished food, and slum-condition housing to live in. Free association by working men was illegal before the Reform Bill was enacted, but men still set up secret associations, which, in Britain, dates back to 1812AD when a group of Glasgow weavers held an illegal strike. Secret associations proved ineffective; the protesting men were usually attacked and such things by the hired thugs of the political-elites. But, later, or after the Reform Bill was enacted into law, the working classes grew stronger and stronger until eventually they won out, somewhat.

Here are some of the communist ideologies: Marxism—designed by Marx and Engels in the mid-19th century AD, is the most favoured ideology of the communist movements. The rest are Leninism, Trotskyism, Marxism–Leninism that was developed by Stalin, which means it can also be called Stalinism, and Maoism that was developed by the Chinese leader Mao Zedong, and is a form of Marxism–Leninism. There are differences between those communist ideologies that you can investigate for yourself, but, to give a little here, Stalinism represents Socialism in one country, and Trotskyism represents permanent world revolution.

Modern Socialism came about with the French writers prior to the French Revolution in 1789AD. But by the middle of the 19th century AD and due, I suspect, to the people not trusting the Socialists due to the suspicions surrounding the aftermath of the French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars, Communism had somewhat taken its place; as Communism was gearing up for world domination and became the violent wing of the Left, Socialism became merely a non-violent force to negotiate, through leftist organisations; such as, the Fabian Society and the Labour parties across greater Europe, the Capitalists into returning a fairer society for the workers, the lower classes, minorities, and foreigners.

The glorious ideals seen prior to and during the French Revolution, failed to bring the people the fairer societies they fought for; only the immigrants and foreigners seem to have benefited if a constitutional monarch is to

viewed as insignificant which it should be, so, by the middle of the 19th century AD and decades after the French Revolution had ended, the people remained radicalised and continued to agitate for political and social reforms, and this was when Marx appeared on the political-scene with his new name for Socialism; which was, Communism. Marx was leading an intellectual movement whose anger was rooted in the serfdom of the feudal system, the millions that had died throughout the Industrial Revolution period, the conscription acts that forced millions of the common people to fight and die in the Spring of Nations, the French Revolution, the Napoleonic Wars, and the people having no vote on who runs their nations, and believed a communist revolution would manifest due to the inequality in the nations that the Capitalists or Royalists had created; he believed a class war would erupt between the proletariat: the people who do the labour, and the bourgeoisie: the elites who typically own the “means of production”—in other words, the rich own the factories and machines (mode of production) and profit greatly; the poor produce the commodities through hard, dangerous, work, but barely survive—which would see the manifestation of the world's first socialist and classless society. Effectively, Marx's communist theories, published in his book, Manifesto of the Communist Party, on February 21, 1848AD, that, incidentally, had suspiciously emerged just in time for the Spring of Nations that had taken place on February “23”, 1848AD—although the Spring of Nations was sold to the people as a class war, to me, it appears more like another ruling class conspiracy to reduce those very people who were agitating and ready to fight for changes in their nations—proved prophetic, and Communism: the new ideological weapon to supposedly help the people and destroy the Capitalists, was carried forward by the leaders of the Bolshevik (or Red October) Revolution in 1917AD, Lenin, Stalin, and Trotsky, as they successfully established, outwith the previous February 1917AD socialist revolution in Russia, the world's first communist or socialist state in Russia.

So Marx was legitimising and encouraging a communist revolution aimed at the overthrow of the ruling

elites and the Capitalists, through the social hypothesis; Communism, that had swept to power later with the Bolsheviks in 1917AD. But did Marx honestly believe in equality and multicultural societies where all men are equal regardless to their class, race, or nationality, or was it all just a grand strategy to initiate conflict in order that the elites could reduce millions of the people or destroy their racial and class enemies? Before making your decision, know this, outwith Marx being one of the elites, he identified with, supported, and promoted a radical idea; which was, equality for all, that had only 55 years previously led to, on the face of it, at least, the execution of the French king and queen in 1793AD. But, hear this, similar to the Old Pretender, the Young Pretender, Rousseau, Voltaire, Payne, and Napoleon who were also elites and were also encouraging the people to rise up and fight the elites, which they did and died in their millions, the powerful elites he was inciting the lower classes to overthrow allowed him (and Engels) to escape unpunished! Marx died aged 64 on March 14, 1883AD—100 years before the anti-British and treasonous Maastricht Treaty came into effect in 1993AD—due to natural causes; Engels died aged 74 on August 5, 1895AD, also due to natural causes.

In conclusion on the Multicultural Outlook Of Marx: Although Marx was a very sophisticated writer and thinker, I still suspect that Marx and the rest of the communist and socialist leaders weren't honestly about saving the peoples from the Royalists or Capitalists, but were more about using and controlling the leftist movements of Communism and Socialism to slow down the pace of change and to mobilise the lower classes into violently attempting to overthrow the elites so the elites could kill millions of them, which, recall, they did in the French Revolution, the Napoleonic Wars, and the Spring of Nations conflicts. Further, Marx's supporters were no Nightingales, Hoods, or Bernardos; hear this, after the communist revolution in Russia, the Communists were involved in some of the most appalling violence and mass murder the world had ever seen, and most of it took place in China and Eastern and Western Europe; for instance, in China, the Communists are said to have killed 90 million people; in the Soviet Union

or Russia, the Communists had, on the face of it, at least, murdered the Russian Royal Family (the Romanovs) including the royal children; they had worked to death millions of their apparent class and political enemies in the not so well known Gulag death camps in Siberia, which is in Northern Soviet Union or Russia; they had killed millions more in the notorious and admitted Red Terror; they had killed millions due to Collectivisation; in the West, during the Spanish Civil War—the Spanish Civil War lasted from 1936AD until nationalist Franco had defeated the communist forces in 1937AD—the Communists were accused of such appalling atrocities that Orwell himself turned his back on them for once he had openly embraced them and even fought for them risking his very life itself; the U.S. also turned its back on the Communists, which was merely 2 short years after WWII drew to a close, which, incidentally, is another one of those strange historical incidents that I view as suspicious; for instance, America's grand volte face “after” they had allied with the Soviet-Communists to successfully bring down Hitler, even though the Communists had killed tens of millions of people before WWII began!

Incidentally, although it's curious that the Spring of Nations conflict began “almost exactly in time” for Marx's book being published; “2 days after he published his book”, to be exact, and recall also that the Seven Weeks War between Austria and Prussia, also emerged only two decades after Marx published his book, how curious is it also that Marx had also but previously published a book pointing to the “Jews”—yes, the JEWS, as a worldly force to be reckoned with? It's right to be suspicious; and many are, for instance, blaming the Jews may be an ancient strategy that the Eurasian elites have been using since Roman times right up to today, and Marx was one of the Eurasian elites. But is there any other books published by the rulerd blaming the Jews that could support my long-held suspicion that the whiter-looking Eurasians blame the not so White-looking Eurasian-Jews as part of a war strategy aimed at deflecting blame from themselves and fooling their racial and even class enemies? Yes, a notorious, non-PC, book called The Protocols of the Elders of Zion, or the Protocols of Zion,



that was put out, I suspect, by the Eurasian rulers and certainly distributed in 1903AD in Russia. Again, The Protocols reveal that the Jews are behind the anti-White agenda, but they also reveal a sinister “Jewish plot” to become the leaders of the goyim—the non-Jews, so they can betray them, destroy them, and conquer the world! The Protocols also include a secret plan to wreck and destroy all non-Jewish religions; to control the press, media, education, and capital; to bring in an “international Super-Government” with them, the Jews, as the overlords, and to use the dumb goyim to do their bidding by, hear this, playing to their egos and ambitions by making them masons in their masonic lodges! As insane as it all sounds, the Protocols should be taken serious because everything they planned for actually did come true, so, to me, it's a very critical document, indeed, and you should read them very carefully. Furthermore, not only have The Protocols almost achieved their objectives, but they were suspiciously published at a critical time when the ruling elites and the people really were in a bad state with much animosity between them due to the pro-poverty agenda that the elites were pushing and had created; hear this, The Protocols were published and distributed in 1903AD in Soviet-Russia “after” the Industrial Revolution, the French Revolution, the Napoleonic Wars, Marx's publication, the Spring of Nations, the Crimea War, the Seven Weeks War, and “shortly before” the Balkan War from 1912 to 1913AD, the Russian civil wars, the Bolshevik Revolution, WWI, the rise of Hitler and National Socialism, WWII, and the Welfare State. Infact, they emerged right in the middle of absolute chaos itself, so it was a good time for the elites to throw off their enemies and get them chasing the Jews, which many did, while the whiter-looking Eurasian elites survive intact. For an example of that strategy being used from Roman times up to today, know the following: (1) that I know of, Jews were first expelled from Rome in 139BC by Hispanus; (2) in 59BC Cicero wrote that “the Jews hold too much power in the public assemblies”; (3) in 1543AD Luther, the Eurasian who not only recklessly divided the Christians to, what I believe, set them against each other, published a book called The Jews and Their Lies, which also blamed the Jews for the problems in the world; (4) in 1844AD and just prior

to the Spring of Nations conflict, Marx published the **Worldly Cult Of The Jews** acknowledging the Jews as an international potent force; (5) after Marx put out his book on the Jews, and after the Protocols were distributed in 1903AD, Eurasian-Chamberlain published his book which also blamed the Jews; (6) after Chamberlain's publication, Eurasian-Ford published many copies of the Protocols, so he too was blaming the Jews, and Hitler, who was schooled into thinking that the Jews are the principle enemy of the White race and others, by, amongst others, the anti-Semitic or anti-Jewish Christian Socialist Party, published **Mein Kampf** which also blamed the Jews. Incidentally, you can view a prepared list in **Eurasian-Roman Infiltration**, of all those who were blaming the Jews pre-WWII, along with some of the post-WWII Jew-blaming writers; such as, William Pierce who wrote the **Turner Diaries**; George Lincoln Rockwell who wrote **White Power**; Professor Kevin MacDonald who wrote his trilogy; one being **The Culture of Critique**; David Duke who wrote **My Awakening** and also **Jewish Supremacy**; David Irvine who wrote **Hitler's War**, and Ernst Zundel who wrote many books exposing the Jews, and was sent to prison for denying the Holocaust.

As I have shown, blaming the Jews may be an old tactic used by the Eurasian elites to throw off, confuse, and fool their racial and class enemies, and The Protocols are just one of those “throw off, confuse, and fool them” pieces that suspiciously emerged in the run up to serious conflict. Because The Protocols are the subject at hand, in the following is my own collection, that I have extracted from The Protocols, for you to read over and think on but also for you to get a idea of what the elites were up to because, as stated previously, what The Protocols planned for really did come true; for instance, the elites own the banks and keep the peoples poorer than they should be through usury or high interest rate lending which gets them in debt; the elites own and control the press, television, radio, and use those medias to fanatically shove the deviant and multicultural agendas down all our throats until we, the people, are totally corrupted and separated, never to be reconciled, and, as of October 2001AD and post-9/11, the spying police state, to protect the governors of the fascist-dictatorship, has

manifested, which means The Protocols' objectives are all but fulfilled less the collapse, the reduction in populations, and the NWO.

Before reading the passages from the Protocols of Zion that I have inserted below, be aware that (a) “goy” means “non-Jew”, and “goyim” means “non-Jews”; (b) the writer agrees with me that the agenda to control and enslave the goyim, began in Rome; the writer states that the Jews have been plotting against the goyim for the “past twenty centuries”, which, if the Protocols were created in 1903AD as it is claimed by many, takes us back to 97BC, and what happened in 139BC and 59BC or before and after 97BC, reader? Do you recall what I wrote previously? “That the Jews were expelled from Rome”, and “the Jews hold too much power in the public assemblies”; (c) The Protocols' objectives were not realised by the “Jews” per se; rather, they may have realised by the “Eurasians”:

#### **PROTOCOL NO. 1**

**“Putting aside fine phrases we shall speak of the significance of each thought: by comparisons and deductions we shall throw light upon surrounding facts.”**

**“What I am about to set forth, then, is our system from the two points of view, that of ourselves and that of the goyim (i.e., non-Jews).”**

**“It must be noted that men with bad instincts are more in number than the good, and therefore the best results in governing them are attained by violence and terrorisation, and not by academic discussions. Every man aims at power, everyone would like to become a dictator if only he could, and rare indeed are the men who would not be willing to sacrifice the welfare of all for the sake of securing their own welfare.”**

**“Political freedom is an idea but not a fact. This idea one must know how to apply whenever it appears necessary with this bait of an idea to attract the masses of the people to one's party for the purpose of crushing another who is in authority. This task is rendered easier if the opponent has himself been infected with the idea of freedom, so-called liberalism, and, for the sake of an idea, is willing to yield some of his power. It is precisely here that the triumph of our theory appears: the slackened reins of government are immediately, by the law of life, caught up and gathered together by a new hand, because the blind might of the nation cannot for one single day exist without guidance, and the new authority merely fits into the place of the old already weakened by liberalism.”**

**“Our countersign is—Force and Make-believe. Only force conquers in political affairs, especially if it be concealed in the talents essential to statesmen. Violence must be the principle, and cunning and make-believe the rule for governments which do not want to lay down their crowns at the feet of agents of some new power. This evil is the one and only means to attain the end, the good. Therefore we must not stop at bribery, deceit and treachery when they should serve towards the attainment of our end. In politics one must know how to seize the property of others without hesitation if by it we secure submission and sovereignty.”**

**“Our State, marching along the path of peaceful conquest, has the right to replace the horrors of war by less noticeable and more satisfactory sentences of death, necessary to maintain the terror which tends to produce blind submission. Just but merciless severity is the greatest factor of strength in the State: not only for the sake of gain but also in the name of duty, for the sake of victory, we must keep to the programme of**

violence and make-believe. The doctrine of squaring accounts is precisely as strong as the means of which it makes use. Therefore it is not so much by the means themselves as by the doctrine of severity that we shall triumph and bring all governments into subjection to our super-government. It is enough for them to know that we are merciless for all disobedience to cease.”

“Far back in ancient times we were the first to cry among the masses of the people the words "Liberty, Equality, Fraternity," words many times repeated since those days by stupid poll-parrots who from all sides round flew down upon these baits and with them carried away the well-being of the world, true freedom of the individual, formerly so well guarded against the pressure of the mob. The would-be wise men of the goyim, the intellectuals, could not make anything out of the uttered words in their abstractness; did not note the contradiction of their meaning and inter-relation: did not see that in nature there is no equality, cannot be freedom: that Nature herself has established inequality of minds, of characters, and capacities, just as immutably as she has established subordination to her laws: never stopped to think that the mob is a blind thing, that upstarts elected from among it to bear rule are, in regard to the political, the same blind men as the mob itself, that the adept, though he be a fool, can yet rule, whereas the non-adept, even if he were a genius, understands nothing in the political—to all these things the goyim paid no regard; yet all the time it was based upon these things that dynastic rule rested: the father passed on to the son a knowledge of the course of political affairs in such wise that none should know it but members of the dynasty and none could betray it to the governed. As time went on the meaning of the dynastic transference of the

true position of affairs in the political was lost, and this aided the success of our cause.”

“In all corners of the earth the words "Liberty, Equality, Fraternity" brought to our ranks, thanks to our blind agents, whole legions who bore our banners with enthusiasm. And all the time these words were canker-worms at work boring into the well-being of the goyim, putting an end everywhere to peace, quiet, solidarity and destroying all the foundations of the goy States. As you will see later, this helped us to our triumph; it gave us the possibility, among other things, of getting into our hands the master card—the destruction of the privileges, or in other words of the very existence of the aristocracy of the goyim, that class which was the only defence peoples and countries had against us. On the ruins of the natural and genealogical aristocracy of the goyim we have set up the aristocracy of our educated class headed by the aristocracy of money. The qualifications for this aristocracy we have established in wealth, which is dependent upon us, and in knowledge, for which our learned elders provide the motive force.”

“Our triumph has been rendered easier by the fact that in our relations with the men whom we wanted we have always worked upon the most sensitive chords of the human mind, upon the cash account, upon the cupidity, upon the insatiability for material needs of man; and each one of these human weaknesses, taken alone, is sufficient to paralyse initiative, for it hands over the will of men to the disposition of him who has bought their activities.”

“The abstraction of freedom has enabled us to persuade the mob in all countries that their government is nothing but the steward of the people who are the owners of the country, and

that the steward may be replaced like a worn-out glove.”

“It is this possibility of replacing the representatives of the people which has placed them at our disposal, and, as it were, given us the power of appointment.”

## **PROTOCOL NO. 2**

“In the hands of the States of to-day there is a great force that creates the movement of thought in the people, and that is the Press.”

“The part played by the Press is to keep pointing out requirements supposed to be indispensable, to give voice to the complaints of the people, to express and to create discontent. It is in the Press that the triumph of freedom of speech finds its incarnation. But the goyim States have not known how to make use of this force; and it has fallen into our hands. Through the Press we have gained the power to influence while remaining ourselves in the shade; thanks to the Press we have got the gold in our hands, notwithstanding that we have had to gather it out of oceans of blood and tears. But it has paid us, though we have sacrificed many of our people. Each victim on our side is worth in the sight of God a thousand goyim.”

## **PROTOCOL NO. 3**

“All people are chained down to heavy toil by poverty more firmly than ever they were chained by slavery and serfdom; from these, one way and another, they might free themselves, these could be settled with, but from want they will never get away. We have included in the constitution such rights as to the masses appear fictitious and not actual rights. All these so-called "People's Rights" can exist only in idea,



**an idea which can never be realised in practical life. What is it to the proletariat labourer, bowed double over his heavy toil, crushed by his lot in life, if talkers get the right to babble, if journalists get the right to scribble any nonsense side by side with good stuff, once the proletariat has no other profit out of the constitution save only those pitiful crumbs which we fling them from our table in return for their voting in favour of what we dictate, in favour of the men we place in power, the servants of our agentur. . . . Republican rights for a poor man are no more than a bitter piece of irony, for the necessity he is under of toiling almost all day gives him no present use of them, but on the other hand robs him of all guarantee of regular and certain earnings by making him dependent on strikes by his comrades or lockouts by his masters.”**

**“The people under our guidance have annihilated the aristocracy, who were their one and only defence and foster-mother for the sake of their own advantage which is inseparably bound up with the well-being of the people. Nowadays, with the destruction of the aristocracy, the people have fallen into the grips of merciless money-grinding scoundrels who have laid a pitiless and cruel yoke upon the necks of the workers.”**

**“We appear on the scene as alleged saviours of the worker from this oppression when we propose to him to enter the ranks of our fighting forces—Socialists, Anarchists, Communists—to whom we always give support to in accordance with an alleged brotherly rule (of the solidarity of all humanity) of our social masonry. The aristocracy, which enjoyed by law the labour of the workers, was interested in seeing that the workers were well fed, healthy and strong. We are interested in just the**

opposite—in the diminution, the killing out of the GOYIM. Our power is in the chronic shortness of food and physical weakness of the worker because by all that this implies he is made the slave of our will, and he will not find in his own authorities either strength or energy to set against our will. Hunger creates the right of capital to rule the worker more surely than it was given to the aristocracy by the legal authority of kings.”

“By want and the envy and hatred which it engenders we shall move the mobs and with their hands we shall wipe out all those who hinder us on our way.”

“When the hour strikes for our Sovereign Lord of all the World to be crowned it is these same hands which will sweep away everything that might be a hindrance thereto.”

“The goyim have lost the habit of thinking unless prompted by the suggestions of our specialists. Therefore they do not see the urgent necessity of what we, when our kingdom comes, shall adopt at once, namely this, that it is essential to teach in national schools one simple, true piece of knowledge, the basis of all knowledge—the knowledge of the structure of human life, of social existence, which requires division of labour, and, consequently, the division of men into classes and conditions.”

“This hatred will be still further magnified by the effects of an economic crisis, which will stop dealings on the exchanges and bring industry to a standstill. We shall create by all the secret subterranean methods open to us and with the aid of gold, which is all in our hands, a universal economic crisis whereby we shall throw upon the streets whole mobs of workers simultaneously in all the countries of Europe.”

**“These mobs will rush delightedly to shed the blood of those whom, in the simplicity of their ignorance, they have envied from their cradles, and whose property they will then be able to loot.”**

**"Ours" they will not touch, because the moment of attack will be known to us and we shall take measures to protect our own.”**

**“We have demonstrated that progress will bring all the goyim to the sovereignty of reason. Our despotism will be precisely that; for it will know how by wise severities to pacificate all unrest, to cauterise liberalism out of all institutions.”**

**“When the populace has seen that all sorts of concessions and indulgences are yielded it in the name of freedom it has imagined itself to be sovereign lord and has stormed its way to power, but, naturally, like every other blind man it has come upon a host of stumbling blocks, it has rushed to find a guide, it has never had the sense to return to the former state and it has laid down its plenipotentiary powers at our feet. Remember the French Revolution, to which it was we who gave the name of "Great": the secrets of its preparations are well known to us for it was wholly the work of our hands.”**

**“Ever since that time we have been leading the peoples from one disenchantment to another, so that in the end they should turn also from us in favour of that King-Despot of the blood of Zion, whom**

**“At the present day we are, as an international force, invincible, because if attacked by some we are supported by other States. It is the bottomless rascality of the goyim peoples, who crawl on their bellies to force, but are merciless towards weakness, unsparing to faults and**

**indulgent to crimes, unwilling to bear the contradictions of a free social system but patient unto martyrdom under the violence of a bold despotism—it is those qualities which are aiding us to independence. From the premier-dictators of the present day the goyim peoples suffer patiently and bear such abuses as for the least of them they would have beheaded twenty kings.”**

**“What is the explanation of this phenomenon, this curious inconsequence of the masses of the peoples in their attitude towards what would appear to be events of the same order?”**

**“It is explained by the fact that these dictators whisper to the peoples through their agents that through these abuses they are inflicting injury on the States with the highest purpose—to secure the welfare of the peoples, the international brotherhood of them all, their solidarity and equality of rights. Naturally they do not tell the peoples that this unification must be accomplished only under our sovereign rule.”**

**“And thus the people condemn the upright and acquit the guilty, persuaded ever more and more that it can do whatsoever it wishes.”**

**“Thanks to this state of things the people are destroying every kind of stability and creating disorders at every step.”**

**“The word "freedom" brings out the communities of men to fight against every kind of force, against every kind of authority, even against God and the laws of nature. For this reason we, when we come into our kingdom, shall have to erase this word from the lexicon of life as implying a principle of brute force which turns mobs into bloodthirsty beasts.”**

**“These beasts, it is true, fall asleep again every time when they have drunk their fill of blood, and at such times can easily be riveted into their chains. But if they be not given blood they will not sleep and continue to struggle.”**

**“In order to give the goyim no time to think and take note, their minds must be diverted towards industry and trade. Thus, all the nations will be swallowed up in the pursuit of gain and in the race for it will not take note of their common foe. But again, in order that freedom may once for all disintegrate and ruin the communities of the goyim, we must put industry on a speculative basis: the result of this will be that what is withdrawn from the land by industry will slip through the hands and pass into speculation, that is, to our classes.”**

**“The intensified struggle for superiority and shocks delivered to economic life will create, nay, have already created, disenchanted, cold and heartless communities. Such communities will foster a strong aversion towards the higher political and towards religion. Their only guide is gain, that is Gold, which they will erect into a veritable cult, for the sake of those material delights which it can give. Then will the hour strike when, not for the sake of attaining the good, not even to win wealth, but solely out of hatred towards the privileged, the lower classes of the goyim will follow our lead against our rivals for power, the intellectuals of the goyim.”**

## **PROTOCOL NO. 5**

**“For a time perhaps we might be successfully dealt with by a coalition of the GOYIM of all the world: but from this danger we are secured by the discord existing among them whose roots are so deeply seated that they can never now be plucked up. We have set one against another the**

**personal and national reckonings of the goyim, religious and race hatreds, which we have fostered into a huge growth in the course of the past twenty centuries.”**

**“In order to put public opinion into our hands we must bring it into a state of bewilderment by giving expression from all sides to so many contradictory opinions and for such length of time as will suffice to make the GOYIM lose their heads in the labyrinth and come to see that the best thing is to have no opinion of any kind in matters political, which it is not given to the public to understand, because they are understood only by him who guides the public. This is the first secret. The second secret requisite for the success of our government is comprised in the following: To multiply to such an extent national failings, habits, passions, conditions of civil life, that it will be impossible for anyone to know where he is in the resulting chaos, so that the people in consequence will fail to understand one another. This measure will also serve us in another way, namely, to sow discord in all parties, to dislocate all collective forces which are still unwilling to submit to us, and to discourage any kind of personal initiative which might in any degree hinder our affair. There is nothing more dangerous than personal initiative; if it has genius behind it, such initiative can do more than can be done by millions of people among whom we have sown discord. We must so direct the education of the goyim communities that whenever they come upon a matter requiring initiative they may drop their hands in despairing impotence. The strain which results from freedom of action saps the forces when it meets with the freedom of another. From this collision arise grave moral shocks, disenchantments, failures. By all these means we shall so wear down the goyim that they will be compelled to offer us international**

power of a nature that by its position will enable us without any violence gradually to absorb all the State forces of the world and to form a Super-Government. In place of the rulers of to-day we shall set up a bogey which will be called the Super-Government Administration. Its hands will reach out in all directions like nippers and its organisation will be of such colossal dimensions that it cannot fail to subdue all the nations of the world.”

“The aristocracy of the goyim as a political force, is dead—we need not take it into account; but as landed proprietors they can still be harmful to us from the fact that they are self-sufficing in the resources upon which they live. It is essential therefore for us at whatever cost to deprive them of their land. This object will be best attained by increasing the burdens upon landed property—in loading lands with debts. These measures will check land-holding and keep it in a state of humble and unconditional submission.”

“At the same time we must intensively patronise trade and industry, but, first and foremost, speculation, the part played by which is to provide a counterpoise to industry: the absence of speculative industry will multiply capital in private hands and will serve to restore agriculture by freeing the land from indebtedness to the land banks.”

“What we want is that industry should drain off from the land both labour and capital and by means of speculation transfer into our hands all the money of the world, and thereby throw all the goyim into the ranks of the proletariat. Then the goyim will bow down before us, if for no other reason but to get the right to exist.”

“To complete the ruin of the industry of the



**goyim we shall bring to the assistance of speculation the luxury which we have developed among the goyim, that greedy demand for luxury which is swallowing up everything. We shall raise the rate of wages which, however, will not bring any advantage to the workers, for, at the same time, we shall produce a rise in prices of the first necessities of life, alleging that it arises from the decline of agriculture and cattle-breeding: we shall further undermine artfully and deeply sources of production, by accustoming the workers to anarchy and to drunkenness and side by side therewith taking all measure to extirpate from the face of the earth all the educated forces of the GOYIM.”**

**“In order that the true meaning of things may not strike the GOYIM before the proper time we shall mask it under an alleged ardent desire to serve the working classes and the great principles of political economy about which our economic theories are carrying on an energetic propaganda.”**

## **PROTOCOL NO. 7**

**“The intensification of armaments, the increase of police forces—are all essential for the completion of the aforementioned plans. What we have to get at is that there should be in all the States of the world, besides ourselves, only the masses of the proletariat, a few millionaires devoted to our interests, police and soldiers.”**

**“Throughout all Europe, and by means of relations with Europe, in other continents also, we must create ferments, discords and hostility.”**

**“In a word, to sum up our system of keeping the governments of the goyim in Europe in check, we shall show our strength to one of them by**

terrorist attempts and to all, if we allow the possibility of a general rising against us, we shall respond with the guns of America or China or Japan.”

#### **PROTOCOL NO. 9**

“It is from us that the all-engulfing terror proceeds. We have in our service persons of all opinions, of all doctrines, restoring monarchists, demagogues, socialists, communists, and utopian dreamers of every kind. We have harnessed them all to the task: each one of them on his own account is boring away at the last remnants of authority, is striving to overthrow all established form of order. By these acts all States are in torture; they exhort to tranquillity, are ready to sacrifice everything for peace: but we will not give them peace until they openly acknowledge our international Super-Government, and with submissiveness.”

#### **PROTOCOL NO. 11**

“The goyim are a flock of sheep, and we are their wolves. And you know what happens when the wolves get hold of the flock?”

“There is another reason also why they will close their eyes: for we all keep promising them to give back all the liberties we have taken away as soon as we have quelled the enemies of peace and tamed all parties. . . .”

“It is not worth while to say anything about how long a time they will be kept waiting for this return of their liberties. . . .”

“For what purpose then have we invented this whole policy and insinuated it into the minds of the goys without giving them any chance to examine its underlying meaning? For what,

**indeed, if not in order to obtain in a roundabout way what is for our scattered tribe unattainable by the direct road? It is this which has served as the basis for our organisation of SECRET MASONRY WHICH IS NOT KNOWN TO, AND AIMS WHICH ARE NOT EVEN SO MUCH AS SUSPECTED BY, THESE GOY CATTLE, ATTRACTED BY US INTO THE "SHOW ARMY OF MASONIC LODGES IN ORDER TO THROW DUST IN THE EYES OF THEIR FELLOWS."**

**"God has granted to us, His Chosen People, the gift of the dispersion, and in this which appears in all eyes to be our weakness, has come forth all our strength, which has now brought us to the threshold of sovereignty over all the world."**

#### **PROTOCOL NO. 12**

**"Not a single announcement will reach the public without our control. Even now this is already being attained by us inasmuch as all news items are received by a few agencies, in whose offices they are focused from all parts of the world. These agencies will then be already entirely ours and will give publicity only to what we dictate to them."**

#### **PROTOCOL NO. 14**

**"In countries known as enlightened we have created a senseless, filthy, abominable literature. For some time after our entrance to power we shall continue to encourage its existence in order to provide a telling relief by contrast to the speeches, party programme, which will be distributed from exalted quarters of ours. . . . Our wise men, trained to become leaders of the goyim, will compose speeches, projects, memoirs, articles, which will be used by us to influence the minds of the goyim, directing them**

towards such understanding and forms of knowledge as have been determined by us.”

## **PROTOCOL NO. 15**

“When we at last definitely come into our kingdom by the aid of coup d'etat prepared everywhere for one and the same day, after the worthlessness of all existing forms of government has been definitely acknowledged (and not a little time will pass before that comes about, perhaps even a whole century) we shall make it our task to see that against us such things as plots shall no longer exist. With this purpose we shall slay without mercy all who take arms (in hand) to oppose our coming into our kingdom. Every kind of new institution of anything like a secret society will also be punished with death; those of them which are now in existence, are known to us, serve us and have served us, we shall disband and send into exile to continents far removed from Europe. In this we shall proceed with those goy masons who know too much; such of these as we may for some reason spare will be kept in constant fear of exile. We shall promulgate a law making all former members of secret societies liable to exile from Europe as the centre of our rule.”

“Resolutions of our government will be final, without appeal.”

“Meantime, however, until we come into our kingdom, we shall act in the contrary way: we shall create and multiply free masonic lodges in all the countries of the world, absorb into them all who may become or who are prominent in public activity, for in these lodges we shall find our principal intelligence office and means of influence.”

“All these lodges we shall bring under one

central administration, known to us alone and to all others absolutely unknown, which will be composed of our learned elders. The lodges will have their representatives who will serve to screen the above-mentioned administration of masonry and from whom will issue the watchword and programme.”

“In these lodges we shall tie together the knot which binds together all revolutionary and liberal elements. Their composition will be made up of all strata of society. The most secret political plots will be known to us and will fall under our guiding hands on the very day of their conception. Among the members of these lodges will be almost all the agents of international and national police since their service is for us irreplaceable in the respect that the police is in a position not only to use its own particular measures with the insubordinate, but also to screen our activities and provide pretexts for discontents, et cetera.”

“The class of people who most willingly enter into secret societies are those who live by their wits, careerists, and in general people, mostly light-minded, with whom we shall have no difficulty in dealing and in using to wind up the mechanism of the machine devised by us. If this world grows agitated the meaning of that will be that we have had to stir it up in order to break up its too great solidarity. But if there should, arise a plot, then at the head of that plot will be no other than one of our most trusted servants. It is natural that we and no other should lead masonic activities, for we know whither we are leading, we know the final goal of every form of activity whereas the goyim have knowledge of nothing, not even of the immediate effect of action; they put before themselves, usually, the momentary reckoning of the satisfaction of their self-opinion in the accomplishment of their

thought without even remarking that the very conception never belonged to their initiative but to our instigation of their thought....”

“The goyim enter the lodges out of curiosity or in the hope by their means to get a nibble at the public pie, and some of them in order to obtain a hearing before the public for their impracticable and groundless fantasies: they thirst for the emotion of success and applause, of which we are remarkably generous. And the reason why we give them this success is to make use of the high conceit of themselves to which it gives birth, for that insensibly disposes them to assimilate our suggestions without being on their guard against them in the fullness of their confidence that it is their own infallibility which is giving utterance to their own thoughts and that it is impossible for them to borrow those of others. . . . You cannot imagine to what extent the wisest of the goyim can be brought to a state of unconscious naivete in the presence of this condition of high conceit of themselves, and at the same time how easy it is to take the heart out of them by the slightest ill-success, though it be nothing more than the stoppage of the applause they had, and to reduce them to a slavish submission for the sake of winning a renewal of success. . . .”

“By so much as ours disregard success if only they can carry through their plans, by so much the goyim are willing to sacrifice any plans only to have success. This psychology of theirs materially facilitates for us the task of setting them in the required direction. These tigers in appearance have the souls of sheep and the wind blows freely through their heads. We have set them on the hobby-horse of an idea about the absorption of individuality by the symbolic unit of collectivism. . . . They have never yet and they never will have the sense to reflect that this

**hobby-horse is a manifest violation of the most important law of nature, which has established from the very creation of the world one unit unlike another and precisely for the purpose of instituting individuality. . . . If we have been able to bring them to such a pitch of stupid blindness is it not a proof, and an amazingly clear proof, of the degree to which the mind of the goyim is undeveloped in comparison with our mind? This it is, mainly, which guarantees our success.”**

#### **PROTOCOL NO. 16**

**“We shall erase from the memory of men all facts of previous centuries which are undesirable to us, and leave only those which depict all the errors of the government of the goyim.”**

#### **PROTOCOL NO. 17**

**“We have long past taken care to discredit the priesthood of the goyim, and thereby to ruin their mission on earth which in these days might still be a great hindrance to us. Day by day its influence on the peoples of the world is falling lower. Freedom of conscience has been declared everywhere, so that now only years divide us from the moment of the complete wrecking of that Christian religion: as to other religions we shall have still less difficulty in dealing with them, but it would be premature to speak of this now. We shall set clericalism and clericals into such narrow frames as to make their influence move in retrogressive proportion to its former progress.”**

**“The King of the Jews will be the real Pope of the Universe, the patriarch of an international Church.”**



## **PROTOCOL NO. 20**

**“How clear is the undeveloped power of thought of the purely brute brains of the goyim, as expressed in the fact that they have been borrowing from us with payment of interest without ever thinking that all the same these very moneys plus an addition for payment of interest must be got by them from their own State pockets in order to settle up with us. What could have been simpler than to take the money they wanted from their own people?”**

## **CHAPTER 5**

### **THE MULTICULTURAL OUTLOOK OF BOAS**

Two of the very first civil right laws given to non-Whites in the U.S. by the Eurasian elites, that, incidentally, emerged just 1 year after the American Civil War ended in 1865AD, and 1 year before General Custer was killed at the Battle of Little Bighorn on June 25, 1876AD, by Sitting Bull, which is ironic evidence that the elites were lying to the people—see page 166, are the Civil Rights Act 1866AD, and the Civil Rights Act 1875AD also called the Enforcement Act. Try as I had, I failed to locate information on the 1866AD Act. But the 1875AD Act was an act signed into law by President Ulysses S. Grant (one of the northern generals during the American Civil War; General Robert E. Lee being one of the southern), that “forced” both the White and Eurasian Americans to share their “accommodation and transport” with non-Whites.

Once they enslaved the African, now they began using him to alter our people and state.

Post-Enforcement Act, the next big event in the long history of the Eurasian-Roman elites breaking down White society or, in this case, Eurasian-Jews using multicultural ideals to change the White outlook, was the founding of the Boasian School of Anthropology in 1899AD in America by Franz Boas. A professor in anthropology and one of the Eurasian-Jews defined as an “American-Jewish elite”, Boas founded the Boasian School of Anthropology before going on to forcibly replace Darwinism: a tribal outlook, for equality: a multicultural outlook, in the social sciences.

So the White outlook was about to be further changed, but only some would benefit and only a fool would believe that Boas and the rest of the elites were genuine.

Although the U.S. civil rights acts were established approximately three decades before Boas's time, in the run up to Boas's time, Darwinism was the accepted outlook of

the time; the U.S. Government maintained their segregation laws that, more or less, separated the White communities from the rest of the peoples. But post Boas's time, the ideals that helped form the new outlook and culture that had created those first civil rights for non-Whites, were later used to ethically justify “forced integration” into White American colleges and schools, which, later, due to the many issues that have been documented and recorded, led to a new phenomena called “White flight”.

Identical to the multiculturalists that had gone before him, Boas's motives weren't as honest as the ideals he was promoting are sophisticated and humane, I would warn. But, nevertheless, even though his mission to change the way White people feel or think about foreign racial groups wasn't as successful as he had bargained for, after his efforts, to change the White outlook and White America, hear this, being Politically Correct was the new order and there were serious consequences for anyone who refused to accept non-Whites as equal to themselves or behaved in a racist manner towards them; you could lose your job, fined in the courts, and even sent to prison. Effectively, then, what we witnessed during and after Boas's efforts to change the White identity and societies, was nothing less than state-sponsored terrorism, and it was done not due to idealism but to disenfranchise and break the biggest threat to the ruling class dictatorship that controls the U.S.; namely, the powerful White race, and to usher in chaos, violence, hate, collapse, reduction in population, and a NWO.

So Boas was one of the critical American figures that helped pave the way for forced multicultural societies. But his attack on Darwinism was an obvious sign of foulplay—due to the Darwinian outlook representing the natural order of all living organisms inhabiting the planet; which would be, all creatures of the same species or appearance stick together and mostly keep apart from others, which, for good or for bad, was the simple biological fact that had once ethically justified the Eurasians conquering the Americas at the expense of the Native American Indians, in the first place, and all races are guilty of conquering others or potentially would—which was why many people didn't trust

him. But, along with that, it was his unfair one-sided perspective on matters of “rights”, that had truly sealed his fate amongst not only many in the U.S. but to honest people everywhere; for instance, as he helped lay the foundations for integration he completely ignored the rights of the White peoples who had settled and built America; as far as Boas was concerned sharing the White nations with non-Whites, even though many believed it to be an impossible dream and especially in a “forced to share context”, was far more important than the rights of the White peoples, and that's how many people viewed it. So, along with other evidence of foulplay; which would be, the sinister fact that some of Boas's anthropologists were CAUGHT “faking official data” on matters of racial societies, which revealed shocking evidence of their involvement in a criminal conspiracy to deceive the White race, it was due to Boas's hypocrisy, or his own inequality towards the races, amongst other reasons also, that made (Eurasian) George Lincoln Rockwell—pro-White leader of the American Nazi Party that he founded in December 1959AD, and a critical figure in the history of Left Right conflict, slate him, in his book, *White Power*, as a subversive communist-Jew out to wreck White America. It was an apt description.

In conclusion on *The Multicultural Outlook Of Boas*: Commander Rockwell and others believed that Boas was plotting the destruction of White America through his dishonest promotion of leftist ideals, so he and his Jews could win the race war they had been engaged in for centuries.

So the destruction of the White race is what Boas and the ruling elites were seeking, is why they were supporting forced integration, and the incriminating fact that Boas and his army of dishonest leftist-anthropologists were also openly operating right under the eye of the U.S. Government and U.S. Intelligence agencies, or the government failed to view Boas as a subversive communist as Commander Rockwell surely had, intent on wrecking “White” society through his dishonest promotion of equality, and remove him from his post, is more damning evidence of a sinister conspiracy against the White race, so be on guard!

**To give a brief example of where we are today: As well as White Americans being slated to be a “minority” in their own nation by 2065AD thanks to the elites permitting, along with the civil rights acts, integration, and the Boasian school of Anthropology, millions of non-White immigrants to move in, reproduce, and all but takeover, just like their fellow Europeans, they now all live in the feared police states that Orwell warned about back in 1948AD, with their nations collapsing all around them and the elites vacillating over whether they can ban their guns or not before it all bursts out into awesome revolution. So bad times ahead for the majority of the people, and it was partly due to Boas and his army of “fifth columnist” pseudo lefties, who hid away in their own wealthy, “non-integrated”, sectors as they were forcing the races together in a dishonest bubble of idealistic bliss that could only ever burst and leave him exposed as the race and class warrior he undoubtedly was, that the White nations and people are now in the state they're in. Further—and this is more hard evidence to prove there's an “international” ruling class network plotting against the Eurasian/White race—those communist ideals that Boas was supporting that paved the way for displacing Darwinism for equality and creating multicultural societies in the U.S., were not only later enforced in many of the White nations outwith the U.S.; for instance, Norway and Britain, but, hear this, the elites in all those nation-states, excluding a couple of British politicians like Enoch Powell, “enthusiastically” accepted them! Incidentally, when Powell delivered his controversial “Rivers of Blood” speech on April 20, 1968AD, it evoked such a bad reaction from the Leftists that I wonder if they really perhaps did believe the public were fooled by their kindly idealism towards non-Whites, and immigration wasn't about using non-Whites against the British natives in a sinister class war context.**

# **CHAPTER 6**

## **THE MULTICULTURAL INSTITUTE FOR SOCIAL RESEARCH**

**The Eurasian-Romans had conquered Europe before becoming the new elites and assuming the identity of those they had conquered; they became nativised. The new elites were much more crueller to the White peoples and their own settlers they came to rule over, and, recall, the feudal system that turned the people into slaves and tenants, is evidence enough for that, as is the Industrial Revolution where, outwith Soup Kitchens and the later Trade Unions feeding you, at least for a while, you and your family were left to starve if you failed to find work.**

**The new elites began abusing their subjects. But if we go back to just 6 decades after Octavian founded the Roman Empire in 27BC, it looks like some of the emperors were also abusing their subjects or the common peoples. Regardless to why, what they certainly did, they set the Pagans against the Christians then set the Christians against the Pagans. The abuse of religious peoples, or using religion to set the peoples against each other, by the Roman elites, began around the same time as the ministry of Jesus Christ and His followers, called Christians, appeared in the world. Christianity was the new religion and, unlike Paganism that came before it, it worshipped a divine being, or half man half spirit, instead of, say, the Sun. But the problem was, the Roman emperors, throughout those early Christian times in the 1st century AD, were Pagans and not Christians, so this, I suspect, was an opportunity for the elites to control both sides in the conflict and single out groups of people to kill them; say Roman-Eurasians against the Roman-Whites, or Roman elites against the peasants. It's hard to tell if the elites were conspiring against the peoples in Rome or not, but, whatever was going on, after the Romans crucified Jesus on the cross at Golgotha, the Roman emperors and the Roman elites certainly killed in the name of Paganism and Christianity; for instance, between 64 and 68AD Emperor Nero persecuted and killed a great many of the Christians, and, later, Constantine the**

**Great persecuted and killed a great many of the Pagans. Due to that religious conflict, millions of people surely must have died. But, later, or after the Roman elites became Christians, they brought an end to the religious war by integrating the symbols of Paganism into the new christian religion to make the conversion more acceptable to the Pagans and, critically, to “empower” the early christian Church; now they can control them all through Christianity.**

**The Roman elites may have been using “religion” as a special weapon to set the people against each other. But, later, hear this, using religion, as a tool to control the people and set them against each other, would later continue with Eurasian-Martin Luther when Luther, who, as a cover, was complaining about the licentious behaviour of the catholic priests in the churches, recklessly divided the Christians by creating Protestantism in the 16th century AD. So what happened after that, comrade? Yes, the christian Catholics and christian Protestants, under extremely bad leadership, of course, went to war with each other and killed millions of themselves!**

**Did the elites do that on purpose? Did they set the Pagans and Christians against each other and later divide the Christians into Catholics and Protestants, to get them killing each other or didn't they? Well, maybe they did on the first religious war in Rome between the Christians and Pagans, and it looks good that Luther, due to his actions being so very irresponsible and dangerous, did divide the Christians in order to set them against each other. But whatever you believe, those religious conflicts certainly occurred and tens of millions of commoners died as a result.**

**Christianity may have been the first weapon the elites were using to control and set the masses against each other outwith race, Nationalism, or tribalism, which proved very effective indeed, and tens of millions must surely have perished over the centuries in consequence. The second weapon was Republicanism. Republicanism being used by the elites as a weapon to kill their racial competitors or cull the best of the peoples and leave but fools and cowards behind for them to rule over with less anxiety or fear of**



revolution, proved just as effective as religion had, and the republican wars against the absolutist monarchs—for instance, the English Civil War from 1642 to 1651AD; the American War of Independence from 1775 to 1783AD; the French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars from 1779 to 1815AD—alone must have claimed the lives of millions and millions of people. But something else would happen after those conflicts between the Republicans and absolutist kings, that would give the elites another excuse for creating political movements and conflicts to keep the numbers of the peoples down, or to perhaps weed out their racial enemies or those “remnant-people” that Engels wrote about, which was, the “backlash” caused by the injustices of the feudal system and the mass abuse of the common peoples during the Industrial Revolution Age. Enslaving the people through the feudal system, using them as a form of cheap labour throughout the Industrial Revolution Age, and the people having no vote or welfare is the reasons for the people agitating for reforms and an equal say in the running of their nations, in the first place, which meant, because the elites were anxious about the people founding political movements for themselves to lead themselves, which would surely lead to the hierarchy being displaced, the elites needed to get in first, so they founded Socialism in the 18th century AD, and Communism in the 19th. Further, those communist, socialist, republican, leftist, ideals and also the early leftist institutions they founded were witnessed through Rousseau and Voltaire's leftist works in the 1750s and 1760s AD in France, Payne's leftist work in the 1790s AD in the U.S., Boas's leftist School of Anthropology in the 1900s AD in the U.S., and, what I will deal with right here and now, the leftist and communist Institute for Social Research that was founded in the 1920s AD in Germany, and whose leaders were all Marxist-Eurasian-Jews that had descended from the Roman-Eurasians who conquered Western Europe post-Entremont, post-Gallic Wars, and post-German Wars, thousands of years ago.

Incidentally, those ideals seen above, they had taken from the Roshiniya and Christianity; which was, “equality” for all, and “love thy neighbour”. However, they were not used honestly; they were used in a “dishonest context”.

**The Institute for Social Research (ISR) was founded in Germany in 1923AD, and emerged 5 years after WWI, 5 years after the communist November Revolution—see note 6: The November Revolution—and 5 years after the “cosy alliance” between the nationalist and communist elites of WWI, who had suspiciously mostly all voted for WWI, which was a war that had killed 20 million of the people in, before forging an alliance and retiring uninjured in peace.**

**The ISR was founded by Carl Grunberg, George Lucaks, and financed by Felix Weil—three Eurasian-Marxists, who claimed they founded the ISR in order to unify the many aspects of Marxism that had developed over the past years or so. But what they were really doing, along with critical elite figures and psychoanalysts like Eurasian-Sigmund Freud, they were using the fine art of sociology, which is the study of human beings, the societies they construct, and the social problems that may emerge from them, to help stabilise their new multicultural societies they had been working towards since the time of the Roman Empire, through the new elites permitting millions of foreigners into Germany and Austria, etc., and were disarming the natives and Nationalists by, hear this, making them feel “ASHAMED” if they complained about all the foreigners living in their nations! So it was the Historical Revolution; it was a race and class war in disguise as multicultural societies being favoured over racial and nationalist societies, and the Eurasian-ruling elites were merely reducing opposition to their sinister multicultural agenda through their new intellectual and abstract weapon called “SHAME”. In any context, “shame” emerged before Political Correctness.**

**In Germany, the founders and members of the ISR were operating around the same time as Hitler, who represented not only the White but the Eurasian backlash caused by the pro-immigration and pro-poverty agenda, was moving to secure political power; for instance, Hitler's failed nationalist revolution, called the Beer Hall Putsch, occurred in 1923AD in Germany, and the ISR was founded in 1923AD also in Germany, which means, when Hitler became the Chancellor of Germany in 1933AD, the ISR's**

founders fled to Geneva before later, or after Hitler became the Head of State and the Third Reich manifested in 1934AD, escaping into friendly leftist-held America where, if you recall, Boas had been previously working to also break down the White race and outlook through the use of leftist ideals. It was a difficult time in Germany during those times, what with no welfare to help feed the family if the patriarch failed to find work. But immigrants being permitted to overrun the West was also the reason for the rise of National Socialism, which was an effective challenge to Marx's Communism that had won favour amongst the oppressed and lower class Germans and really all the peoples from the lower classes.

Although, on the face of it, Hitler mostly viewed the immigrants and migrants in Germany as Slavic peoples from Eastern Europe, what I believe, they were mostly Eurasians, and, recall, the Eurasians are, (a), mixed race Chinese-Polish; (b), mixed race Pakistani-Polish, or, (c), mixed race Pakistani-Polish-Chinese. Chinese I would qualify as Oriental Han Chinese; Poles are Europeans; Pakistanis are Asians, and some call themselves Jews.

Even centuries before Hitler was born, the Eurasians had a massive presence in Austria and Germany—the lands once held by the Northern and Western Europeans, due to the conquest of the West by the Eurasian-Romans, and those new Eurasian-Romans elites, over time, permitting more migrants into the West, and, according to Mein Kampf and Hitler, who, recall, viewed the migrants as mostly Slavs, there was much friction between some of the Slavs and some of the Germans. In Mein Kampf Hitler writes:

“In the north and in the south, foreign people came in and poisoned the body of our nation. Even Vienna became less and less a German city. The House of the Archdukes showed favoritism to the Czechs [Slavs] at every opportunity.”

“It was the hand of the Goddess of Eternal Justice and Retribution that overthrew the

**deadliest enemy of Austria's German nature when She struck Archduke Francis Ferdinand by the very bullets he had helped to cast. After all, he was the patron who was charged to protect Austria from the northern Slavs. The greatest friend to the Slavs was brought down by a fanatical Slav patriot's bullet."**

**To conclude on The Institute for Social Research: Due to the anti-White, or multicultural, agenda being promoted in Germany by Grunberg, Lucaks, and Weil from the ISR, which ended with them being viewed as subversive enemies of the White race and having to escape to America to stop the Eurasian and White Nationalists arresting them or worse, I view them and the ISR as key players in the effort to create multicultural societies.**

**Incidentally, the heir to the very powerful Austrian-Hungarian Empire; the Archduke Franz Ferdinand, was assassinated in 1914AD by Gavrilo Princip, which started WW1. Princip was a Eurasian-Yugoslav at war with the Austrian-Hungarian Empire who controlled his nation.**

## **THE NOVEMBER REVOLUTION**

**Note 6. Just as they had planned the English Civil War, the Highland Clearances, the American War of Independence, the French Revolution, the Napoleonic Wars, or even the Spring of Nations, the Roman-Eurasian elites, who control all sides in any given conflict, sooner or later, always seek war to reduce their racial and class enemies due to organised racial groups being a threat to their own racial network but also due to the very many social injustices that were prevalent in the nations they ruled over, and that is what I call Critical Conflict. So after Gavrilo Princip—a Yugoslav nationalist at war with the Austrian-Hungarian Empire, assassinated the Archduke Franz Ferdinand—heir to the Austrian-Hungarian Empire, in Sarajevo on June 28, 1914AD, the conditions for Critical Conflict were met; which meant, the ruling elites, after conscripting millions of the common people into their national armies, mobilised for war, and so began the conspiracy that was WWI. The Roman-Eurasian elites who controlled Russia, Germany, Austria, Italy, Hungary, France, Britain, and America, etc., had their controlled war; which was WWI, and, at the end of it, hear this, as many as 10 million soldiers and upwards of 8 million civilians were left dead as the elites retired to live out their lives in peace and comfort! WWI was a conspiracy more than equal to the CIA's War on Terror fabrication, or Napoleon's controlled wars against the Ancient Regime, and, due to the suspicious actions of the elites before, during, and just prior to the end of it; for example, the “cosy alliance”, or the German Empire's “NATIONALIST ELITES” handing power over to the “COMMUNIST ELITES” before going on to suspiciously “SHARE” the Weimar Republic that they had created after the abdication of Emperor William II—the kaiser of the nationalist German Empire, it led to the rise of Adolf Hitler, to the rise of the Nazi Party, and to the storm that was the Third Reich!**

**The Germans did well at the start of WWI; crushing all who stood against them, but not so well by the end of it,**

as according to plan. The plan was to get rid of the people who were agitating for change, before a true leader of the people emerges and gets rid of the elites, so, what they would do, they would use the German soldiers to reduce the fighting men from Britain, France, and Russia then, once that was done, use the U.S. soldiers to reduce the Germans.

So the Germans did well at the start of WWI. But after (1) the U.S. declared war on Germany on April 6, 1917AD, (2) after the Marxists Social Democrat Party (SPD), the Centre Party, and the Progressive People's Party passed their first resolution in the Reichstag—the German parliament, in 1917AD, motioning for an end to war, (3) after the German Empire's Supreme Army Command's (SAC)—amongst others, General Paul Von Hindenburg and General Erich Ludendorff were both SAC and German nationalist commanders during WWI—Spring Offensive that began on March 21, 1918AD, and ended on July 18, 1918AD, (4) and after Amiens—Germany's “black day”, that began on August 8, 1918AD, Hindenburg and Ludendorff, on October 29, 1918AD, informed Emperor William II that the war was lost and peace negotiations were entered into with the Americans. The peace negotiations went ahead but broke down due to U.S. President Woodrow Wilson demanding the abdication of Kaiser William II and the kaiser's refusal, so, due to that, Ludendorff declared the war must continue. Apparently due to Ludendorff's “black day”, Prince Maximilian, who was made German Chancellor by William II in 1918AD, forced his resignation and Ludendorff retreated to neutral Sweden.

Up until this point, it's accurate to state that most Germans believed the war was lost. So it was due to that belief that, due to the German Imperial Navy's commanders seeking military engagement with the British Royal Navy after all believed the war was lost, a mutiny broke out amongst the sailors in the German Navy. It was an event known as the Keil Uprising. It began on October 29, 1918AD with the sailors' mutiny in the German Navy, and with the socialist or communist revolutionaries seizing control over Germany, and ended on November 9, 1918AD with the communist November Revolution and the abdication of Kaiser William II. The Marxist revolution led

to the abdication of William II on November 9, 1918AD, and, after the kaiser handed power over to the Marxist SPD without so much of a struggle, Germany transitioned from a constitutional monarchy—royalty exist but holds no power in the parliament—into a democratic republic—no royalty; only parliament—known as the Weimar Republic. At the same time, Friedrich Ebert—the communist leader of the SPD and, according to Mein Kampf and historians, one of the critical leaders behind the communist November Revolution, became the Weimar Republic's first president and a peace treaty was signed also on the November 9, 1918AD, that brought an end to WWI.

So what was going on? Both the communist and nationalist elites had mostly voted for a war (WWI), that they had mostly conscripted and certainly killed 20 million of the people in, and, after the communist November Revolution and the kaiser's abdication that witnessed him, according to Hitler, embracing the Communists, the Communists set up the Weimar Republic. Once the new German Wiemar Republic was unofficially founded in 1918AD; it was officially founded on the 11 of August 1919AD, as well as communist Ebert failing to purge the nationalist elites—his meant to be ideological and political enemies, during his successful communist revolution on November 9, the communist elites went on to share the Reichstagg with them; hear this, after Ebert died of natural causes on February 28, 1925AD, nationalist Hindenburg became president also in 1925AD! In other words, it was the same communist and nationalist elites still in charge of the German Reichstag even after WWI came to an end! So, unlike the 20 million that the elites got killed during WWI, the elites did very well after the war! The elites have reasons for that; of course, reasons why IDEOLOGICAL POLITICAL ENEMIES WERE EMBRACING EACH OTHER AFTER THEIR UNNECESSARY WAR CAME TO A DRAMATIC CLOSE WITH A REVOLUTION AND ABDICATION. But while the elites paint a humane picture of “burying the hatchet for the sake of the people, or to avert a costly civilian war between the Communists and Nationalists”, the fact that it was the same old ruling class elites still in control of the German nation and people after



**20 million had been killed during WWI remains suspicious. Therefore, it may just be true that the communist Keil Uprising, the communist November 9 Revolution, and the abdication of the nationalist kaiser was staged by the elites in order for them to transition out of war, after they had culled 20 million, and to stay in charge of the parliament.**

**COMMUNIST ELITES & NATIONALIST ELITES = THE ELITES!**

**That “cosy alliance”, between the communist and nationalist leader-elites in Germany post-WWI, wasn't lost on Hitler and his growing army of National Socialists, and, in Mein Kampf, while he hints that the elites were together conspiring against the people, he also hints that the German Imperial Government and SAC may have been merely down-on-their-luck Nationalists out-smarted and defeated by the subversive Communists, but Hitler remained respectful by letting you decide for yourself. It seems to me, however, that Hitler wanted you to believe what I myself believe; that the ruling communist and nationalist elites were together conspiring against the common people like one big elitist family, and that's why they all voted for the unnecessary war, that's why they failed to kill each other after the war, but instead retired uninjured in peace and shared the Reichstag; recall, communist Ebert became president in 1918AD; nationalist Hindenburg became president in 1925AD! Recall also, reader, that Hitler formed the Nazi Party in 1920AD, conclusively proven that he did not trust any of them.**

**Hitler, writing in Mein Kampf on the communist November 9 Revolution and how Emperor William II—a meant to be nationalist, had openly embraced them, wrote:**

**“We were all firmly convinced that Germany could no longer be saved from the coming catastrophe, certainly not by the parties who committed the November crime, the Center Party and the Social Democratic Party.”**

**“Emperor William II had been the first German Emperor to offer the hand of reconciliation to the leaders of Marxism, not dreaming that**

**those crooks have no honor. While they grasped the Imperial hand with their left hand, the other hand was reaching for the sword.”**

**“When future generations sit in judgment, November of 1918 will not be seen as mere rebellion but as high treason against the nation.”**

**The elites needed to be careful as they fought to stay in control of the System, the standing political parties, and attempt to control any new political movements that may emerge post-WWI, so, to stop any real revolutionaries winning power and drowning them all in the Rhine, Hindenburg and Ludendorff raised the Freikorps—German nationalist soldiers, and snuggled up to God-like Hitler, whose power was increasing greatly by the day, by joining his Nazi Party. They also began a programme to confuse the people and Nationalists into thinking of the communist elites as political moderates, so the people and Nationalists would trust them and their new Weimar Republic more; for an example of the “programme” to authenticate Ebert, which, to the elites, would hopefully preclude a counter-revolution from non-ruling class nationalist revolutionaries, know this: although Ebert himself was a communist, he actually participated in the battle to stop Rosa Luxemburg's “communist” uprising that had occurred between January 4 to January 15 in 1919AD, in which Luxemburg was arrested and apparently executed by the Freikorps. Now they'll trust him, or so they thought; hear this, although nationalist Ludendorff had retreated to neutral Sweden after being forced to resign from SAC, he reappeared to join with Hitler in Hitler's Beer Hall Putsch in 1923AD! (or Hitler's attempted nationalist revolution which occurred around 5 years after the communist November Revolution). So, although the elites tried to fool the Nationalists, it seems Hitler and the Nationalists didn't trust Marxist Ebert and his Weimar Republic at all! Incidentally, the Beer Hall Putsch nationalist revolution was an important historical event that proved unsuccessful; it ended with Hitler being sent to Landsberg prison on April 4, 1924AD, for 1 year, where he dictated Mein Kampf; some of the Nazis being**

injured or killed by the Reichswehr—the armed forces of the Weimar Republic, and, hear this, Ludendorff, who I suspect was one of the ruling class agents tasked with spying on Hitler and trying to stay in control of the Right and manipulate it, being suspiciously acquitted by the Republic's judge! It's possible, I once thought, if only for a brief moment in time, that Hindenburg and Ludendorff were true Nationalists and on the peoples' side, or they weren't ruling class agents plotting against the masses, due to, amongst other things, Ludendorff's part in the failed Kapp Putsch on March 12, 1920AD, which was the “first” post-WWI nationalist uprising that, incidentally, witnessed communist Ebert fleeing the city only to survive “intact”. But if you compare both Hindenburg and Ludendorff to Hitler; for instance, along with emerging from the lower classes, Hitler was left homeless and poor due to the elites shutting all doors in his low-class face, or making it impossible for him to better himself even through hard, honest, work due to low wages, etc., and almost destroying his life—see note 7: Small Comforts To Reich Fuhrer, WWII And Collapse—and Hindenburg and Ludendorff were two wealthy elites working for the kaiser, then it seems obvious whose side they were really on. So, I conclude, Hindenburg and Ludendorff were agents from the ruling class network, trying to control and direct everything to their favour, who had not only thrown the war but later infiltrated the Nazi Party in order to spy on Hitler and convince him that they were genuine Nazis so Hitler wouldn't execute them if he doubted their intentions and there were good reasons why he may have; recall Ludendorff's “black day”, the “cosy alliance” between the Left and Right, Hindenburg and Ludendorff failing to combat the Marxist November revolutionaries even though they had command over the WWI nationalist soldiers, and, even more suspicious, hear this, in Mein Kampf Hitler tells us that, even post-WWI, most of the German soldiers remained loyal to the kaiser and hated the Communists!

Although the elites had agreed to an armistice that brought an end to WWI, Hitler, who believed it was better to keep the war going in order to secure a stronger position on the battlefield before entering into peace talks with the

**Allies—the “Allies” was an alliance made at the start of WWI between America, Britain, Russia, and Italy—rather than entering into peace talks from a weak military position, which, in all probability, would open the door to harsher reprisals from the victors, which, due to the vindictive acts laid out in the Treaty of Versailles in 1919AD—the treaty crippled the Germans by forcing them to pay compensation (Roman tribute) to the victors of WWI, and forcing them to accept the blame for a costly war that most of them surely hadn't wanted and the elites had forced or conscripted them into—it did, in Mein Kampf and referring to the armistice and how he believed the Allies would blame and punish the German peoples, writes:**

**“I knew that all was lost. Only fools or these liars and criminals could hope for the enemy's mercy. Versailles was a shame and a disgrace, and the demands it made amounted to an unheard of plundering of our people.”**

**The elites had a successful war but not such a good transition making the shift from violent nationalist and communist elites to non-violent elites with a supposedly new democratic government and state that now thoughtfully considered both political perspectives; the Left's and Right's, and the rise of the Nazi Party with Hitler, who, again, was the one person who did view their sneaky power shift and share manoeuvre as suspicious—Hitler, recall, blamed the Marxist Jews for the loss of the war and the communist revolution, but also blamed the nationalist German empire's government due to them, amongst other reasons, failing to block communist subversive activities throughout the war—as the organisation's supreme leader was evidence enough for that, which meant, even after the elites had created the new republican state post-WWI, serious conflict, between the Left and Right, in Germany continued and never really ended. So this was Hitler's time; he was challenging the ruling class-controlled political partys post-WWI, without letting them know that he knew that, and it was due to his massive public support that Hindenburg, who by this time was made President of the Weimar Republic as part of the sneaky “cosy alliance”**

between the ruling Marxist and nationalist elites, was forced to make him Chancellor of the German Weimar Republic in 1933AD, which, critically, witnessed the Communists “not” chasing Hitler out of the Reichstag parliament, which meant, most of the public supported him, which meant, the Nationalists were the majority and the Communists feared them.

After Hitler became Chancellor of the Republic in 1933AD, events moved fast, and, judging by the millions the communist, Soviet-Russian, elites had killed in the East, time was of the essence indeed, so, after the Reichstag fire on February 27, 1933AD—the Reichstag fire incident was blamed on the Communists by the Republic's government, but some speculate that it may have been a “false flag” attack carried out by the Nazis in order to enact new and oppressive fascist laws—Hitler issued the Enabling Act on March 24, 1933AD, that, get this, banned the SPD and the rest of the communist political parties from the Reichstag parliament; such as, Luxemburg's Communist Party of Germany (KPD). Incidentally, the KPD was a communist political party that had broken away from the communist SPD after Ebert voted in favour of WWI, and Luxemburg believed that “WWI was a capitalist conspiracy to destroy the people”.

Hitler issuing the Enabling Act was serious enough and, on the face of it, makes him appear like a fascist tyrant of democracy. But, to Hitler and the Nationalists, the reality was, all those ruling elites controlling all those communist parties that he banned in 1933AD were very different from Hitler and the common people; recall, he viewed them all as intent on wrecking the people through poverty and immigration, which they were, and merely lying to the people to stay in control of the System, so that's why he moved to protect the people from them, and that's why he banned the Communists from the Reichstag.

After Hitler became German Chancellor in 1933AD fate would now decide the future; hear this for good or even bad timing, after President Hindenburg died on August 2, 1934AD, Hitler became the Head of State, which meant, the Weimar Republic was abolished; the Third Reich was born,

**and WWII became inexorable due to the global communist elites conspiring against the peoples and Hitler wanting to bring them down.**

**Incidentally, post-WWI, while nationalist power was increasing by the year in Germany, it was also increasing elsewhere in the world; for instance, in Britain, Sir Oswald Mosley became an “elected” member of parliament in 1918AD, and in 1932AD he created the British Union of Fascists (BUF). The BUF was opposed to the Communists and Zionists and evidently proved an effective and dangerous challenge to the establishment because, after the Battle of France in 1940AD, Mosley was interned, under Defence Regulation 18B, in 1940AD; released in 1943AD, and the BUF was banned; in Italy, Benito Mussolini, or the Duce, held his March on Rome in October 1922AD with his Blackshirts; in Spain, two opposing factions faced each other in the Spanish Civil War that began in 1936AD, the communist-Republicans backed by the communist-held Soviet Union, and the Nationalists backed by nationalist-held Germany and nationalist-held Italy; in the Far East, nationalist and imperialist Japan invaded China in 1937AD capturing Beijing, Shanghai, and Nanjing—the capital city of China, after a skirmish between Japanese and republican Chinese troops near the famous Marco Polo Bridge.**

**Incidentally, throughout the Spanish Civil War, secret NKVD agents from the Soviet Union, working alongside the Communist Party of Spain, held substantial control over Spain's republican government. During Soviet control, the NKVD set up secret prisons around Madrid, which they used to detain, torture, and kill hundreds of their nationalist and catholic enemies.**

**Over in the East, although China's nationalist Chiang Kai-shek was pro-American, and China's communist Mao Zedong was anti-American, hear this, who did the U.S. Government, under President Truman, support? You got it, China's Mao Zedong! But, hear this, who was Truman? He was the U.S. President who sanctioned dropping the atomic bombs on nationalist Japan, or Hiroshima and Nagasaki, and enacted the Truman Doctrine in 1947AD which pledged**

to wage war on the COMMUNISTS! But it get's worse. After Mao Zedong won the civil-war against nationalist Chiang Kai-shek in 1949AD, and went on to establish the People's Republic of China also in 1949AD, which was a communist state, it's alleged that Truman's communist ally, Mao Zedong, as part of an elitist plot to reduce the population of China, went on to kill 90 million Chinese civilians! And also recall that during WWII the Americans fought on the side of the October-Bolshevik Communists, or the Reds, against nationalist Hitler! The deaths in China may actually have been caused by Mao Zedong's agrarian reforms—the Great Leap Forward—and its persecution of counter-revolutionaries. But, still, the mass deaths and killings of civilians do tend to go hand-in-hand with the Communists seizing power, so it all looks somewhat suspicious, and, recall, similar to the Western elites, the Chinese elites also conspire to bring in a Brave New World.

2 points: 1. Although Mao Zedong set up the People's Republic of China in 1949AD, which was a republican, communist, state, there was a previous “republican” revolution in China which occurred in 1911AD. Called the 1911 Revolution, or the Xinhai Revolution, it began on October 10, 1911AD, and ended with the abdication of Emperor Puyi on February 12, 1912AD, and with Sun Yat Sen establishing the Republic of China. Emperor Puyi was a member of the Qing dynasty that had ruled China since 1644AD. 2. Although, on the face of it, both Hitler and Mussolini were likely to have been true Whites, as much as Sun Yat Sen was Eurasian, it wasn't so much their race that bound them together; it was more so their pro-White, pro-Nationalism, and their anti-establishment attitudes; for instance, going after the Jews, equivocating over non-White migration, etc., into the White nations. Nationalism was the bond that bound Mussolini to Hitler, of course, and, incidentally, it was also the bond that led to the creation of the Axis Powers, the Anti-Comintern Pact, the Pact of Steel, and the Tripartite Pact, which were, among other things, an anti-communist and military alliance between nationalist Germany, nationalist Italy, nationalist Japan, and nationalist Spain just prior to WWII. Further, the Third Reich's nationalist armies were composed of Eurasians,

**White peoples, and also empire non-White soldiers, so it wasn't at all about race; rather, it was merely Fuhrer Hitler moving against “all” the elites who had not only controlled all the White nations and enslaved and killed millions of the people through Feudalism and the Industrial Revolution, but had also faked the French Revolution, the Napoleonic Wars, the Spring of Nations, and WWI in order to kill millions more.**

**To conclude on The November Revolution: The ruling elites want the masses to view not WWI but the communist November Revolution, the new Weimar Republic, and the “cosy alliance” merely as a class conflict and an attempt at averting a civil war in Germany between the Left and Right. But, truth be told, while the nationalist elites and the communist elites used the Archduke's death and Serbia's refusal to apologise for the Archduke's death as a pretext to begin WWI to get rid of millions of fighting men who may end up in a war against them due to them, amongst other things, leaving millions to starve on the streets of Europe as Hitler himself had almost done, the November Revolution and the alliance between the SPD and SAC were merely sneaky stratagems for the elites to remain in control of the System, to escape undamaged; no purge, and to fool the people into thinking that they had done well post-war, or the people-loving Communists were now in power. So, I ask you, comrade, was Serbia's refusal to apologise for the assassination of the Archduke worth killing 10 million soldiers and 8 million civilians over and was the true reason why the ruling elites staged WWI, and their post-war “cosy alliance” wasn't at all suspicious, or do you believe, as I do, that it was an elitist conspiracy to reduce their enemies and to fool the survivors into thinking that, although the elites were all sworn enemies before and during WWI, after WWI they merely forgave each other in order to save the German peoples from a bloody civil war between the Left and Right? Before making your decision, know this, comrade: (a) the “nationalist” German Empire, right in the midst of battle during WWI, suspiciously issued the Articles of War in 1918AD, that, hear this for evidence that the nationalist government threw the war, ABOLISHED THE DEATH PENALTY FOR DESERTING GERMAN SOLDIERS**



**DURING TIMES OF WAR, which effectively opened the gates to mass desertions from the German Army, which did happen, and added to the reasons why the German Army collapsed at the Front. So why would the “nationalist” German government ABOLISH THE DEATH PENALTY for deserting German soldiers during times of war, if they wanted the Germans to win the war?; (b) the German spirit lifted after the Italian Army’s—during WWI, the Italians were on the Allies side—collapse in the Autumn of 1917AD. However, as the German soldiers were preparing for a Spring offensive at the Western Front, Forward (Vorwärts)—the SPD's communist newspaper that the nationalist German Government was “allowing” to be published in Germany at that time, printed an article stating that “Germany must lose the war”, or words to that effect, and, with that, in January 1918AD a weapons manufacturing strike was organised by the communist-controlled labour unions, and supported by Marxist Ebert, that witnessed many of the strikers demanding an end to the war! So why would the communist German elites do that and the nationalist German elites allow that if they supported their own German soldiers who were both Communists and Nationalists? Did the Communists believe that losing the war would be good for the German peoples? Did they believe that the Reparations Act in the Versaille Treaty, would not be shoved down their throats to destroy both communist and nationalist Germans further, which it did! The inopportune strikes, Hitler writes in Mein Kampf—and it was this, incidentally, that led to the “stab in the back” accusation which seen the Nationalists accusing the Communists of betraying the German people and Army; claiming the Communists carried out the strikes so Germany loses the war—hadn't achieved the collapse of the German Army as the Communists had intended, but they did demoralise the German soldiers at the Front and the German people back home who surely must have wanted victory even if they hadn't wanted war in the first place; recall, the majority who fought and died in the trenches of WWI were “conscripted”; they did not volunteer; (c) to fool the people into thinking that they had done well post-WWI, the leader elites gave them the right to vote in 1918AD and the League of Nations in 1920AD! That should fool them!**

**Incidentally, in 1945AD the League of Nations was replaced by the United Nations; (d) although many of the European nations were at war with each other during WWI, hear this, all the royal families from some of those warring nations; such as, King William II from Germany, King Alexander II from Russia, the Habsburgs from Austria-Hungary, and King Edward VII from Great Britain, all hailed from the ancient Eurasian-Roman network, were all blood-related to each other, and are all linked to one of the ancient Holy “Roman” Emperors; Charlemagne! Furthermore, and get this for an ancient network that sweeps right up through the ages, it's claimed that one of the founders of the illuminati-controlled Bilderburg Group; Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands, not only descends from the Habsburgs and King David from the Bible, but is related to Christ Himself, who is Jewish; (e) post-WWI, while the “cosy alliance” between the Left and Right, the unfair Reparations Act in the Versaille Treaty, the French invasion and occupation of the Ruhr in January 1923AD, outwith immigration and poverty, sowed the seeds for the rise of Hitler's Nazi Party in 1920AD, the invasion of France in 1940AD, and eventually to the catastrophe that was WWII, the leader elites retired to live out their lives in peace and comfort! And, recall, the reason for WW1, they claim, was that, hear this, Serbia refused to apologise to Austria for one of their militant subjects killing the Archduke! Further, it's alleged that assassin-Princip was paid by agents in London to kill the Archduke Ferdinand—heir to the powerful Austrian-Hungarian Empire, in order to initiate WWI in order to cull the peoples!**

**Incidentally; 2 points: (1) the Ruhr Valley incident came after the Nazi Party's (NSDAP), founding in 1920AD, and long before WWII, but, critically, it made the invasion of France and WWII even more inevitable because, if anything, it made Hitler even more convinced that there was an “international” conspiracy to wreck the German peoples; for instance, according to Hitler, the occupation of the Ruhr by the French, was done with one intention only; to destroy the Germans economically, and, while the Ruhr invasion and occupation was in direct breach of the acts laid out in the Versaille Treaty, hear this, the elites in the U.S., Britain,**

**and Russia, etc., hardly even raised an eyebrow; merely issued strong words of disapproval; (2) the communist November 9 Revolution in Germany in 1918AD, came after the communist February and October revolutions in Russia in 1917AD, which was when, shortly after the revolutions, the Russian royal family were shockingly executed (shot), by the Soviets on July 17, 1918AD, on an order from Bolshevik Command, in order, I suspect, and identical to what had occurred with the French royal family in 1793AD, if, that is, they really did get killed, to convince the Russians that the leaders of the revolutions were genuine so they could get them fighting so they could kill millions of them, which they did as part of their sinister Machiavellian cull programme designed to control the populations and to remove the best of the people from the lower ranks, leaving nothing but fools and cowards for them to rule over.**

## **SMALL COMFORTS TO REICH FUHRER, WWII & COLLAPSE**

**Note 7. At the turn of the 20th century AD in Europe, you and your family would be left homeless and had to either beg, borrow, steal, or starve, due to there being, outwith soup kitchens, no welfare to support you if you were without a farm or work and if you were not part of a trade union which would feed you, at least for a while, in between work. It was in that mostly post-farming, or work and wage, environment, that Adolf Hitler—the man who became the Fuhrer of the Third Reich, went to Vienna, in Austria, to hopefully win for himself a career as a painter or perhaps even as an architect.**

**Hitler was raised on a non-working farm, in Austria, by his mother and father who, he tells us in Mein Kampf, were prosperous enough; due to his father being a state official and such things, so his childhood wasn't at all bad and he held a keen interest in history and politics. After visiting Vienna, however, and after failing the exam to become a painter and failing to produce the required certificates to enter the School of Architecture, Hitler returned to the family farm bitterly disappointed and an effort was made in recovering his former belief in himself. Months later, Hitler returned to the city of Vienna, and not only did it turn out to be the most tragic period in his life, but it was also the critical period when he first became aware of Marxism and Jewry and the great threat they posed to the people he would later fight for.**

**It was in 1907AD that Hitler returned to Vienna to stay for good this time, which was around 3 years after his father's death and only months after his mother's death and also because he didn't want to remain on the farm to be a farmer and such things. But, the problem was, because there was no welfare to support those without work, if he failed to find work or sell his paintings he, along with millions of others, had to go without food for a time. Outwith the Winter period, Hitler wrote in Mein Kampf, it wasn't so difficult to find work. But, nevertheless, due to the government having no provisions in place to support those**

without work, outwith soup kitchens, which isn't so much if you recall that the people he fought for had descended from healthy racial societies who had long mastered the art of farming and feeding themselves before the new Eurasian-Roman elites began to break them through Feudalism, the Industrial Revolution, and leftist ideals, he still had a hard time of it just trying to feed himself after moving to the city of Vienna, in Austria, as a young man. But, it was much worse than that, even if he did find a job, his wages were so low that, as he explains in *Mein Kampf*, they would barely afford him enough food to see him through the day. For an example of that, in *Mein Kampf* and thinking back on his time labouring on building sites in Vienna, Hitler writes, “I drank my bottle of milk and ate my piece of bread”. So, at the turn of the 20th century AD in Hapsburg's Austria, just trying to stay alive in the post-Industrial Revolution city of Vienna where the slums sat next to the rich old buildings in the town's centre, wasn't as easy as it should have been for a citizen living in a wealthy Europe, or just off the back of the Industrial Revolution that had made the elites fortunes, and Hitler, recalling his years in Vienna struggling to earn enough money just so he didn't starve to death, and slightly failing to come to terms with multicultural societies, or foreigners being permitted to migrate into Austria and the West, which Hitler viewed as a “divide and conquer” stratagem for the Jews to destroy their racial enemies through, drove home how hard the situation was for him and millions of the common people, when in *Mein Kampf* he shockingly and bitterly wrote:

“Vienna has turned into a constant reminder of the saddest period in my life. Even today, the city stirs only gloomy thoughts in me. Five years of misery and wretchedness are encapsulated in the name of this Phaeacian [city of parasites] city. For five years I had to earn my bread, and as a small painter, my bread was meager at best. It was never enough to satisfy my hunger. In those days, hunger was my faithful sidekick who never left me.”

**Although in 1909 or 1910AD Hitler's lot improved due to him finding success as a street painter which freed him from working as a labourer on building sites, things were still very much difficult for him, he wrote in Mein Kampf. Later, however, things began to pick up for him after leaving Vienna for Munich in 1912AD, and prior to him enlisting in a German Bavarian regiment to do his duty in WWI. With more than a hint of joy in his pen, in Mein Kampf Hitler wrote:**

**“In the spring of 1912, I moved to Munich for good. This time before the war was the happiest and by far the most contented of my life. My living was still meager because I only painted enough to meet my living expenses and so I could continue my studies. I had a deep love that possessed me for this city ever since I first arrived, more than any other town I knew. It was a true German city! What a difference after Vienna! Thinking back to that corrupt Babylon-like city of races turned my stomach.”**

**So Hitler had a hard time of it just trying to stay alive after relocating to the city of Vienna, in Austria, and even when he found work he still went somewhat hungry due to his low earnings, and it was a similar story for millions of people and worse still for those who failed to find work. His lot improved, however, shortly after relocating to Munich prior to the war, so the war saved him from a life of endless drifting, want, and suffering.**

**In regards to the Jews and Marxism, Hitler claims he first became aware of their presence and their grip over the White nations shortly after relocating to Vienna in 1907AD to stay for good, which was due to the Jew-blaming newspaper called The German Peoples' Paper, he was reading, and the anti-Jewish Dr. Karl Lueger from the Christian Socialist Party, that he came to admire, which was when he set out on a path of discovery to perhaps see if he could distinguish between the Jews and the White people which, eventually, he somewhat could. On that subject, here is what he wrote in Mein Kampf:**

**“Once, as I was strolling through the inner city, I suddenly met a figure in a long caftan with black curls. “Is that a Jew?” was my first thought. Jews did not look like that in Linz. I covertly observed the man, but the longer I stared at that alien face, scrutinizing feature after feature, my question changed from, “Is that a Jew?” to “Is that a German?” As always, I tried to resolve my doubts through books. For a few coins, I bought the first anti-Semitic pamphlets I had ever purchased in my life.”**

**“I had seen the Jew in every area of cultural and artistic life, then I suddenly encountered him in another spot where I would have least expected to see him, and I recognized the Jew as the leader of Social Democracy, the Marxists, and that is when the blinders fell from my eyes. Suddenly, a long, spiritual struggle came to an end. I forced myself to at least make an attempt at reading this Marxist journalism, but the more I did, the more I disliked it. From the editor on down, they were all Jews. I picked up every Social Democratic pamphlet I could and looked up the author’s name. Jews. I noticed the names of almost all the leaders. Most of them were also members of the “chosen people”, the Jews, whether they were representatives in the government or secretaries of the unions, chairmen of organizations, or street agitators. The same uncanny picture was continually repeated. One thing was plain to me now. The leadership of the party whose petty representatives I had to fight my most violent battles with for months consisted almost exclusively of an alien people. I then had the happy satisfaction of knowing for certain that the Jew was no German. Now, for the first time, I became thoroughly familiar with the corrupter of our people.”**

**Incidentally, although Hitler doesn't refer to it, it's very likely that his “anti-Semitic training” came also from Chamberlain and Ford who were both anti-Jewish activists during Hitler's time, so Hitler must have been aware of them; recall, Ford financed Hitler during WWII.**

**After Hitler's epiphanies on the Jews and Marxism in Vienna, he soon became acquainted with Zionism also, which is that element within the Jewish race that desires world conquest, supremacy or control, and this was when WWI began, which, recall, I view as a ruling class conspiracy to get rid of ALL the people who were agitating and willing to fight and die for their all-important SOCIAL REFORMS. After the war had ended, however, with the communist revolution on November 9, 1918AD, and the nationalist kaiser's abdication, Hitler remained in the Army and, after the Army had withdrawn from the Front, was stationed in Bavaria before being stationed in Munich, which he left for on March 19, 1919AD.**

**By the time WWI began, Hitler was a full-blown believer that the Jews were the thorn in the side of the White race and perhaps even their nemesis. But by the time WWI had ended, he was still a full-blown believer but he was also feeling the need to fight back, so this was when he began thinking about forming a new political party or even joining an existing one in order to bend it to his will. While thinking it over, he was still in the Army and living in military barracks, and ended up working for Army Intelligence where he was ordered to spy on the anti-Semitic, or anti-Jewish, Germans Workers' Party, or the DAP, that was founded by Karl Harrer, Anton Drexler, Gottfried Feder and Dietrich Eckart in Munich in 1919AD, which was when, after attending one of the DAP's political meetings whose ideology and outlook were, give or take, identical to his own, and where he was given an enlightening political leaflet called “My Political Awakening”, that left a good impression on him, he joined the pro-nationalist DAP party, so his decision had been made. On joining the DAP, Hitler became Minister for Propaganda, and a while later, through sheer power of personality, charm, and oratory skill, I suppose, became the Party Leader in 1920AD, which was when he changed the name of the DAP to the National**



**Socialist German Workers' Party, otherwise known as the NSDAP or the Nazi Party.**

**So Hitler became the leader of the DAP and, with that, founded the Nazi Party. He still had a lot to do, however, before becoming the leader of the German peoples and the Fuhrer of the Third Reich, but it seemed inevitable that something major would occur with Hitler due to his belief in himself that he was destined for greatness, as he reveals in his book. And so it was that, due to Nationalists not trusting the communist Weimar Republic that was founded after the successful communist revolution that brought an end to WWI, the Nationalists continued the fight against the Communists to take the Reichstag back, which was when the nationalist Kapp Putsch occurred on March 12, 1920AD, which was led by Ludendorff who, recall, was one of the elites and nationalist commanders during WWI. Ludendorff's attempted coup ended in failure. But during the war between the Communists and Nationalists, the Communists became such a serious threat to Hitler through attempting to break up Hitler's NSDAP's marches and speeches, which Hitler called "Red Terror", that, after Hitler's speech in the Hofbrauhaus Banquet Hall in Munich on November 4, 1921AD, he increased his security and also began calling his protection force the "Storm Troopers", that developed into the SA (Sturmabteilung), or "Storm Detachment", also known as the Brownshirts. Incidentally, the SS (Schutzstaffel), rose from the ranks of the Storm Detachment to become Hitler's personal bodyguards.**

**As the months went by, the Nazis were winning more and more support from the lower classes, so Hitler, with his confidence at an all-time high, on November 8, 1923AD, staged his own revolution, called the Beer Hall Putsch, to bring the Reichstag back into nationalist hands, but it ended in failure and Hitler being sent to Landsberg prison for 1 year, where he dictated Mein Kampf, and, on November 9, 1923AD, the NSDAP being banned; however, it was re-founded in 1925AD.**

**Once released from prison, Hitler continued with his propaganda campaign to further win the people out of the hands of the communist-Marxists, until, after his efforts proved rather successful, which meant the peoples favoured him, he became Chancellor of Germany in 1933AD, and,**

after Hindenburg—Hindenburg, recall, became President of the Weimar Republic in 1925AD after Marxist-Ebert died, which, recall, was part of the suspicious “cosy alliance” between the communist elites and the nationalist elites—died in the same year, Hitler became the Head of State and the Fuhrer of the Third Reich in 1934AD.

Hitler had much to concern himself with after becoming the Fuhrer of the Third Reich in 1934AD, and, due to that, at least on the face of it, a free sector of the world was born; free from ruling class control, private banks, secret societies, poverty, the idiot takeover, and deviants. So, after the Anschluss on March 12, in 1938AD, where he unified Austria—his place of birth, with Germany, which was part of his German Unification strategy, and well aware that the Communists controlled both the U.S. and Britain—for example, the civil rights in 1866AD that legally forced White Americans to share their “transportation and accomodation” with non-Whites; Britain began permitting non-White immigrants; mostly Pakistanis, into Britain from around the 1920s AD—and that Britain and the Soviet Union must shortly and surely move against him, he, to protect the Nationalists from them, and to create an empire to equal Britain's and Russia's, and also for economic and military strategic purposes, invaded Poland on September 1, 1939AD.

Incidentally, it's alleged that Heinrich Himmler (Director of the Reich Main Security Office; Reichsfuhrer-SS), acting under orders from Hitler, staged a “false flag” incident so the German Army could have a legitimate pretext to invade Poland. Along with top Nazi official Reinhard Heydrich (SS-Obergruppenfuhrer—Lieutenant-General), Heinrich Muller (SS-Gruppenfuhrer—Major-General), was also involved in the covert “false flag” plan that was given the operational title Operation Himmler. The Nazi plan was to stage an attack on the German radio station at Gleiwitz, which is some 4 miles from the Polish border, by German soldiers wearing Polish Army uniforms. The apparent “false flag” attack was successfully carried out on August 31, 1939AD, and, with that, German military units began moving into Western Poland the next day; which was, September 1, 1939AD, and some claim that

**Wehrmacht units set about targeting and executing pro-communist Polish leaders, Jews, criminals, deviants, and also any prostitutes and homosexuals they happened upon.**

**After the German invasion of Poland, 16 days later on September 17, 1939AD, Stalin's Red Army also invaded Poland and also went on to persecute their enemies. Hear this, after invading Poland, the Red Army rounded up all officers in the Polish Army, which was around 15.000, marched them into the Katyn Forest, murdered them then buried them to conceal the evidence. The Katyn Massacre was discovered by the Germans via the Poles, who informed the Red Cross who, in turn, invited two U.S. Army colonels to investigate the site, but, after informing President Roosevelt, were threatened with court martial if they talked about it. Further, after invading Poland, the Soviets designated the Polish people as “Soviet citizens” after staged elections by the NKVD secret police. They also arrested and murdered their Polish political enemies along with military leaders, police officers, and priests. Under the NKVD, the Soviets deported hundreds of thousands of Polish people to Siberia and other remote parts of the Soviet Union in four waves between 1939AD and 1941AD!**

**Due to the invasion of Poland by Hitler and Stalin, WWII was really starting to gather pace and lethal now that those ideological enemies were all but nose to nose, but now something else would happen that would make no sense at all unless the Western elites were actually Communists themselves and conspiring with the Eastern, communist, elites. Hear this, although the communist Soviet elites and their Cheka, GPU, OGPU, and NKVD secret police had killed millions of Russians and others shortly after WWI in the Red Terror that occurred in 1918AD, famines during the era of collectivisation that began in 1928AD, and even murdered the Russian Royal Family in 1918AD, Nevill Chamberlain—the Prime Minister of Great Britain at that time, and Lebrun—the Prime Minister of France at that time, actually declared war on Hitler! That declaration was given on September 3, 1939AD.**

**So the leftist elites were now in a war with Hitler's Free Germany for invading Poland. But, remember this,**

unlike the Communists, Hitler hadn't dragged away and killed hundreds of thousands of Polish peoples be they Nationalists or Communists, and certailny he hadn't executed the German kaiser and the German Royal Family, so declaring war on Germany was never legitimate and Chamberlain, Roosevelt, and Lebrun should really have declared war on Stalin due to the mass violence in Soviet-Russia, etc. But, instead, they declared war on Hitler.

Hitler was fully aware that the elites, the Jews, and the Communists would unify against him and declare war on him for invading Poland, which wouldn't have surprised him so much even though the nation of Poland was Hitler's very own stomping ground that had been annexed from the nation of Germany and turned back into the nation of "Poland" just after WWI by German enemies, and understood he was massively outnumbered, which is why he deployed the Blitzkrieg war tactic, which is a tactic that relies on swiftly overrunning the enemy. Therefore, in an attempt to knock some of his enemies out of the war early and protect the Baltics and his Swedish mineral resources that were being interfered with by the British Royal Navy and Airforce, Hitler's forces invaded Denmark and Norway on April 8, 1940AD, and had them conquered by June 10, 1940AD. Next, to punish the French elites due to their post-WWI invasion of the Ruhr in 1924AD, that was intended to cause even more suffering to the common peoples in Germany, but also due to the failed Saar Offensive, Hitler invaded France on May 10, 1940AD, and had conquered France by June 25, 1940AD, which led to, in Britain, Chamberlain being replaced for Churchill, and, at around the same time, German forces also invaded and conquered Belgium, Luxembourg, and the Netherlands.

So Hitler was protecting his flanks, forging his Third Reich Empire, and raising the stakes. But although Hitler stated that he was against destroying the British Empire and offered to end the war with England, the British rejected the offer, so Hitler enacted a plan, called Operation Sealion, to conquer and knock England out of the war. Hitler's plan was to dominate air and sea on and above the English Channel, which is 20 miles wide from Northern

France to Southern England, but aborted Operation Sealion on September 17, 1940AD, due to Third Reich forces failing to defeat the British spitfires and navy during the Battle of Britain.

The Communists and Nationalists were seizing territory left, right, and centre, which could only mean an escalation in conflict and a final reckoning between the two ideological factions. That escalation arrived when the Soviets invaded Finland that begin the Winter War, which began on November 30, 1939AD, and ended on March 13, 1940AD, with a Soviet victory and half a million Fins dead. But, hear this, although the Communists had invaded Finland and killed half a million Fins, in November 1939AD the pro-communist Americans reworked their Neutrality Act to allow "cash and carry" purchases by the communist Soviets, which they began supplying to them in March 1941AD!

By this time, Hitler was surely feeling the pressure and wondering when the Communists would storm into Germany to purge the Nationalists and anyone who wasn't pro-Russian or Russian, so, to get the jump on Stalin and block the Allies, not only did he launch a large-scale military offensive on the Soviet Union on June 22, 1941AD, called Operation Barbarossa, but he also ordered the defensive Atlantic Wall built, which began in 1942AD, in order to stop an easy continental invasion by Britain and the U.S.



*Battle theatre of Operation Barbarossa*

**Incidentally, Operation Barbarossa was the largest military offensive in history. Guided by Fuhrer Hitler from the Wolf's Lair, or his bunker, in Rastenburg, East Prussia, Barbarossa began on June 22, 1941AD, one day after Mid-Summer, when German forces invaded the Soviet Union from the west. The Germans lined up some 4 million troops on a 1800-mile front reaching from the Arctic Circle to the Black Sea; the Stavka mobilised just under 6 million troops with three times as many held in reserve, and deployed some 33,000 artillery pieces, 11,000 tanks, and used some of their almost 20,000 aircrafts to block that initial German invasion. The Soviets held much more war weapons than the Germans, but German forces were better prepared, trained, and organised, at least, at the start. The German invasion force consisted of Army Norway, which was to operate in Northern Scandinavia; Army Group Center, which was under Field Marshal Fedor von Bock's command, included 1 million to 1.5 million infantrymen, the 2nd, 4th, and 9th Army who were supported by the Panzer 2nd, 3rd and 4th Group or Army, the Luftflotte 2, 1,700 panzers or tanks, and 14,000 heavy guns; Army Group North, which was under Field Marshal Wilhelm Ritter von Leeb's command, consisted of the 18th and 16th Army supported by the 4th Panzer Group or Army under the command of General Erich Hoepner, and the Luftflotte 1 or the 1st Air Fleet; German Army Group South, which was under Gerd von Rundstedt's command, consisted of the 1st Panzer Group or Army, the 6th Army, the 17th Army, the 11th Army, the Romanian 3rd and 4th Armies, and Luftflotte 4. Army groups North and South held less infantry, panzers, and heavy artillery pieces than Army Group Center. Operating behind the German frontlines in the conquered territories were the Waffen-SS and Einsatzgruppen units whose orders, from Reinhard Heydrich, were to execute captured Soviet commissars and, "at least in general terms", Jews. At full strength, a German panzer or tank division held between 150 and 200 tanks, motorized infantry, motorized artillery, motorized engineers, and, to support its logistical needs, each panzer division included 2,000 trucks. At full strength, a Soviet tank division held between 300 to 400 tanks and were supported by 1500 trucks.**



**Incidentally, the Stavka was the High Command of the Soviet Armed Forces during World War II. It was established on June 23, 1941AD, by a classified order signed by Joseph Stalin—Head of Government and Leader of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union.**

**The start of the eastern Summer campaign went well for German forces; advancing through the uncompleted Molotov Line, the Stalin Line—see note 8—and conquering much of the land and destroying many Soviet armies, armour, and airforce due to the revolutionary Blitzkrieg tactics—see note 9—that German forces had invented, so, by Autumn, October 1941AD, excluding the capture of Moscow by Army Group Centre, OKW, OKH, and the OKL had somewhat achieved their objectives; which was, Army Group North was to first capture Lithuania, second Latvia, third Estonia, and fourth Leningrad, with General Erich Hoepner's 4th Panzer Group spearheading the advance; Army Group Centre was to advance from Poland to first capture Belorussia, second Minsk, third Smolensk, and fourth Moscow; Army Group South was to first capture Kiev, second the Ukraine, and third the Caucasus oilfields.**

**So by October 1941AD Army Group South was fighting to secure the Ukraine; Army Group North was fighting to secure Leningrad, and Army Group Center was campaigning to capture Moscow. Capturing Moscow was important for strategic purposes, but, although German forces had captured Minsk on July 9, 1941AD, and Smolensk on July 15, 1941AD, and Smolensk lay only 400kms west of Moscow, which meant Moscow lay within their reach, Hitler, believing an offensive against the city at this time would expose the German flanks, delayed the final push on Moscow and ordered Hoth's 3rd Panzer Group, from Army Group Center, to turn north to help Army Group North destroy Soviet forces defending Leningrad, and Guderian's 2nd Panzer Group, from Army Group Center, to turn south to help Army Group South destroy Soviet forces at Kiev in the Ukraine.**

**Incidentally, 3 points: 1. The Oberkommando des Heeres (OKH), was the Supreme High Command of the German Army; the Oberkommando der Luftwaffe (OKL),**

was the Supreme High Command of the Air Force. Excluding the Waffen-SS, both were subordinate to the Oberkommando der Wehrmacht (OKW), which was the Supreme High Command of all German Armed Forces, and all, including the Waffen-SS, were subordinate to Fuhrer Hitler. 2. The Battle of Smolensk, which lasted from July 8 to July 31, 1941AD, began with approximately 135,000 German soldiers against 760,000 Soviet soldiers, and concluded in a German victory with approximately 30,000 Germans killed and 190,000 Soviets killed. 3. The Battle of Minsk, which lasted from June 22 to July 9, 1941AD, began with approximately 750,000 German soldiers, approx. 2,000 panzers, and 1,500 aircraft against approx. 671,000 Soviet soldiers, approx. 4,500 tanks, 14,000 artillery pieces, and 2,100 aircraft. It concluded with a German victory with approx. 12,000 German soldiers killed and 420,000 Soviet soldiers mostly captured, and many tanks and armour lost on both sides.

Hitler's diversion, from Moscow to Leningrad, met with some success; Guderian's 2nd Panzer Group, renamed the 2nd Panzer Army in October 1941AD, and Kleist's 1st Panzer Army, in the First Battle of Kiev, that lasted from August 23 to September 26, 1941AD, pincerd Kiev capturing 665,000 Soviet soldiers, but Hoth's 3rd Panzer Group failed to destroy Soviet forces defending Leningrad.

Post Hitler's victory in the First Battle of Kiev, the German offensive against Moscow was resumed 6 days later on October 2, 1941AD, when Hitler initiated Operation Typhoon. It was back in September 9, 1941AD, that Bock was ordered to draw up plans for the assault on Moscow, which was to begin on September 30. Just before the push, Bock held a war council on September 29 with his top commanders; Guderian and Kesselring being two of them, and told them that Moscow must be secured no later than November 7, which was Revolution Day, and before the onset of Winter. The plan was to encircle Moscow, or the 4th Panzer Army would strike to the north of Moscow against the Kalinin Front, which would cut the Moscow to Leningrad raillink; the German 2nd Panzer Army would strike to the south of Moscow, and Hoth's 3rd Panzer Army



would advance due east to Moscow. During staging, Bock spent much of late-September inspecting his troops from Army Group Center, and, along with Albert Kesselring, who was the generalfeldmarschall of the Luftwaffe that had begun bombing raids on Moscow on July 21, 1941AD, flew over Moscow to inspect the target.

Operation Typhoon began with Guderian and Hoth's AFVs leading the way and the infantry bringing up the rear, but, even before getting underway, German forces were fatigued and, as Guderian noted in his log, had logistical problems with tanks not being replaced and running low on fuel at the start of operations, which slowed their advance. Shortly after Bock's advance got underway, Hitler stated:

"After three months of preparations, we finally have the possibility to crush our enemy before the winter comes. All possible preparations were done...; today starts the last battle of the year..."

As Hitler was making ready to advance on Moscow, Soviet forces set about constructing defences at Rzhev-Vyazma, Mozhaisk, and Moscow, which formed the Moscow Defence Zone. Soviet forces assigned to Moscow's defence amounted to 1,250,000 men, 1,000 tanks, 7,600 guns, and the Soviet Air Force, or the Voenno-Vozdushnye Sily (VVS), were also involved but had just under 1,000 aircraft at their disposal due to severe losses over the last 4 months at the hands of the Luftwaffe.

After the advance on Moscow got underway, on October 7 the first of the snows fell which quickly turned the dirt roads to mud. Known as the "rasputista", or the "period of mud", it is an event that occurs during the Autumn rains and the Winter snows, and, along with chronic fuel shortages, the rasputista greatly slowed the German advance. It was due to those problems that OKH ordered no further operations until supply problems were fixed and the rasputista ends or the roads freeze over.

Once the ground had frozen and fuel was brought up, Bock's forces pushed ever nearer to Moscow as terror and panic hit the Moscovites, and martial law was implemented. It was around this time that Stalin, in order to better defend

**Moscow, replaced Marshal Semyon Timoshenko, on October 10, for Georgy Zhukov who had been previously organizing the defence of Leningrad.**

**Advancing on Moscow, German forces had secured Kalinin and Kaluga by October 14, and on October 15 much of the Soviet Government was evacuated to Kuibyshev, which is 800kms southeast of Moscow, but Stalin remained in Moscow after being warned by Zhukov that Moscow will not fall.**

**Due to successes in the north and south of Moscow, the Germans made a frontal assault against the fortified line outside Moscow, taking Mozhaisk and Maloyaroslavets on October 18, Naro-Fominsk on October 21, and Volokolamsk on October 27, and Zhukov withdrew his forces to the east of the Nara River. Meanwhile, in the southern theatre, the German 6th Army, from Army Group South, fought the 1st Battle of Kharkov or Kharkiv which lasted from October 20 to October 24, 1941AD. During the battle, the Soviet 38th Army defended the city while the Kharkov factories were dismantled and moved back east. In the northern theatre, German forces, or Army Group North, were besieging Leningrad.**

**South of Moscow, due to more bad weather, fuel problems, and blown bridges, Guderian's panzers were hampered in reaching Tula, which they did on October 26, 1941AD. A few days later, however, when German forces finally attacked Tula on October 29, they were defeated by the 50th Soviet Army, and, with that, OKH again ordered all offensive operations stopped until logistical problems were fixed and the mud roads freeze over. As the German war machine ground to a halt outside Moscow, Stalin held a military parade on November 7 (Revolution Day), in Red Square. It was a display of victory, but that confidence would shortly diminish, slightly, when, after Stalin ordered a series of counter-offensives in reply to the German forces who had stalled around the perimeter of Moscow, they were defeated by German forces.**

**The German Moscow offensive had stalled not least due to the cold weather; recall, Winter begins on December 21 and temperatures drop to well-below freezing in the higher latitudes of Soviet-Russia, which the Germans were**

unprepared for; recall, Hitler thought Moscow would be secured well-before the onset of Winter. Due to the difficulties, General Franz Halder held a war council on November 12, 1941AD, at Army Group Center's headquarters in Orsha, to inquire whether to rest up over Winter or to continue the campaign to secure Moscow, but, after the war council, although some of the generals were against it, decided to resume the attack.

Back at their posts, the generals had resumed their operations by November 15, 1941AD, due to the ground again freezing over, and German forces were again given orders to encircle Moscow. Eventually German forces, campaigning to the north and south of Moscow, met such heavy Soviet resistance that, on December 1, Army Group Centre made a direct assault from the west along the Minsk-Moscow highway near the city of Naro-Fominsk. However, the direct assault failed due to heavy resistance from the Soviet 1st Guards Motorized Rifle Division and the 33rd Soviet Army, and, four days later on December 5, German forces were forced into retreat by the Soviet Winter counter-offensive. It was a desperate fight attempting to capture Moscow, and, in his memoirs, Zhukov, addressing how determined the Germans were in that, wrote, "The enemy, ignoring the casualties, was making frontal assaults, willing to get to Moscow by any means necessary." Zhukov was very accurate; of course, because, to give a brief taste of Third Reich determination, on November 18, 1941AD, the 2nd Panzer Army (previously called the 2nd Panzer Group) moved out to encircle Moscow; on November 26 German panzers reached Kashira, which was a city that controlled the main road to Moscow; by November 28 the German 7th Panzer Division had secured the Moscow-Volga Canal, which was only 20 miles from the Kremlin, and, around the same time, just northwest of Moscow, German forces reached Krasnaya Polyana, which lays 12 miles northwest of Moscow, where the German officers could see some of Moscow's buildings through their fieldglasses.

The German offensive to secure Moscow had depleted both Soviet and German forces and there were shortages all round, but, nonetheless, as the Germans held their positions waiting again for fuel and the weather to clear, Stalin,

**Marshal Zhukov, and Marshal Vasilevsky, in their counter-offensive move to defend Moscow and drive the German forces back, relocated over 18 divisions, 1,700 tanks, and over 1,500 aircraft from Siberia and the Far East, to the Front, and by early December had built some 58 divisions. After Stalin gave the order, Soviet forces began their Winter offensive.**

**As the Winter offensive got underway and German forces, along the Moscow front, came under heavy artillery fire from Soviet armies, in his log, General Guderian wrote:**

**"the offensive on Moscow failed...We underestimated the enemy's strength, as well as his size and climate. Fortunately, I stopped my troops on 5 December, otherwise the catastrophe would be unavoidable."**

**Zhukov's counter-offensive began in the morning on December 5, 1941AD, and, along with the tanks and aircrafts noted above, held approximately 1 million infantrymen. As the attack began, Army Group Center's front lines came under intense artillery and infantry attack and, as the front line started to collapse, German forces began to fall back. After two days of heavy fighting and Soviet forces forcing the Germans into retreat, Soviet forces took control of the towns near Moscow; some of them being Krasnaya Polyana around December 7, 1941AD, Naro-Fominsk on December 26, 1941AD, Kaluga on December 28, 1941AD, and Maloyaroslavets on January 2, 1942AD. Although the Soviets fought well, on January 7, 1942AD, the offensive was ordered to stop due to low reserves, and, although German forces were pushed back from Moscow, they still held most of the land they had occupied previously under Operation Barbarossa.**

**In the end, the German military offensive, called Operation Typhoon, to capture Moscow, had failed, and the nearest German forces got to Moscow was around 8kms or 5 miles with a reconnaissance unit that reached the town of Khimki on December 2, and secured its Moscow-Volga Canal and railway station, before being forced into retreat.**

**Due to freezing temperatures, refits, and repairs, the Luftwaffe was grounded from mid-December 1941 to January 4, 1942AD, while the Soviet Airforce grew stronger. Once back in service, it was tasked with evacuating German Army units at Moscow, stabilising the supply lines to prevent the total collapse of Army Group Centre, and also to obstruct the Soviet pursuit of German forces retreating back from Moscow.**

**After the German defeat and 80-km retreat from Moscow, Hitler issued a directive ordering “his soldiers” to take up defensive positions and to hold their lines, but, ignoring the order apparently due to difficulties in holding the frontline, on December 14, 1941AD, General Franz Halder and General Gunther von Kluge gave the order to fall back to the west of the Oka river. Hitler, furious for disobeying his order, and after taking council with some of his German officers, cancelled Halder and Kluge's order to retreat, and, again, ordered all “his soldiers” to hold the line; stating, "digging trenches with howitzer shells if needed." In the end, due to the retreat and ignoring Fuhrer orders, Generalfeldmarschall Bock was sacked on December 18, Hitler's commander-in-chief, Walther von Brauchitsch, was sacked on December 19, General Guderian, who had withdrawn the 2nd Panzer Army due to Soviet forces seizing Tula outside Moscow during the counter-attack, was sacked on January 1942AD, and Hoepner and Strauss—commanders of the 4th Panzer and 9th Army, were, along with 40 other high-ranking German officers, also sacked, but some got recalled to duty.**

**As 1942 arrived, Bock was placed in command of Army Group South on January 20, 1942AD, and, in May 1942, his forces defeated the Soviets in the Second Battle of Kharkov. Bock deployed around 350,000 soldiers for the battle, and lost some 20,000 to 30,000 who were either killed or wounded; Timoshenko deployed approximately 765,000 soldiers for the battle, and lost approximately 170,000 killed, and approximately 100,000 wounded.**

**While Bock was fighting at Kharkov, a new German operation was about to get underway. Called Case Blue, which began in June 28, 1942AD, and ended on November**

**24, 1942AD, it was carried out in southern Russia and followed on from Operation Barbarossa's attempt to knock the Soviets out of the war. Case Blue had two mission objectives with two code names; Operation Edelweiss aimed at capturing the oil fields in Baku; Operation Fischreiher aimed at cutting off shipping traffic on the river Volga near the city of Stalingrad, while the rest of the German armies would hold their frontlines in the north and center.**

**Case Blue began on June 28, 1942AD, with the 4th Panzer Army, from Army Group South, advancing towards Voronezh. The German advance forced the Soviets into retreat, so, by July 5, units from the 4th Panzer Army had reached the Don river near Voronezh, and began the battle to capture the city. Later, German forces captured western Voronezh on July 6, and made it to the Don river near Stalingrad on July 26.**

**After Case Blue got underway, on July 7 Hitler divided Army Group South into Army Group A under the command of Field Marshal Wilhelm List, and Army Group B under the command of Maximilian von Weichs. Army Group A was ordered to seize the Baku oilfields in the Caucasus, while Army Group B protected its flanks along the Volga. Army Group A and B, that consisted of over 1 million men, were protected by over 2,000 aircrafts from the Luftwaffe, just under 2,000 panzers, and heavy artillery guns. Facing the Germans were just under 2 million Soviets.**

**In the north, while Leningrad was cut off and still under seige, in the south, Army Group B reached Stalingrad in early August 1942AD, but, due to Soviet resistance in the Caucasus, in October 1942AD Hitler aborted his attempt to capture the oilfields before Winter, and, to deny the Soviets the critical oil, ordered the Oberkommando der Luftwaffe (OKL) to bomb and destroy the plants. Although German forces failed to capture the oilfields, combat operations continued in the Caucasus until German forces were defeated at Stalingrad forcing them to retreat from the Caucasus.**

**Fighting so far to the east meant logistics became a real problem for German forces, so their advance forward was very much reduced, and it was the Luftwaffe's Junkers Ju 52 transport fleet, that delivered 200 tons of fuel per day to frontline units, that mostly kept them operational, but**

never enough could be airlifted in to meet their needs.

Although by mid-July 1942AD the Germans had made gains, due to Bock and Hitler disagreeing on future procedures, which Hitler viewed as Bock slowing the advance, Hitler sacked him on July 17.

On July 23, 1942AD, Army Group B began its advance towards the Don river near Stalingrad, but was hampered by the Soviet 62nd and 64th Armies who were blocking the advance. XIV Panzer Corps fought through Soviet defences and reached the Don on July 26, and, later, after crossing the Don river, German forces reached Kotelnikovo on August 2, 1942AD, so the Germans were some 100kms away from the city of Stalingrad.

On August 23, 1943AD, the German 6th Army, under the command of General Paulus, reached the perimeters of Stalingrad as it tracked two Soviet armies that had, after a previous but unsuccessful engagement with Paulus's 6th, retreated into the city, which began the Battle of Stalingrad.

The Battle of Stalingrad was one of the most bloodiest battles ever fought in all history; concluding with around 2 million casualties. Fighting began on August 23, 1942AD, and ended on February 2, 1943AD, with a Soviet victory. But, for that victory, what a price was paid. It was due to the Soviet's Operation Uranus, that lasted from November 19 to November 23, 1942AD, that German forces lost Stalingrad, and Commissar Nikita Khrushchev, who would later deliver atomic bombs to Castro igniting the Cuban Missile Crisis, or CMC, in 1962AD, after the CIA's failed Bay of Pigs invasion that was sanctioned by President Kennedy, was one of the Soviet leaders, along with Marshal Yeryomenko, who organised that defeat. Ordered by Stalin to defend the city, Marshal Chuikov, who, on September 11, 1942AD, replaced General Anton Lopatin as the commander of the Soviet 62nd Army, stated "We will defend the city or die in the attempt."

The attack began with a mass bombing campaign by the Luftwaffe, that destroyed and scarred much of the new 24-km city that Stalin had ordered built west of the Volga river, and, due to the Soviet strategy of holding as many houses, factories, and streets as possible, and replacing their

**KIA (killed in action) with fresh units from east of the River Volga that hugs the city, ended in troops being bogged-down in house-to-house fighting, as thousands of snipers terrorised the enemy; Vasily Zaytsev being the most decorated and honoured Soviet sniper operating in Stalingrad, with 225 CKs (confirmed kills) to his name.**

**German forces fought their way into Stalingrad using Stuka dive bombers, panzers, and heavy artillery, and by September 27, 1942AD, they occupied southern Stalingrad; the Soviets held the centre and north, but, critically, Soviet forces controlled the Volga shipping lanes, that they held throughout the battle for Stalingrad, and used it to bring in fresh troops and supplies and, due to their artillery batteries also positioned relatively securely on the east bank of the Volga, would also constantly bombard German forces. “Not a step back” was the order of the time (Order No. 227), due to the situation being so very critical, which meant Soviet commanders were obliged to, under orders from the Special Detachments, later renamed SMERSH, shoot anyone who refused to fight or fight hard. Soviet civilians also felt the pinch when, not being evacuated from the city, they were also forced to face and fight the German infantry, storm troops, panzer-tanks, Stukas, and the AFVs.**

**German forces continued their assaults on Soviet-held positions, with hundreds of thousands of casualties on both sides, and by November 1942AD had captured most of Stalingrad, and this was when Soviet forces launched their second counter-offensive, called Operation Uranus, that began in November 19, 1942AD. The first Soviet objective was to pincer and trap German forces at Stalingrad; the second was an assault on the Rzhev salient near Moscow. Although the second objective ended in failure, the first objective not only eventually paid off but was a decisive and costly defeat for the Germans. This is what happened: During Operation Uranus, Marshal Yeryomenko's forces helped surround the German 6th Army from the south, which cut off and trapped the German 6th Army, the Third and Fourth Romanian armies, and much of the 4th Panzer Army that was under the command of General Zeitzler, in the Don bend near Stalingrad.**



Shortly after Operation Uranus got underway, the Soviets worked up a follow up operation called Operation Little Saturn, which lasted from December 12, 1942AD, to February 18, 1943AD. During Operation Little Saturn, Soviet forces attacked and defeated Germany's Italian and Hungarian allies; they engaged German forces in Eastern Ukraine, and Marshal Yeryomenko blocked General Erich von Manstein and the Fourth Panzer Army's efforts to rescue their forces—Manstein's plan was called Operation Winter Storm: August 3 to 23, 1943AD—who were cut off and surrounded in the Don bend at Stalingrad.

Trapped in the Don bend, the 6th Army and the 4th Panzer Army was eventually worn down and defeated with many from the 6th and 4th fighting to the death, many surrendering, and many escaping due to the effort made by Hermann Goring—commander of the Luftwaffe, who airlifted thousands of troops out and supplied the rest but never enough could be done to save them all, so, on December 23, 1943AD, German forces caught in the pocket were abandoned to fate. Before being written off, Hitler promoted General Paulus to Field Marshal, because, aware that no German Field Marshall had ever surrendered, he expected Paulus to fight to the death or shoot himself before capture. But, still, according to Hitler, Paulus surrendered to enemy forces. Hitler stated:

“Paulus could have freed himself from all sorrow and ascended into eternity and national immortality, but he prefers to go to Moscow.”

On the other hand, General Paulus, who survived captivity, claimed that the Soviets caught him off guard; that he did not surrender.

Post-Battle of Stalingrad, while the German frontline had been pushed back, there were hundreds of German soldiers trapped in the city who had survived by concealing themselves in the bombed-out buildings and such things. But, according to the Soviets, by March 15, 1943AD, they had all either been captured, killed, or had shot themselves.

Elsewhere on the battlefield, Marshal Zhukov initiated Operation Polar Star that began on February 10, 1943AD,

and ended on April 1, 1943AD. The plan was to encircle German forces to the north of Leningrad, and to encircle German forces around the Demyansk area, but Soviet forces failed to pincer German forces who retreated from the salient prior to the engagement, but they did recapture the Demyansk salient. As the siege of Leningrad began to diminish and German forces were losing ground in other theatres, Soviet forces around Leningrad were empowered as Army Group North became somewhat cut off.

Although Operation Uranus and Operation Little Saturn brought great victories for the Soviets; recall, along with cutting off the German 6th Army they also captured Kharkov, German forces struck back with offensives aimed at recapturing Kharkov, which would be the Third Battle of Kharkov, which lasted from February 19 to March 15, 1943AD, which they were successful in, and, on the Eastern Front northwest of Stalingrad at the Kursk salient, German forces were defeated in the largest tank battle ever fought in all history.

Incidentally, during the battle for Kursk, the Allies, or the U.S. Seventh Army, under Lieutenant General George S. Patton, and the British Eighth Army, under General Bernard Montgomery, on July 10, 1943AD, invaded Sicily at the Gulf of Gela area, and, along with opening a lethal second front against Axis forces, Mussolini was captured on July 25/43. Later, however, Hitler launched the Gran Sasso raid to rescue Mussolini, which they were successful in, and returned him to Rome where he set up the German and Italian nationalist-backed Italian Social Republic state which led to a civil war and later to his death in 1945AD. Further, in the same month of July 43, the British Royal Airforce firebombed Hamburg, Germany, killing over 40,000 German civilians.

Amassed for the battle, that lasted from July 4-5 to August 23, 1943AD, with two primary operation names; Operation Citadel and Operation Kutuzov, were 3,600 Soviet tanks, and 2,365 German tanks, and, although the Soviet T34 would dominate Soviet armour at the Kursk, the Soviets also deployed, amongst others, the U.S.-built M3 Lee tanks and the British-built Churchills which came into

**Soviet possession due to the ironic Lend-Lease agreement on March 1941AD, which was part of the alliance between the communist Soviet Union, the capitalist U.S., and Britain. Standing alongside the armour were approximately 1 million Axis German soldiers and approximately 1.9 million Allied Soviet soldiers. Although the Soviets lost more soldiers than the Germans, the battle for Kursk ended with another important victory for the Red Army.**

**After the battle, General Guderian wrote:**

**“With the failure of Zitadelle we have suffered a decisive defeat. The armoured formations, reformed and re-equipped with so much effort, had lost heavily in both men and equipment and would now be unemployable for a long time to come. It was problematical whether they could be rehabilitated in time to defend the Eastern Front ... Needless to say the [Soviets] exploited their victory to the full. There were to be no more periods of quiet on the Eastern Front. From now on, the enemy was in undisputed possession of the initiative.”**

**Post battles at Stalingrad and the Kursk, along with German operations and Allied operations, Stalin and the Stavka initiated many military offensives aimed at pushing the German frontlines west out of the Soviet Union. Here are most of those Soviet, German, and Allied events that led to the end of WWII: (1) the second Battle of Smolensk, which lasted from August 7 to October 2, 1943AD, was intended to displace German forces from in and around Smolensk and Bryansk. Smolensk had been under German occupation since the first Battle of Smolensk in 1941AD; (2) the Battle of the Dnieper, from August 26 to December 23, 1943AD, was intended to capture areas of the eastern bank of the Dnieper from German forces, which they were successful in doing. At the same time, Kiev was also liberated in the Battle of Kiev; (3) the Lower Dnieper strategic offensive operation, which lasted from September 26, 1943AD, to December 20, 1943AD. The Soviets breached the German line north of the Black Sea, and cut off the German 17th Army who were occupying the Crimean Peninsula. It was another costly operation; Soviet casualties**

amounted to approximately 173,000 killed and 581,000 sick and wounded, but, during the three-month battle, German forces had lost more areas on the eastern bank of the river Dnieper, or the East Wall, and also lost the Second Battle of Kiev with approximately 30,000 killed. At the end of the Dnieper Offensive and the Lower Dnieper Offensive, Soviet forces held a bridgehead some 300kms in length and 80kms deep. They had cut off the Crimea forcing the Germans to relocate their front further west. Most of west bank of the Dnieper, or the West Wall, was still largely held by German forces, but it could not last; (4) the Battle of Lenino, from October 12 to October 13, 1943AD, was also intended to displace German forces occupying the eastern bank of the Dnieper River (the East Wall; Ostwall), and to break through the German Panther-Wotan defensive line that Hitler, on September 15, 1943AD, ordered Army Group South to retreat to, which runs from the Sea of Azov along the river Dnieper to the Gulf of Finland and Narva. The offensive ended in a Soviet failure; (5) the Dnieper Offensive and the Lower Dnieper Offensive was so successful that the Soviets staged a follow up offensive, called the Dnieper-Carpathian Offensive, which lasted from December 24, 1943AD to April 17, 1944AD. The offensive met with success; the Red Army advanced from the lower Dnieper to Poland, the Carpathian Mountains, and Romania, and German Army Group South was cut in two; (6) on January 27, 1944AD, a Soviet offensive expelled German forces from Leningrad ending the longest siege in history; the siege endured from September 8, 1941AD to January 27, 1944AD. The Soviet offensive was arrested or halted on the pre-war Estonian border by German Army Group North forces, and delayed Soviet operations in the Baltic Sea region, and most lethal; (7) Operation Margarethe was the German plan, drafted on March 12, 1944AD, to invade and occupy the state of Hungary. Now on the defensive and retreat, Hitler mostly required Hungarian oil to keep his forces operational, but was also concerned with Hungary changing sides. Margarethe was initiated on March 19 when German forces entered Hungary. During the occupation, it's claimed that Adolf Eichmann masterminded the collection and transportation of 550,000 Hungarian Jews to the Nazi death camps, and the Hungarian leaders were in on it; (8)

the Crimean Offensive, which lasted from April 8 to May 12, 1944AD, was a Soviet offensive whose objective was to displace German and Romanian forces in the Crimea. At the end of the battles, Axis forces evacuated the Crimea by sea, with much lives lost; (9) the Allies were fighting in North Africa. Rome was captured on June 4, 1944AD, and the D-Day landings, or Operation Neptune, occurred on June 6, 1944AD, bringing more catastrophic losses to the Germans; the loss of France and eventually Western Europe; (10) Operation Bagration was the Soviet plan to defeat German Army Group Centre that was occupying Soviet Byelorussia. The operation began on June 23, 1944AD, and ended in August 19, 1944AD. Soviet forces destroyed 28 of the 34 divisions of Army Group Centre, defeated the German 4th Army, much of the 3rd Panzer Army and 9th Army, and broke the German frontline. After the collapse of the German frontline, the Soviets went on to encircle and destroy German forces around the Minsk area on July 4, 1944AD. Post-collapse of German forces in Byelorussia, the Soviets advanced into Lithuania, Poland, and Romania. The battles under Bagration cost the German approximately 450,000 soldiers. Incidentally, in France on August 25, 1944AD, Paris was liberated by the local resistance and the Free French Forces that were led by General Charles de Gaulle. Operation Jassy–Kishinev was a Soviet offensive in Eastern Romania from August 20 to August 29, 1944AD. The Soviet 2nd and 3rd Ukrainian Fronts engaged German Army Group South Ukraine which led to the encirclement and destruction of the German forces which, in turn, cleared the way into greater Romania and the Balkans; (11) the Baltic Offensive, which lasted from September 14 to November 24, 1944AD, was a successful Soviet operation that ended with German forces retreating from Estonia and Lithuania. Approx. 90,000 killed and wounded on both sides. After the fighting retreat from the Panther-Woten line, Estonia, and Lithuania, etc., German forces fell back even further, but, as they fell back westwards, they still had a major war to fight; the British and Americans were heavily bombing Germany by this time; the Americans were making steady progress in Italy, and the Soviets had the initiative and were advancing west unstoppably towards Berlin—the Third Reich capital.

**Incidentally, the British Eighth Army, under the command of Montgomery, invaded the Italian mainland on September 3, 1943AD, during Operation Baytown, the same day that Italy's government signed an armistice with the Allies. The German response was swift; they disarmed Italian forces, seized control of Italian areas, and built defensive lines.**

**(12) the Budapest Offensive was an attack on Hungary by Soviet forces, which lasted from October 29, 1944AD until the fall of Budapest on February 13, 1945AD; (13) the Ardennes Counteroffensive, also called the Battle of the Bulge, was initiated by Third Reich High Command and lasted from December 16, 1944AD to January 25, 1945AD. It was Hitler's final large scale offensive on the Western Front, and his attempt to stop the Americans using the port of Antwerp but also to cut their forces in half which would give them the chance to envelop and destroy them forcing them to accept a pro-German peace treaty. In the battle, German forces totalled approximately 450,000, 1,400 tanks, 2,600 artillery pieces, and approx. 1,000 aircraft. The Americans fielded approx. 610,000 troops. Third Reich casualties were somewhere between approx. 60,000 and 100,000 either killed, captured, wounded, or missing; American casualties were 19,000 killed. After the defeat, German forces retreated to the 630km-long Siegfried Line, also called the West Wall, which lays opposite the French Maginot Line; (14) the Vistula–Oder Offensive from January 12 to February 2, 1945AD, was a Red Army operation on the Eastern Front, that concluded with Soviet forces standing merely 60kms from Berlin. Soviet forces, under the command of Zhukov and Marshal Ivan Konevmade, advanced almost 500kms from the river Vistula in Soviet-Russia to the river Oder in Germany, capturing, amongst others, Krakow and Warsaw. Slowing the Soviet advance was German Army Group A under the command of Colonel-General Josef Harpe who was heavily outnumbered. Once at the Oder, the advance on Berlin was delayed until Zhukov dealt with pockets of German resistance, and Hitler relocated to the Fuhrerbunker on January 16, 1945AD, from the Wolf's Lair; (15) Operation Hannibal was a German naval operation plan drawn up to**

evacuate German troops and civilians from Courland, East Prussia, and the Polish Corridor from mid-January to May 1945AD, as the Soviets advanced west during the East Prussian and East Pomeranian Offensives. It was one of the largest evacuations by sea in history, involving over a million people; (16) Operation Solstice was one of the final German armoured offensives on the Eastern Front. It lasted from February 15, 1945AD to February 18, 1945AD and, although it ended in failure, it delayed the Red Army's advance on Berlin; (17) the Berlin Strategic Offensive Operation by the Soviet Union in 1945AD, was the battle to capture Berlin.

The Vistula–Oder Offensive from January 12 to February 2, 1945AD, had concluded with Soviet forces positioned around 60kms east of Berlin. Due to that breach, German forces drew up a defence plan on March 9, called Operation Clausewitz, and, under the command of General Gotthard Heinrici, defences were built around Berlin on March 20.

By April 16, the Soviets, with 1.1 million soldiers, were ready for the final push on Berlin. The plan was to encircle Berlin using 3 Soviet armies that would attack from the east, south, and north. The Soviets encircled the city after defeating German forces at Seelow Heights and Halbe, and, on April 20, 1945AD, which was Hitler's birthday, the 1st Belorussian Army, led by Zhukov, began shelling Berlin's citycentre. On April 23 General Helmuth Weidling had taken command of what was left of German forces in Berlin, which were a handful of wrecked Wehrmacht and Waffen-SS divisions, Volkssturm, and the Hitler Youth, but the war was lost. After shelling Berlin's citycenter, the Soviets advanced into Berlin in their tens of thousands, therefore, closing in on the Reich Chancellery, which is close to the Fuhrerbunker where Hitler was in residence, and imminent capture and dishonour being inevitable, Hitler shot himself on April 30, 1945AD.

After Soviet forces had fought their way into Berlin, and after they had captured the Reich Chancellery and General Weidling, on May 2, 1945AD Weidling was taken to General Chuikov where he surrendered to him.

**Post-Hitler's death and WWII, Soviet forces occupied East Germany; the Allies occupied the remainder, but the war was far from over; while Free Germany was put back on the road to anarchy and a slow and painful death, the world braced itself as the multicultural agenda continued when millions and millions of non-White peoples were permitted to move into the U.S. and Europe, which means, that key element that formulate the agenda that brought Fuhrer Hitler to power; immigrants, who were being used by the fascist elites to break people like Hitler, continued unabated. See the ECSC and the U.S. Civil Rights Act 1957AD.**

**Incidentally, get this for a daring double cross: after WWII had ended, in May 1945AD British Prime Minister, Winston Churchill, ordered the British Chiefs of Staff to make plans for the conquest of the Soviet Union or Soviet forces occupying East Germany! Made public in 1998AD, the plan, called Operation Unthinkable, was never acted upon; due to too many Soviet forces, but the operation was to begin on July 1, 1945AD.**

**In conclusion on Small Comforts To Reich Fuhrer, WWII & Collapse: Hitler's five years of suffering in Vienna were some of the things that had awakened him to just how cruel the elites are to the people, just how badly managed the nations are, just how unfair it all was, and turned him into the dangerous revolutionary leader he eventually became. He understood the elites had phased out farming communities by encouraging the people to move out of the countryside and into the cities to work in the unhealthy and dangerous factories during the Industrial Revolution Age, and, once there—and this was one of the major problems that led to the people demanding fairer treatment and the leaders of the Socialists and Communists appearing to apparently help them—were left to go without food, or beg, borrow, or steel, if they failed to find work because there was no Welfare to stop them from starving or even from dying. So it was a hopeless situation, which is why he addressed and exposed those social injustices in Mein Kampf, and had won favour with the people by including “Socialism” in the title of his new social organisation**



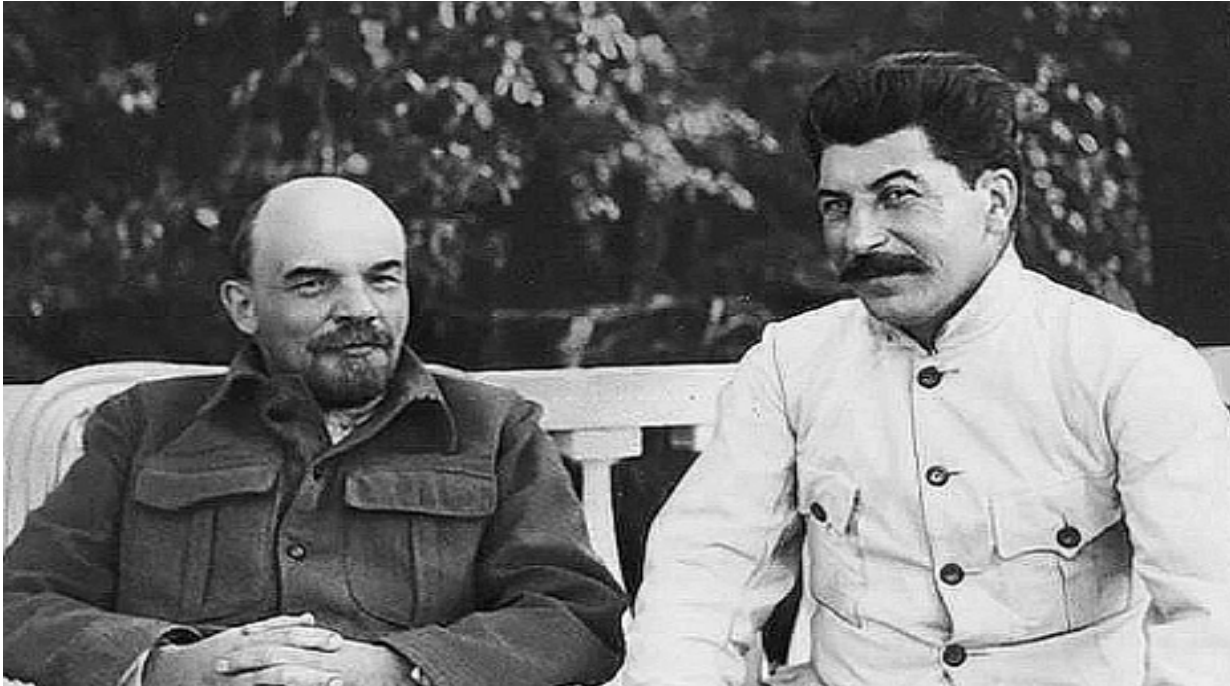
**theory; which is, “National Socialism”. In the end, while the social injustices and the starving people led to the founding of Soup Kitchens, Poor Houses, and trade unions under the control of the Socialists, where, if the worker joined one of their unionist groups, they would give, “at least for a while”, the worker and his family a little money so they didn't go hungry “in between jobs”, the needless suffering and injustices taught Hitler that the nations are not only ran by the elites for the elites, but that the common people were in the process of being broken by them, including himself. To Hitler and the Nationalists it was the communist Jews and their puppet gentiles—the White people or the Whiter looking Eurasians who work for the Jews “for a price”, who were the perpetrators behind the needless suffering of the common people. To the Communists it was the capitalist, royalist, and nationalist elites with a hint of a Jewish involvement. But, to me, the elites who manoeuvred the people into that unfair and hopeless situation (if you failed to find work you and your family starved), were merely the Eurasian-Roman ruler elites engaging in their ancient race and class war. Simple as that.**

**Hitler's rise to power but also the fightback against the communist ruling classes and their leftist agenda; which, recall, amongst other things, is to destroy and integrate the natives by using immigrants and poverty against them, came only “after” the founding of the communist Weimar Republic and “after” the “cosy alliance” between the German nationalist and communist elites, which meant Hitler and his supporters evidently didn't trust the Weimar Republic's leader elites at all. But worse than that, the elites, due to Hitler's rise to power, had lost control over the political right in Germany, which meant war became inevitable as they unified against Hitler to stop him building an empire equal to the British and Soviets'. Post-WWII, Hitler lost his Third Reich empire and the British Empire was fading away fast, but the Soviet Empire, or their Sphere of Influence, greatly increased to, hear this, include Poland, Hungary, Czechoslovakia, Ukraine, Albania, Bulgaria, Romanian, Estonia, Latvia, Luthitania, and Yugoslavia! But it gets worse. Hear this, the Western Powers, although they helped destroy Hitler's**

**attempt to build an EMPIRE, did nothing but protest until, being difficult for them to justify being allies with the Communists, the American Government, in a grand volte face, declared war on them through the Truman Doctrine they enacted in 1947AD! Further, once the Communists occupied those satellite nations, the patriotic natives, or those who were fighting back against Soviet occupation, Soviet settlers, and also collectivisation, were deported to the feared gulag camps, or forced labour camps, in Siberia, never to return, by the NKGB, later known as the KGB!**

**Incidentally, the communist NKGB was the successor to the NKVD, and the NKVD, that succeeded the Cheka, the GPU, and the OGPU, was the secret police organisation that was involved in political repression and the Great Purge. Ordered by Stalin, the Great Purge witnessed the imprisonment and execution of millions of people. It was led by Genrikh Yagoda, Nikolai Yezhov, and Lavrentiy Beria, and Beria, relative to the Katyn Forest massacre, after becoming the head of the NKVD after Yezhov was executed in 1940AD, was the figure who sent a note (no. 794/B) to Stalin stating that the Polish prisoners of war, or military officers, intelligentsia, doctors, and priests, kept at camps and prisons in Western Belarus and Ukraine, were enemies of the Soviet Union, and recommended their execution. Therefore, with Stalin's approval, Beria authorised the NKVD to execute 22,000 Poles in what became known as the Katyn Forest massacre.**

**It's claimed that the Jews were the true force behind all the killings in Soviet-Russia; for instance, Beria and his entourage were thought to be mostly Jews, and the Jewish Anti-Fascist Committee Affair, the Leningrad Affair, the Slansky trial, and the Doctors' Plot (Stalin died on March 5, 1953), all point to a definite Jewish network operating in the Soviet Union during the Stalinist era. But, what I believe, is that, just like Lenin and Stalin, the Jews were also Eurasians, so make of that what you will. As for the true Russian-White peoples who descended from the ancient Germanic race that the Romans were in battle with many centuries ago, and the Russian-Han-Whites, they were very likely integrated. See images below of Lenin and Stalin.**



*Vladimir Lenin & Joseph Stalin*

**Incidentally, 4 points:**

**1. Collectivism is a social organisation system where the group; class or race, is viewed as being more important than the individual; Individualism is the antithesis of Collectivism.**

**In the Soviet Union post-Bolshevik Revolution in 1917AD, agricultural collectivisation, or state owned farms, was implemented between the years 1928 and 1940AD during the Stalin era as part of the Boss's five-year plan to modernise Soviet-Russia. It was a system where the communist government, in their "planned economy" programme, ended private ownership of farms, and, due to the high production quotas set by the government, which were supposedly done to increase the food supply to the urban population, in part due to Stalin's industrialisation program, obliged the farmers to sell most of their harvest to the state at low prices set by the state. This led to the peasants, who believed the Red October (Bolshevik) socialist revolution was meant to be about giving more freedom and land to the peasants, viewing collectivisation as a betrayal of the people and to another period of serfdom. To help the farmers meet their quotas in grain production, the Soviet Government promised them tractors but failed apparently due to issues in the industrial sector, so the peasants began attacking Soviet authorities. The government response was to blame the Kulaks (the middle class), which were the better off or harder working people, claiming they were**

withholding grain and organising resistance to collectivisation. Stalin eventually began to view the Kulaks as a class enemy of the people, so, along with anyone else opposed to collectivisation, ordered the OGPU and the NKVD—the Soviet secret police, to eliminate them by seizing their property, deporting them to the gulag work camps, and executing them. All-in-all, around 1 million to 5 million Kulaks were sent to forced labour camps, and collectivisation led to approximately 10 million killed in famines.

Along with Collectivism, due to the Stalinist regime associating churches to the old tsarist rule they overthrew in 1917AD, churches were closed, priests were arrested, and schools were secularized. This gave rise to the peasants viewing the Communists as atheists or anti-Christians, etc.

2. Socialism and Communism are social organisation theories that are anti-tribal and anti-nationalist in essence. They both emerged long before National Socialism, and National Socialism had emerged due to, I suppose, amongst things, the Nationalists viewing Communism as a Jewish tool to break down their racial competitors through immigration or an influx of foreigners and integration. Republicanism came before Socialism, of course, which, recall, was a political and ideological movement aimed at displacing Absolutism for parliament democracy, which can be seen through critical figures like Eliot, Cromwell, Marat, Napoleon, and Payne, etc.

3. When the trade unions, or “free association of workers”, emerged during the Industrial Revolution Age in England, they shocked the elites so much that, hear this, in 1799AD they enacted the COMBINATION ACT that banned them! The English people were restless for equal rights, and come the Reform Bill, that was enacted in 1824AD, working men finally won the right to associate with each other which quickly led to, throughout the working peoples' industries, trade unions being formed to protect them from the unscrupulous factory/housing owners who, in turn for their hard labour, gave them mostly only low wages, bad clothes, tarnished foods, and slum-condition housing to rot away in.

**4. As in Britain and France with the republican and socialist movements fighting against the aristocratic and capitalist elites who were oppressing the people, in Russia, the people were also fighting the aristocratic and capitalist elites for equality in their nation. The Russian aristocrats had been in power from the very start of the founding of Russia; Kievan Rus', the first state, being founded in 882AD as part of the Barbarian Nations programme that emerged post-Rome, or given the tribes in the provinces a new identity. But by 1905AD the old order was collapsing; the social order was changing. The conflict, between the Russian aristocrats and their peoples, came to a head in Saint Petersburg on January 3, 1905AD, when a workers' strike broke out at the Putilov Works in the city of Saint Petersburg. The strike continued after January 3 gathering many supporters, so by January 7, 1905AD, there were around 140,000 protesters on the streets in Saint Petersburg demanding change. On Sunday, January 9, 1905AD, Father Georgi Gapon led a march, through the streets of Saint Petersburg to Tzar Nicholas II's Winter Palace, to demand food and an end to oppression, but, once at the Winter Palace, the tsar's guards shot at the protesters, killing approximately 1,000 of them, in an event known as Bloody Sunday. Although the aristocrats had broke the rebellion in Saint Petersburg, the people continued their call for change and also wanted a republic. That change would emerge when the Soviets began organising resistance to the tsar's government, which led to the successful socialist February Revolution in 1917AD, the tsar's abdication on March 2, 1917AD, the Bolshevik Revolution also in 1917AD after the February revolution, and, later, Tzar Nicholas II and the Russian Royal Family were executed on July 17, 1918AD, under an order from Bolshevik Command.**

**Before closing this piece, know that an investigation, carried out in 1945AD, revealed that, from the 1920s to the 1940s, AD, Prescott Bush—George W. Bush's grandfather, ran the Union Banking Corporation that was linked to the German Steel Trust operated by Thyssen and Flick, which was an industrial company that produced much of the steel and explosives that were later used by the Wehrmacht during WWII. Prescott Bush wasn't the only U.S. elite who**

held office in companies that financed Hitler's war effort; Henry T. Ford, who, recall, published half a million copies of the Protocols in 1920AD, through his company, General Motors, built military trucks for the Wehrmacht. Further, Standard Oil and Chase Bank, which was controlled by the Jewish Rockefellers, also financed Hitler along with many of Wall Street's leading brokerage houses. Standard Oil also collaborating with I.G. Farben, and, get this, I.G. Farben was the notorious company that manufactured the "Zyklon B gas" that the Nazis supposedly used to gas 6 millions Jews with in Auschwitz, Sobibor, and Treblinka, etc. Further, in his book, Trading with the Enemy and The Nazi American Money Plot, Charles Higham claims that the Roosevelt administration tried to cover up Bush, the Rockefellers, and Ford's support for the Nazis. Incidentally, Prescott Bush represented Connecticut in the U.S. Senate from 1952 to 1963AD, which was when the Bush family became involved in politics.

## **THE STALIN LINE**

**Note 8. The Stalin Line was a military defensive network that wound its way along the western border of the Soviet Union. The Soviets began construction on the Stalin Line in the 1920s AD to defend against the West, and the line held hundreds of concrete bunkers with powerful guns emplacements. After the Soviets invaded Poland, Finland, and Bessarabia, the Stalin Line was neglected to reflect the Soviets' "new border", or new empire, and a new defensive line further west, called the Molotov Line, which ran from the Baltic Sea to the Carpathian mountains, began to be built in 1941AD, which utilised the anti-tank guns from the Stalin Line, but also had its own pillboxes and artillery. It was because of those defensive alterations that both lines failed to stop the German military invasion, called Operation Barbarossa, of the Soviet Union in 1941AD.**

## **LIGHTNING WAR**

**Note 9. The German WWII Blitzkrieg tactics or "lightning war" is sourced to WWI and the German Army on the Eastern Front. What they would do, Stormtroopers would break through enemy defences in order to get to the rear of the enemy causing their front-line to collapse. Due to the slow pace of the infantry, however, the manoeuvre often failed until "motorised infantry" replaced non-motorised infantry achieving greater success. Using motorised infantry, what they would do, the panzer tanks, in radio-communications with the Luftwaffe Airforce and the rest of the panzer units, would penetrate enemy formations or armies to either double-pincer, pocket, and liquidate them or advance forward to hit the target. In the development of the "lightning war" or armoured warfare and armoured fighting vehicles (AFVs), one of Hitler's top generals, Heinz Guderian, was a pioneer. In his book, *Achtung – Panther!* he spelled out all his ideas, and stated to his panther forces:**

**“You are the cavalry. Your job is to break through and keep going.”**

**Out of all the tanks built by the German engineers during WWII, the Panzer IV predominated and seen action in most theatres; approximately 9,000 were built.**



# **CHAPTER 7**

## **THE MULTICULTURAL FRANKFURT SCHOOL**

**After President Hindenburg was forced to make Hitler Chancellor of the German Weimar Republic in 1933AD, due to the German peoples favouring Hitler and the NSDAP, the Eurasian, communist, leaders, from the Institute for Social Research, aborted their communist, anti-native; pro-foreigner, programme, took to their guilty heels and fled to safer parts of the world; parts under, and have always been under, Eurasian control. Finding a safe haven in leftist-held America—the U.S. Government, under the leadership of President Hoover and President Roosevelt at that time, did not to stop them as the National Socialists in Germany had done under the leadership of Hitler—in 1935AD they opened their new Marxist school in New York, and called it the Frankfurt School (FS). A school similar to Boas's School of Anthropology that, recall, was founded in 1899AD also in the U.S., from their new Marxist headquarters in New York, they would go on to promote the exact same anti-White programme they had fled Germany for promoting, which led to the shaky multicultural American society we know and equivocate over today. Similar to Payne and Boas's leftist work in the U.S., the Frankfurt School's work and efforts appear humane and enlightened, but nothing can be further from the truth; because, firstly, in the U.S., excluding Rockwell's American Nazi Party that stagnated after he was shot and killed on August 25, 1967, by a Marxist agent in disguise as a friend and patriot, all political partys were leftist, or none of them stood on a platform of repatriating non-Whites or banning non-White immigrants into the U.S., which meant the American White people, who may have been against sharing their nation with non-Whites, had no political voice as an option or means to reject it; secondly, creating multicultural societies “through laws and force”, and permitting mass immigration, which the elites did, is very reckless and unfair and could only ever be viewed as suspicious because, as most believed, it could only ever lead to resentment due to the White people losing much of their jobs and lands, which**

they did. Because “White flight” was the result of forced integration, it's proven that the White race was against it, therefore it was a conspiracy to wreck White America. Incidentally, in the U.S. “Black flight” is also occurring due to Mexican migration into their sectors, and White Flight also occurred and is occurring in Britain and Norway, etc., which means the immigrants and their descendants, who typically group together therefore end up in, hear this for irony, “non-leftist tribal areas”, which, incidentally, would have greatly upset Boas and Weil and the rest of those pseudo Leftists if they were genuine Leftists, which, of course, they were not, are now in possession of vast areas within the White nations, and in possession of millions of jobs which would have otherwise went to the Eurasian and White peoples, so hate is amongst us, which was the design, so be on guard!

To conclude on the Frankfurt School: The Frankfurt School was founded in the U.S. after Payne's and Boas's critical work on behalf of the communist Left, and before the Civil Right Act in 1957AD was enacted, which makes it another one of the key left-wing organisations in the major effort to forcibly transform White America nation into a multicultural one.

Alluding to the “Jews” using non-Whites to help destroy the White race and their societies, in White Power Commander Rockwell shockingly wrote:

“The Jewish aim is and remains the wiping out of the best of the goyim [Whites] as the Talmud puts it. They keep getting us killed - now by the millions - while they increase and grow stronger. In the beginning of this chapter I mentioned that there was one other Oriental group beside the Jews that has distinguished itself in history for the magnitude of its slaughter and bloodthirstiness - the Mongols. The same Asiatic strain in the Jews that produces such a love of slaughter and cruelty is found in its pure, original form in the Mongol. When this yellow beast of Asia rises up and stalks the earth, the Great Writer of history dips his pen in blood and prepares to write chapters of death, suffering, and destruction. The Jews have gathered

**up the colored peoples of the earth, and agitated them to unlimited dreams of world conquest.”**

## **CHAPTER 8**

### **THE MULTICULTURAL CIVIL RIGHTS LAWS**

**The first U.S. civil rights laws, or multicultural society enforcing laws, that, incidentally, emerged just after the American Civil War—the American Civil War began in 1861, ended in 1865AD, with possibly around 750,000 fatalities—are: (1) the Civil Rights Act 1866AD; (2) the Civil Rights Act 1875AD, also called the Enforcement Act. The Enforcement Act was an act signed into law by President Ulysses S. Grant (recall, Grant was a northern general in the American Civil War), that forced White Americans to share their “accommodation and transport” with non-Whites; (3) the Civil Rights Act 1957AD, which was founded on the tenth anniversary of Israel's re-founding in 1947AD, paved the way for forced integration into American institutions of education; schools and universities.**

**There are many more equality acts issued by the Eurasian rulers through the U.S. Government, other than the three I have included here in this book. But, critically, the ones I have included show how the U.S. elites, and suspiciously so, were copying the Catholic Church, the British Empire, the Republicans', the Socialist', Payne's, and the Communists' efforts to de-tribalise and de-nationalise the White race. That also shows and proves that a inter-generational network, conspiring against the peoples, does in fact exist and, recall, I claim that the network was in existence from even before the founding of Rome in 753BC, and very likely came out of NW India and the Levant.**

**To conclude on The Multicultural Civil Rights Laws: The Civil Rights laws were more about the U.S. elites breaking their race and class enemies; the Eurasian/Whites, who are greatest threat to their dictatorship, rather than loving non-Whites. Need evidence? Well, if you think civil right laws for the freed African slaves was about “love”, then how do you explain the way in which the elites treated the African Americans compared to how they treated the Native American Indians? How, after the American Civil War ended in 1865AD, and the Eurasians/Whites continued**

to settle their way across North America to fulfill their Manifest Destiny, civil rights were enacted for the Africans but, at the same time, or just 2 years after the civil war ended, the U.S. Government, in 1867AD, unleashed General George Armstrong Custer against the Native Indians in the American Indian Wars, which were wars to take their lands, and even, some say, to ethnically cleanse them. Difficult to explain, isn't it? To reiterate: on the one hand, they abolished slavery shortly after the American Civil War had ended; on the other, they carried on displacing the Native American Indians after the American Civil War had ended! Therefore, of course it wasn't about idealism; in fact, just like the Boasian School of Anthropology, the Institute for Social Research, the Frankfurt School, and the civil rights acts, it was a conspiracy to destroy Eurasian/White society. What the elites were doing, they were ending slavery and segregation to steal away White-American jobs, houses, and land. But it gets worse. As they were integrating the freed slaves they would also allow into America and Europe millions of non-Whites immigrants who they were also using to break the White societies! It was due to those sinister changes in the White nations that led to pro-White groups and campaigners; such as, the Ku Klux Klan, Adolph Hitler, William Pierce, George Lincoln Rockwell, and a whole list of others, rising to expose the agenda. Things would get worse; of course, for instance, after WWII and the defeat of Hitler and his Third Reich armies, the elites increased their relentless war effort to wreck White society and peoples through sinister elitist groups such as the ECSC, which is sourced to the Treaty of Paris meeting that was held in 1950AD with Robert Schuman—a Eurasian-Jew, as the group's leader, and is the source for the European Union that was established in 1993AD with the European Parliament acting as its fascist, centralised, body to control the centralised state through. The founding of the European Union is important; of course, it is part of the NWO, or Brave New World, agenda, which, if you don't already know, is to unite all the world's nations into power-bloc groups; for instance, the European nations into the European Union bloc, and the American nations into the American Union bloc, before bringing those power-blocs under the control of a one-world government protected by a

**one-world army, along with a one-world bank, a one-world currency, and, to top it off, a dumbed down, microchipped, population to swallow it all without protest. The overall controlling body may be something very similar to the Illuminati or the Bilderberg Group, which was founded in 1954AD by critical members in the network; such as, Prince Bernhard who traces his lineage back to the Hapsburgs, King David, and to Christ Himself, who was a Jew. But, undoubtedly, cutting through the matrix, it is the Eurasian and Eurasian-Jewish network that rules all those groups and our world, and they hail from the ancient Illuminati-Brotherhood of the Dragon that I traced back through Rome to the Levant and Babylon and further to perhaps the United Aryans who, after the cataclysm, migrated into NW India, or today's Pakistan, south of the Himalayas, where they mixed with some of the Asians to create the Eurasians, before migrating back into the West.**

**The following is a list of some of the VIP elites who have attended Bilderberg meetings over the years, but there are hundreds more from the world of politics and business.**

**Royalty: Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands, 1954–1975; King Harald V of Norway, 1984; Prince Charles of UK, 1986; Prince Philip of UK, 1965, 1967; King Philippe of Belgium, 2007–2009, 2012; King Carlos I of Spain, 2004; Queen Sofía of Spain, 2008–2011, 2014; Queen Beatrix of the Netherlands, 1997, 2000, 2006, 2008–2015; King Willem-Alexander of the Netherlands, 2008, 2016. Politics: U.K. Prime Ministers: David Cameron, 2013; Tony Blair, 1993; Gordon Brown, 1991; Alec Douglas-Home, 1977–1980; Margaret Thatcher, 1975, 1977, 1986; Edward Heath, 1970–1974; Japan: Nobuo Tanaka, 2009; China: Fu Ying, 2011, 2012; America: Henry Kissinger, 1957, 1964, 1966, 1971, 1974, 1977, 1992, 2008, 2009, 2010, 2011, 2012, 2013, 2015, 2016, 2019. 56th United States Secretary of State; Richard Perle, 2011. United States Assistant Secretary of Defense 1981–1987; Condoleezza Rice, 2008. 66th United States Secretary of State; John Kerry, 2012. 68th United States Secretary of State; Bill Clinton, 1991. President of the United States 1993–2001; David Rockefeller, Sr., 2008, 2009, 2011. Former Chairman, Chase Manhattan Bank.**

**France: Baron Edmond de Rothschild, 1977. French-Swiss banker; Russia: Anatoly Chubais, 1998, 2012. Head of the Russian Nanotechnology Corporation; Alexei Mordashov, 2011. CEO of Severstal Corporations; America: Bill Gates, 2010. Chairman of Microsoft.**

# **CHAPTER 9**

## **THE MULTICULTURAL ECSC, EEC, & EU**

**When socialist New Labour came to power in Britain in 1997AD with Prime Minister Tony Blair as the new Party's leader, they “failed” to cancel Britain's commitment to the Maastricht Treaty that permitted millions of immigrants entry into Britain through the Maastricht Treaty's Asylum and Immigration Act, they actually honoured it! So traitors all, and a real bad show.**

**The Maastricht Treaty was signed in 1992AD by John Major—Prime Minister of Britain and leader of the capitalist Conservative Party at that time. It came into effect in November 1993AD and it allowed 2 million immigrants per year from Eastern Europe and the Third World, entry into Britain, which means 52 million immigrants may have relocated to Britain from 1993 to 2019AD. 52 million!**

**The Maastricht Treaty was intended to steal away native jobs, get the natives and foreigners hating each other, and probably to later justify a police state and a NWO out of chaos. But, for anyone paying attention, it also showed how the socialist political elites collude with the capitalist political elites even if the legislation appears treasonous to the peoples that the Socialists are meant to represent.**

**In the following, along with pointing out the anti-nationalist and anti-native organisations and acts that were founded post-WWII and the defeat of Hitler, I will also point out the way in which the Maastricht Treaty came about because it points to collusion, or the western elites were colluding with the eastern elites to wreck the natives and speed up the collapse and bring in a NWO due to the backlash caused by the agenda and the class war:**

**After the mighty effort to wreck nationalist Hitler's dream of saving the White world and becoming a god in the process, which, for Hitler, ended in 1945AD when he shot himself in the Fuhrerbunker on April 30, the ruling elites continued their war to subdue the oppressed nationalist element that brought Hitler to power, and to subjugate the entire White race once and for all, and they came up with**



some sophisticated organisations that they sold to the people as bringing “economic prosperity to them and uniting them through integration”. Reaching from Europe to the U.S. and following on from the Socialists', the Communists', Boas's, and the ISR's efforts to break the White race before WWII, (1) the first organisation the elites created post-WWII was called the Economic Coal And Steel Community, or the ECSC, which was founded in Western Europe in 1951AD but is sourced to the Treaty of Paris in 1950AD with Robert Schuman as the group's leader, and is the source for the European Union; (2) after the ECSC was founded, in the U.S., the Civil Rights Act 1957AD were created that forced White people to share their places of education with non-Whites; (3) after the Civil Rights Act 1957AD was created in the U.S., in Europe in 1973AD the ECSC changed its name to the European Economic Community, or the EEC, which was when Britain joined; (4) in Europe in 1985AD the Shengen Agreement—signed on June 14, 1985AD, and effective on March 26, 1995AD—was agreed upon and created by the European political elites, which works like this: all peoples living in the Area can relocate, live, and work in any of the other nations in the Area. Although the creation of the Area was promoted as removing economic barriers, or creating a Free Market, and helping to integrate the peoples to stop wars, its real intention, I would warn, was more about speeding up the collapse of the most “prosperous” areas within the Area, which would lead to chaos and later justify the building of a police state and a NWO; (5) the next event after the creation of the Area where eradicating the natives, creating poverty, anarchy, a police state, and a NWO was the point, was the final act which would help bring absolute anarchy to Western Europe and Britain, was the European Union and the Maastricht Treaty. The plan was to, first, end the Cold War, or lift the Iron Curtain between the East and West, second, draw up the European Union and the Maastricht Treaty's Asylum and Immigration Act—The European Union was formally established when the Maastricht Treaty was effectuated on November 1, 1993AD—then, third, sit back and watch as millions of immigrants, fleeing poverty and seeking a better life, flood into Western and Northern Europe.

**Because the sequence of events that led to the founding of the European Union and Maastricht Treaty appear suspicious; that is, it looks like the eastern elites and the western elites were “colluding” against the citizens in Western Europe like one big ruling class family, I will list those events so you can determine for yourself if it were collusion or not:**

**(1) In communist-held East Germany in 1989AD, the relatively poor and oppressed citizens began to pull down the Berlin Wall, which was a 100-mile political wall set up after WWII to separate the Eastern Block nations from the Western Block nations, and so began the process that brought the Cold War to an end; (2) the Cold War ended with the collapse of the Soviet Communist Party in 1991AD and less than 2 years after the critical Berlin Wall event occurred; (3) less than 2 years after the Cold War came to an end in 1991AD, in the same year, the western elites signed the Maastricht Treaty Act that came into effect in 1993AD, which allowed millions of immigrants entry into the West!**

**Were those critical event sanctioned by the eastern ruling elites as they moved to support the western ruling elites in their effort to bring anarchy and later a NWO to Western and North-Western Europe? It must have been.**

**Incidentally, the Communist Party was the political party and government that controlled the Soviet Union, also known as the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics (USSR), at that time; the USSR was previously known as Russia.**

**So the ruling elites, through the Maastricht Treaty, were using immigrants to take away native jobs, set them against each other, and speed up the collapse after their empires had defeated Hitler and the Third Reich in 1945AD, and after they had ended the Cold War in 1991AD, and it looks like all the European ruling elites were in on it, and integration in the White nations did infact lead to many problems such as White Flight. But, America aside, did the immigrants relocate into the West and into Britain or didn't they? Due to the collapse of the communist-held East in**

**1991AD, and the mass poverty in the African nations and Pakistan, etc., where most of the non-White immigrants came from, it looks like 10s of millions of immigrants did in fact relocate into the West and into Britain over those 26 years since the treaty came into effect in 1993AD, which means the treaty's Asylum and Immigration Act served its purpose well; (1) the immigrants greatly weakened the nationalist or native element during elections; (2) the immigrants sped up the collapse and added to the chaos that was already wide spread in Western Europe; for example and from a British perspective, the treaty emerged shortly after Thatcherism and the Winter of Discontent or the Miner Strikes, which means it was all but impossible even before the treaty came into effect to find work in Britain, making the honouring of the treaty even more suspicious and treasonous; (3) from the chaos would justify the rise of police states and a NWO, where the elites will now sit back and watch as the cities slowly collapse into all-out anarchy and panic.**

# **CHAPTER 10**

## **9/11, THE PATRIOT ACT, POLICE STATES, & BIN LADEN**

**The road to Bin Laden being set up, or probably set up, the PATRIOT Act being issued, and police states being founded began shortly after the elites got caught in a war against the races and people of the world, which led to a backlash; Hitler blamed the Jews for the anti-White agenda; Rockwell claimed the Jews are using the non-White peoples against the White race to destroy them; Khomeini condemned them; Hussein launched scud missiles at Israel—an ally of the U.S., in a bold act of defiance, and Breivik, with his nation in partial ruins, due to all the immigration and poverty, became a White martyr when he attacked Norway's political elites, with bombs and bullets, killing a great deal many of them.**

**Over the centuries, the war against the races and the pro-poverty agenda to keep the peoples down created many resistance fighters from all walks of life, so, in the end, and due to the severity of the backlash that could hit the ruling elites at any time, the elites plotted to create a police state in order to better protect themselves from any resistance, so, what they would do, they would set out to justify creating a future police state by convincing the public that Osama Bin Laden was the biggest threat to the free world since Fuhrer Hitler himself, and it was a propaganda mission that worked well for them, due to the naivety of the public, but not everyone would believe them because, as hard as they tried, they could never offer irrefutable evidence that Bin Laden really was the mastermind behind the 9/11 attacks, and, truth be told, it appears the elites themselves planned the attacks in order to bring about a police state, which I will later show.**

**It was during the Afghan-Soviet conflict, that had occurred between the years 1979AD to 1989AD, that Bin Laden—a Saudia Arabia citizen and one of the Arabic resistance fighters who ended up in wars against the western elites due to their support for Israel and interfering in the**

**Arabic nations, first came to the attention of the U.S. Central Intelligence Agency, or the CIA, when, during the Afghan-Soviet conflict, he relocated to Afghanistan and fought alongside the anti-communist Afghan Arabs and the Mujahideen Islamic resistance fighters who were fighting against the Soviet and communist invasion of that nation, and the U.S. Government also supported the Mujahideen. But, later, or after the conflict had ended and due to Bin Laden “fitting the bill”, the CIA would set him up in order to blame their future “false flag” operations on, or 9/11, and it was done to justify the rise of a police state, which came about in 2001AD due to the backlash caused by the agenda.**

**The following will take you through (1) what had occurred before the Afghan-Soviet conflict; (2) what had occurred during the Afghan-Soviet conflict; (3) the Soviet withdrawal from Afghanistan, and National Reconciliation; (4) Bin Laden's movements after the Soviet-Afghan War and before the 9/11 attacks on the World Trade Centre and the Pentagon; (5) the 9/11 attacks; (6) the Afghan-U.S.-led War; (7) the Second Gulf War; (8) the assassination of Bin Laden; (9) Evidence That The US Elites Plotted 9/11:**

### **Events before the Afghan-Soviet conflict**

**Point 1. King Mohammed Zahir Shah ascended to the Afghan throne and reigned from 1933AD to 1973AD. Throughout those years, the Marxist (communist) People's Democratic Party of Afghanistans, or the PDPA, increased its strength and, later, in 1967AD the PDPA broke into two rival factions; the Khalq faction headed by Nur Muhammad Taraki and Hafizullah Amin, and the Parcham faction led by Babrak Karmal. From 1954 to 1963AD the first cousin of King Shah, Mohammed Daoud Khan, ruled Afghanistan as Prime Minister, and later overthrew King Shah and the monarchy in 1972AD to become the first President of the Republic of Afghanistan. Regarded as a popular ruler amongst the Afghan peoples, but unpopular amongst the Marxist PDPA supporters, once in power, it wasn't long before Daoud's government began oppressing the PDPA supporters, and the death of a leading PDPA member, Mir**

**Akbar Khyber, led to widespread resentment of him and mass demonstrations in the Afghan city of Kabul, which led to Daoud arresting several of the PDPA leaders.**

**On April 27 and 28, 1978AD, during the communist Saur Revolution in Afghanistan, the Soviet-backed Afghan Army, who favoured the communist PDPA cause, overthrew and executed Daoud, who fell out of favour with the Soviets, along with members of his family, and Nur Muhammad Taraki—Secretary General of the PDPA, became President of the Revolutionary Council, and Prime Minister of the newly established Democratic Republic of Afghanistan, or DRA, which was a Marxist-communist state. At the end of the Saur Revolution, on May 28, 1978AD, the Chinese Ambassador, Huang Ming-Ta, dispatched a cable, to its embassies in the U.S., stating that the Saur Revolution was "undeniably controlled by pro-soviet communists."**

**After the execution of Daoud Khan and after the communist coup, Taraki's communist, Soviet-backed, DRA Government was divided between himself, Deputy Prime Minister Hafizullah Amin from the Khalq faction, and Parcham leaders Babrak Karmal and Mohammad Najibullah. After becoming president, Taraki, who was viewed by his enemies as a dictator, and his allies as the Great Teacher, and also viewed as being against the religion of Islam and even changed the Afghan national flag from the Islamic green to one almost identical to the red flag of the Soviet Union, began a series of radical reforms, to modernise the nation, that proved unpopular amongst many of the Afghan people, and he also put down all opposition by exiling his enemies, arresting thousands of people, executing Parcham members, and executing thousands of political prisoners at the notorious Pul-e-Charkhi prison. Due to Taraki's manoeuvres after securing political power, militant groups formed to defend themselves from his government and soldiers, and in the Summer of 1978AD after Taraki's military garrison at Nuristan in eastern Afghanistan was attacked, a civil war broke out that quickly spread across the Afghan nation.**

**Incidentally, months before the Summer of 1978AD when Taraki's military garrison came under attack, and following on from the Saur Revolution, Adolph "Spike"**

**Dubs—the U.S. Ambassador to Afghanistan, who was based in Afghanistan, was taken hostage by unknown persons. The entire tragic story began on February 14, 1979AD, when Dubs was being driven from his residence to the U.S. Embassy slightly before 9am. When approaching the U.S. cultural center, four men hijacked the armoured car he was being driven in, and drove Dubs and party to the Serena Hotel, in Kabul, where Dubs was held captive in room 117 on the first floor of the hotel, and Dubs's driver was sent to the U.S. embassy to inform them of the abduction. At the Kabul hotel, it's alleged that the hostage takers demanded that the Afghan Government release "one or more religious or political prisoners." But due to the government failing to give a reliable account of the kidnappers' demands, events were left unclear but some accounts state that the hostage takers' demanded the exchange of Dubs for three of their comrades. The U.S. cautioned the Afghans to show patience in dealing with the hostage takers, in order not to endanger Dubs's life, and advised entering into negotiations with them, but the Afghan police ignored the advise from U.S. officials, and, after consulting with their Soviet advisers, made ready to storm the room Dubs was being held in. Some time later, Afghan police stormed room 117 with heavy automatic gunfire, but, on entry, found Dubs, along with two of the hostage takers, dead. No one's so sure what happened in room 117, but, curiously enough, after pathologists performed an autopsy on the three dead men, they discovered that the U.S. Ambassador had been “shot in the head from a distance of six inches”, and “the two dead hostage takers were probably killed after they had surrendered”.**

**Before and just after the Saur Revolution, Amin and Taraki were the best of comrades. But due to Amin turning against Taraki apparently due to Taraki's self-worship, Taraki turned against Amin and began ignoring his advise. As their relationship deteriorated, a power struggle ensued between them for control over the Afghan national Army where Taraki relied on the support of four Army officers in his struggle against Amin, and Amin also had high-ranking Army officers supporting him. President Taraki's four men had a close relationship with Alexander Puzanov—the**

**Soviet Ambassador in Afghanistan, who would later use them against Amin.**

**During Taraki's overseas visit to the communist conference in Cuba, events took a turn for the worst when Taraki's Gang of Four received an intelligence report warning that Amin was planning to arrest or kill them. The report was found to be incorrect, but, nevertheless, the Gang of Four were then apparently ordered to kill Amin. Aziz Akbarim—the nephew of the leader of the Gang of Four, was selected to carry out the assassination, but, because Akbarim wasn't informed that it was a secret mission and, in turn, informed his contacts in the Soviet embassy, the embassy got a warning to Amin saving his life. Later, on September 11, 1979AD, Taraki was met by Amin at an airport on his return flight from Moscow to Kabul. The flight was scheduled to land at a specific time but Amin delayed the landing in order to intimidate Taraki and to demonstrate his control over the government. Due to the incident at the airport, Taraki retaliated by trying to remove Amin from power demanding that he serves overseas as an ambassador, but Amin turned down Taraki's demand claiming that Taraki had gone mad. A day later, Taraki invited Amin to the Presidential Palace to lunch with him and the Gang of Four, but Amin turned down the invite stating he would prefer their resignation rather than lunch with them. Although Amin turned down the invitation, one day later Puzanov (the Soviet ambassador), talked Amin into taking up Taraki's invitation to go to the palace, so, taken Sayed Daoud Tarun—the chief of police, and Nawab Ali—an intelligence officer, with him, Amin set off for the palace on September 14.**

**Once at the palace, Taraki's bodyguards attacked Amin and his party leaving Tarun dead and Amin, who sustained only slight injuries in the shootout, escaping in his car to the Ministry of Defence or the MoD. Once at the MoD, Amin put the Army on standby, ordered Taraki's arrest, called up Puzanov about the incident at the palace, and, that same evening at around 6.30pm, tanks, from the 4th Armoured Corps, entered the city and took up positions around government installations while Amin returned to the palace with a group of Army officers and arrested Taraki**



who was still there, but the Gang of Four had escaped to the Soviet embassy. Although there was a shootout in the palace, the Soviets tried to deter Amin from expelling Taraki and his associates from their positions, but Amin ignored the Soviets, so, because of that, on September 15 a Soviet battalion deployed to the Afghan Bagram Air Base and the Afghan embassy in an attempt to rescue Taraki but was ordered to stand down due to Soviet commanders believing that Amin's forces were too strong.

So Amin had captured Taraki. But one day later on September 16 at 8pm, Radio Kabul announced that Taraki had informed the PDPA Politburo that he was no longer able to continue his duties, and the PDPA Politburo elected Amin as the new General Secretary. After Taraki's arrest, Amin supposedly discussed the incident with Leonid Brezhnev—General Secretary of the Central Committee of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union. Amin stated: "Taraki is still around. What should I do with him?" Brezhnev apparently replied: "It's your choice". So, with that, Amin, apparently, went on to order the execution of Taraki, which occurred on October 8, 1979AD, and Taraki was suffocated with pillows. Just two days after Taraki's death, the Afghan media reported that he had died of a "serious illness", and, just two months after that, the Soviets used Taraki's death, along with the ongoing civil war, to invade Afghanistan starting the Afghan-Soviet War. Although they claimed they invaded to restore order due to the civil war, and to restore the government after Taraki's death, they also claimed there was no cause for concern because they would limit their intervention by given only moderate support to the pro-communist Afghan Army and Afghan peoples who supported them.

Incidentally, it was around this time that Iranian students attacked the U.S. embassy in Tehran, Iran, on November 4, 1979AD, during the Iranian Revolution that witnessed the overthrow of the Pahlavi dynasty under Shah Mohammad Reza Pahlavi (the Shah) who was supported by the U.S. The Shah was overthrown by the Grand Ayatollah Ruhollah Khomeini who went on to found the Islamic Republic of Iran.

## **Events during the Afghan-Soviet conflict**

**Point 2. Apparently due to Amin seizing power after executing President Taraki, and the general chaos that had unfolded due to the civil war, the Soviet Government, under Brezhnev, deployed the Soviet 40th Army on December 24, 1979AD, to capture Amin. Communications surrounding Kabul were cut and Soviet Airborne Forces landed in Kabul on December 24, 1979AD, as Amin retreated to the Tajbeg Palace. By December 27, undercover Soviet troops, dressed in Afghan uniforms, including special forces, occupied government, military, and media buildings in Kabul. At 19.15pm, the assault on Tajbeg Palace began and, with that, President Hafizullah Amin was killed. The entire operation was over by December 28 and, over the Kabul radio, the Soviets announced that Afghanistan had been liberated from Amin's rule. According to the Soviet Politburo, they were complying with the 1978AD Treaty of Friendship, Cooperation, and Good Neighborliness, and Amin had been "executed by a tribunal for his crimes" by the Afghan Revolutionary Central Committee who later went on to elect Babrak Karmal—the former Deputy Prime Minister, as the Head of Government. Due to the Soviet invasion, foreign ministers, from many of the Islamic nations, supported a resolution condemning the Soviet intervention and demanded "the immediate and unconditional withdrawal of Soviet troops" from the Muslim nation of Afghanistan, and the UN General Assembly also condemned the Soviet invasion and intervention in Afghanistan.**

**Along with Bin Laden, many of the Muslim nations assisted the resistance against the Soviets, who they viewed as atheist Communists and viewed themselves in a jihad against them, by permitting Muslims, called Afghan Arabs, to enter the war to fight the Communists, and also trained, armed, and financed them. The CIA also became involved at that time by, working through the Pakistani Intelligence services called Inter-Services Intelligence (ISI), in a undercover program called Operation Cyclone, given arms, worth billions of dollars, to aid military operations led by the Afghan Arabs and the Mujahideen fighting against the**

**Soviets and their Afghan communist allies. Along with assistance from the Muslim nations and the CIA, Britain and China also financed and aided the Mujahideen by supplying them with arms and anti-aircraft weapons to help bring down Soviet helicopters, and they also used the ISI to disguise the donors. At the start of the war, Dr. Zbigniew Brzezinski—the U.S. National Security Advisor under the Carter administration at that time and author of *The Grand Chessboard*, became involved in the Soviet-Afghan conflict. In 1997AD in a CNN interview, Brzezinski talked about the strategy he used to defeat the Soviets. Brzezinski stated:**

**“We immediately launched a twofold process when we heard that the Soviets had entered Afghanistan. The first involved direct reactions and sanctions focused on the Soviet Union, and both the State Department and the National Security Council prepared long lists of sanctions to be adopted, of steps to be taken to increase the international costs to the Soviet Union of their actions. And the second course of action led to my going to Pakistan a month or so after the Soviet invasion of Afghanistan, for the purpose of coordinating with the Pakistanis a joint response, the purpose of which would be to make the Soviets bleed for as much and as long as is possible; and we engaged in that effort in a collaborative sense with the Saudis, the Egyptians, the British, the Chinese, and we started providing weapons to the Mujaheddin, from various sources again – for example, some Soviet arms from the Egyptians and the Chinese. We even got Soviet arms from the Czechoslovak communist government, since it was obviously susceptible to material incentives; and at some point we started buying arms for the Mujaheddin from the Soviet army in Afghanistan, because that army was increasingly corrupt.”**

**Incidentally, in *The Grand Chess Board* that was published in 1997AD, Brzezinski wrote: “America's status as the world's premier power is unlikely to be contested by any single challenger for more than a generation. No state is likely to match the United States in the four key dimensions of power – military, economic, technological, and cultural --**

that confer global political clout. Short of American abdication, the only real alternative to American leadership is international anarchy. President Clinton is correct when he says America has become the world's "indispensable nation." "America's global stewardship will be tested by tension, turbulence, and periodic conflict. In Europe, there are signs that the momentum for integration and enlargement is waning and that nationalisms may reawaken. Large-scale unemployment persists even in the most successful European states, breeding xenophobic reactions that could cause French or German politics to lurch toward extremism. Europe's aspirations for unity will be met only if Europe is encouraged, and occasionally prodded, by the United States."

After the Soviet military invasion and occupation of Afghanistan, the West began funding and aiding Pakistan's military ruler General Muhammad Zia-ul-Haq in order to equip the Mujahideen, who were led by, amongst others, Ahmad Shah Massoud and Abdul Haq, for the war against the Communists, but the funding increased, mostly due to Texas Congressman Charlie Wilson and CIA officer Gust Avrakotos efforts, after Ronald Reagan became the U.S. President in 1981AD. Due to that support for Haq, the KHAD, under the command of Mohammad Najibullah, responded by ordering military operations against Pakistan which left thousands of Pakistanis dead.

A few days after the Soviets deployed the 40th Army on December 24, 1979AD, and Amin had been "executed by a tribunal for his crimes" by the Afghan Revolutionary Central Committee, and the committee elected, on December 27, Babrak Karmal as the Head of State, the Soviet Army went on to occupy many of the Afghan cities while the Mujahideen and the Afghan Arab anti-communist forces opted for a guerilla war against them.

After the initial military invasion, Soviet forces, under the command of Marshal Sergei Sokolov, moved into Afghanistan from the north, which was around December 27, and the 103rd Guards Airborne Division landed at the airport at Bagram. Along with the invasion by the 103rd Guards Airborne Division, many more Soviet divisions

**invaded Afghanistan. All-in-all, the first Soviet invasion force, that led to Amin's death and Karmal becoming the Head of State, amounted to some 1,800 tanks, 80,000 Soviet soldiers, and 2,000 AFVs, but, shortly thereafter, the Soviet's increased their strength, after more divisions invaded, to 100,000.**

**Apparently the Soviets hadn't thought so much about taking on such a leading role in the fight against the Afghan Arabs and the Mujahideen Muslim forces who were fighting to overthrow the Soviet-backed Afghan government in an apparent ideological civil war context. But once they realised they would have to do the bulk of the fighting, the Soviet strategy was to rely on their Airforce for air domination, which they deployed to hunt and eliminate the Mujahideen, and to destroy villages in order to deny the enemy shelter. The Soviet Army also destroyed vital irrigation ditches and laid millions of land-mines.**

**Soviet forces followed two primary strategies aimed at defeating their enemies: 1. Search and destroy. The Soviets used Mil Mi-24 helicopter gunships to provide cover for ground forces in armoured vehicles, as they searched for and eliminated guerillas. 2. Subversion. The Soviets deployed spies through KHAD—the Afghan, communist, secret police, to infiltrate the Mujahideen, gather intelligence, and spread false information.**

**As for the Mujahideen, they opted for sabotage operations, direct assaults, and the laying of landmines: they would bomb communist-occupied government buildings, air terminals, powerlines, pipelines, and radio stations; they would assassinate and poison government officials and PDPA members; they attacked police stations, military installations, and air bases. In and around the border region with Pakistan, it's claimed the mujahideen launched around 800 missiles per day, and it's also estimated that, between April 1985 and January 1987AD, the mujahideen carried out over 23,000 shelling attacks on government targets. In March 1982AD, a bomb exploded at the Ministry of Education, damaging several buildings, and, in the same month, Kabul was left without power when a pylon, on the transmission line from the Naghlu power station, was blown up. In June 1982AD, 1,000 Communist**

**Party members, sent out to work in the Panjshir valley, were ambushed and suffered heavy losses. On September 4, 1985AD, insurgents shot down a domestic plane as it took off from Kandahar Airport, killing all 52 people onboard, and the bloodiest year, in the Afghan-Soviet War, was 1985AD; it witnessed an increase in fighting throughout Afghanistan, and the Soviets increasing their military force.**

**When Mikhail Gorbachev—General Secretary of the Communist Party, became the Soviet leader in 1985AD, he brought a new way of thinking, on foreign and domestic policy, that would have a major effect on the Afghan-Soviet war and the Soviet Union. What he would do, he would start the process that would lead to the withdrawal of all Soviet forces from Afghanistan, and, through his reformist and economic concepts Glasnost and Perestroika, he would also attempt to improve the Soviet economy, and would also ease Cold War tensions by signing the Intermediate-Range Nuclear Forces Treaty in 1987AD with the United States.**

### **Soviet withdrawal from Afghanistan, and National Reconciliation**

**Point 3. Informal negotiations for a Soviet withdrawal from Afghanistan had been underway since 1982AD, and in 1988AD the governments of Pakistan and Afghanistan, with the United States and Soviet Union serving as guarantors and the United Nations founding a special Mission to oversee the process, signed an agreement that would settle the major differences between them; the agreement is called the “Geneva Accords”. The actual Soviet withdrawal from the Afghan, however, began in 1986AD when they increased the Afghan armed forces to around 302,000 troops. By increasing the armed forces, the Soviets calculated that it would give the pro-communist Afghan Army a much better chance to remain in control as they would soon be obliged to fight without Soviet assistance.**

**The communist government of President Karmal eventually proved ineffective due to divisions in the PDPA, and Karmal's failed efforts to expand his support, so, in the end, Moscow came to view Karmal as failing in his duty.**

Some years later, Gorbachev stated that "The main reason that there has been no national consolidation so far, is that Comrade Karmal is hoping to continue sitting in Kabul with our help". So wanting Karmal gone, the Soviets sent Vladimir Kryuchkov—the Head of KGB Intelligence, into Afghanistan to speak with him, but, after a meeting in Kabul, Kryuchkov failed to get Karmal's resignation. Sometime later, the Afghan Defence Minister and the State Security Minister also tried to get Karmal to resign, and, with that, and understanding that his Soviet support had been removed, on May 4 1986AD Karmal resigned as the President of Afghanistan, and was succeeded by Mohammad Najibullah—former Chief of KHAD, who became the Afghan President on September 30, 1987AD, and a new constitution was adopted. It was Gorbachev that began the process that led to Karmal's resignation and Najibullah becoming President, but Najibullah and Karmal, for some months later, apparently became the bitterest of enemies, due to Karmal retaining his post as the Chairman of the Revolutionary Council, and trying to wreck Najibullah's policy of national reconciliation, which were a series of efforts by Najibullah to end the conflict in Afghanistan; for instance, throughout Najibullah's rule, he tried to build a broad support by distancing the government from Socialism in favour of Afghan Nationalism; he abolished the one-party state and permitted non-Communists to join the government; he remained open to dialogue with the Mujahideen and other groups; he invited exiled businessmen back to reclaim their properties; he removed all references to Communism in the 1990AD constitution, and Islam became the state religion. Although those changes were positive, Najibullah failed to win significant support, which was probably due to his involvement with KHAD, or the communist secret police, that had a bad reputation amongst the Nationalists.

Throughout Najibullah's rule, the Soviets continued withdrawing their forces, therefore, from 1989AD until 1992AD, he was forced to solve the civil war without assistance from Soviet troops, but the Soviets still supported Najibullah with economic and military aid, while Pakistan and the U.S. continued to support the anti-communist Mujahideen.

**Although a policy of "national reconciliation" was on offer, fighting continued with Najibullah's forces attacking a Mujahideen infantry unit in Arghandab, and with a Soviet MiG-23 fighter jet. in September 1988AD, shooting down a Pakistani F-16 and two Iranian AH-1J Cobras after intruding into Afghan airspace.**

**Outwith preparing for total withdrawal in 1986AD, the Soviets made two withdrawals; half of the Soviet forces were withdrawn between May 15 to August 16, 1988AD, and the other half were withdrawn between November 15, 1988, to February 15, 1989AD. In order to withdraw relatively safely, the Soviets made ceasefire agreements with some of the Mujahideen commanders, so, outwith Operation Typhoon and a limited number of other occurrences, the withdrawals passed away without incident. Incidentally, one of the final Soviet offensives was to sweep and clear the road between Gardez and Khost. The operation, called Operation Magistral, marked the end of the Soviet presence in Afghanistan.**

**Post-withdrawal by the Soviets, in March 1989AD the Battle of Jalalabad occurred and was won by the communist government, but, still, without Soviet assistance, communist forces could not hold down the Mujahideen for long.**

**After Najibullah failed to win enough support from the Nationalists; recall, in the 1990AD constitution he removed all references to Communism, and due to the collapse of the Soviet Union in December 1991AD, which was when the Cold War ended, he was left without Soviet aid, his government collapsed and he resigned in April 1992AD.**

**Post-Najibullah's rule in April 1992AD, Sibghatullah Mojaddedi became the President of the Islamic State of Afghanistan, but his presidency lasted only 2 months. During Mojaddedi's presidency, he met with U.S. Vice President George H. W. Bush who supported his new Afghanistan Government that was attempting to establish a non-Soviet involved government, but, although Mojaddedi appeared popular amongst the peoples of Afghanistan and the Mujahideen, there was one group who failed to support him; which was, the Hezb-e Islami Gulbuddin, and even**



launched missiles at him during his election, and also fought against his government troops. Later in May 1992AD, Mojaddedi resigned due to Burhanuddin Rabbani forming a new leadership council which undermined his rule, and passed the power to Rabbani.

The civil war continued and Rabbani was now in control of the Afghan state if not all the people. But, later, Najibullah, who had earlier resigned due to his failure on “national reconciliation”, was captured and executed by the Taliban after they captured Kabul in 1996AD.

#### **Bin Laden's movements after the Soviet-Afghan War and before the 9/11 attacks on the World Trade Centre and the Pentagon**

Point 4. After the Afghan-Soviet conflict came to an end with a Soviet withdrawal, the Afghan civil war continued but Bin Laden left Afghanistan to make his way to Saudi Arabia. While in Saudi Arabia, Iraq invaded Kuwait on August 2, 1990AD, and the Saudi monarch invited U.S. forces into Saudi territory turning down Bin Laden's offer to help Kuwait by deploying an Arabic legion to fight against Iraqi aggression, which Bin Laden took offence to and publicly announced that “the two holiest shrines of Islam; Mecca and Medina—the cities in which Prophet Mohamed received and recited Allah's message, should only be defended by Muslims.” After that, the U.S. 82nd Airborne Division landed and deployed in a desert barely 400 miles from Medina. A short time later on November 8, 1990AD, the FBI raided the home of El Sayyid Nosair, who they linked to the Al-Qaeda operative Ali Mohamed, and found evidence of terrorist plots including plans to blow up skyscrapers in New York City. The raid on the home of Nosair was the first time that U.S. Intelligence had uncovered plans by Al-Qaeda's to attack targets outside the Muslim nations, and, later, Nosair was convicted for his part in the first bombing of the World Trade Center that occurred in 1993AD, and he also admitted murdering Rabbi Meir Kahane in New York City on November 5, 1990AD.

Throughout the 1990s AD, Bin Laden helped the Jihadis by financing them and deploying soldiers to help in

their struggles in Algeria, Egypt, and Afghanistan, so he was increasing the fame he had first earned in Afghanistan. In 1991AD he was expelled from Saudi Arabia for criticizing the Saudi alliance with the U.S., and later, after returning to Afghanistan with his men for a time, moved to the Sudan in 1992AD, where he set up a base in Khartoum for the Mujahideen to operate out of. It's claimed that the first bombing attack authorised by Bin Laden was on December 29, 1992AD, and the target was the Gold Mihor Hotel in Aden. A while later in 1994AD, and due to his criticisms of King Fahd of Saudi Arabia, King Fahd removed his Saudi citizenship, and it was also around this time that he was said to be connected to the Egyptian Islamic Jihad, or EIJ, movement, which apparently made up the majority of the Al-Qaeda Army, who, in 1995AD, attempted to assassinate the Egyptian president, President Hosni Mubarak, but the assassination failed. In 1996AD Bin Laden arrived in Jalalabad, Afghanistan, from Sudan, and later, in August 1996AD, declared all-out war on the U.S. due to U.S. forces continuing to operate in Saudi Arabia due to the Iraq war. Bin Laden stated that "the evils of the Middle East arose from America's attempt to take over the region, and from its support for Israel." "Saudi Arabia had been turned into an American colony."

Still in Afghanistan, Bin Laden raised money from "donors from the days of the Soviet jihad" and from the Pakistani ISI to establish more military training camps for Mujahideen fighters. He also took over Ariana Afghan Airlines which ferried Islamic militants, arms, cash, and opium through the United Arab Emirates and Pakistan, as well as providing false identifications to members of his network. An arms smuggler, called Viktor Bout, apparently helped run the airline, and Michael Scheuer—head of the CIA's Bin Laden Unit, stated that Ariana was being used as a "terrorist taxi service". Apparently Bin Laden financed the Luxor massacre on November 17, 1997AD, in Egypt, but did not claim responsibility. In Afghanistan in 1997AD, the Northern Alliance threatened to overrun Jalalabad causing Bin Laden to abandon his compound and move his operations to Tarnak Farms in the south, and, later, Bin Laden made an alliance with the Taliban before deploying hundreds of Afghan Arab fighters to assist them in their

fight to defeat thousands of Hazaras who had overrun the city. In February 1998AD, Bin Laden and Ayman al-Zawahiri co-signed a fatwa in the name of the World Islamic Front for Jihad Against Jews and Crusaders, and, later, on August 7, 1998AD, Al-Qaeda attacked a U.S. embassy with truck bombs, which were part of a series of attacks that occurred which left hundreds of people dead in the major east African cities of Dar es Salaam, Tanzania, Nairobi, and Kenya. In retaliation for the embassy bombing, on August 20, 1998AD, U.S. President Bill Clinton ordered a series of cruise missile strikes at targets linked to Bin Laden in Sudan and Afghanistan, and, in December 1998AD, the Director of Central Intelligence Counter-terrorist Center reported to President Clinton that Al-Qaeda was preparing to carry out attacks in the U.S., including training personnel to hijack aircrafts. On June 7, 1999AD, the U.S. Bureau of Investigation, or the FBI, placed Bin Laden on its Ten Most Wanted list, and, in 2000AD shortly before the 9/11 attacks, it was claimed that Bin Laden and a group of Islamic militants planned to bomb targets in Jordan, the USS Sullivans in Yemen, and an unspecified target in the U.S., but the missions were aborted primarily due to the arrest of the Jordanian cell.

### **The 9/11 attacks**

Point 5. According to U.S. Intelligence, in the U.S. on Tuesday morning, September 11, 2001AD, four commercial airliners were hijacked by 19 operatives linked to Al-Qaeda. The first hijacked flight was the American Airlines Flight 11, which was a Boeing 767 aircraft. It had departed Logan Airport at 7.59am en route to Los Angeles with a crew of 11, 76 passengers, and 5 hijackers, and hit the North Tower of the World Trade Center in New York City at 8.46am. The second flight was the United Airlines Flight 175, which was a Boeing 767 aircraft. It had departed Logan Airport at 8.14am en route to Los Angeles with a crew of 9, 51 passengers, and 5 hijackers, and hit the South Tower of the World Trade Center in New York City at 9.03am. The third flight was the American Airlines Flight 77, which was a Boeing 757 aircraft. It had departed Washington Dulles International Airport at 8.20am en route to Los Angeles

with a crew of 6, 53 passengers, and 5 hijackers, and hit the Pentagon in Arlington County, Virginia, at 9.37am. The fourth flight was the United Airlines Flight 93, which was a Boeing 757 aircraft. It had departed Newark International Airport at 8.42am en route to San Francisco, with a crew of 7, 33 passengers, and 4 hijackers, and, as the passengers attempted to cease the cockpit from the hijackers, the plane crashed in a field in Stonycreek Township near Shanksville, Pennsylvania, at 10.03am. The intended target is thought to have been the United States Capitol or the White House. The attacks killed 2,996 and injured over 6,000.

Within hours of the attacks, the FBI identified Mohamed Atta as leader of the hijacker cells, due to his luggage failing to make it onboard the airliner he would hijack. Atta's lost luggage contained the names of all the hijackers, missions, and Al-Qaeda connections. Shortly afterwards, the FBI released the names and some of the personal details of the suspects, and, later, on September 27, 2001, they released photos of the 19 hijackers along with their nationalities and aliases; 15 of the men were from Saudi Arabia, 2 were from the United Arab Emirates, 1 was from Egypt, and 1 was from the Lebanon. Because U.S. Intelligence suspected that the Al-Qaeda network was behind the attacks, U.S. Vice President Dick Cheney responded with the War on Terror, and the U.S. and Britain began drawing up plans for the invasion of Afghanistan, called Operation Enduring Freedom, in order to depose the Taliban who came to power after the Afghan-Soviet conflict and were protecting Al-Qaeda operatives. As a result of the attacks, many governments passed legislation to combat terrorism; for instance, (1) in Germany where several of the 9/11 terrorists had resided, two major anti-terrorism measures were enacted; the first removed legal loopholes that permitted terrorists to live and raise money in Germany; the second addressed the effectiveness and communication of intelligence and law enforcement; (2) Canada passed the Canadian Anti-Terrorism Act, which was Canada's first anti-terrorism law; (3) the United Kingdom passed the Anti-terrorism, Crime, and Security Act 2001AD, and the Prevention of Terrorism Act 2005AD; (4) New Zealand enacted the Terrorism Suppression Act 2002AD. On September 14, 2001AD, the U.S. Congress

**passed the Authorization for Use of Military Force Against Terrorists which grants the U.S. President the authority to use all "necessary and appropriate force" against those whom he determined "planned, authorized, committed or aided" the September 11 attacks, or who harbored said persons or groups. In the U.S., the Department of Homeland Security was created by the Homeland Security Act, to coordinate domestic anti-terrorism efforts, and the USA PATRIOT Act was enacted on October 26, 2001AD, which gave the federal government greater powers including the authority to detain terror suspects for one week without charge, to monitor telephones, e-mail, internet use by terror suspects, and to prosecute suspected terrorists without time restrictions. The FAA ordered that cockpits be reinforced to prevent terrorists gaining access, and assigned Sky Marshals to flights. Further, the Aviation and Transportation Security Act made the federal government, rather than airports, responsible for airport security. The law created the Transportation Security Administration to inspect passengers along with their luggage, causing long delays and concern over passenger privacy.**

### **The Afghan-U.S.-led War**

**Point 6. After the 9/11 attacks, the U.S. demanded that the Taliban hand Bin Laden over to them to stand trial for the attacks, but the Taliban refused to extradite him stating they would only hand him over if he is tried before an Islamic court and if "solid evidence" of his involvement in the September 11 attacks was provided. Eight days later, however, after the U.S. began airstrikes on Taliban and al-Qaeda bases, etc., and the CIA's Special Activities Division, or SAD, who were backed up by U.S. Special Forces Group 5, put troops on the ground on October 7, 2001AD, the Taliban released another statement stating they would hand him over to a third-party nation to stand trial if the U.S. stop bombing their nation. In the end, the U.S. rejected the offer when President Bush, on December 17, 2001AD, stated that negotiations are over; he stated, "there's no need to discuss innocence or guilt; we know he's guilty.", and, with that, continued the war that would lead to the overthrow of the Taliban who controlled the Afghan state at that time.**

## **The Second Gulf War**

**Point 7. Shortly after the Afghan-Coalition war came to an end, it wasn't long before the elites were making the case for war on Iraq, and making it appear legitimate appeared very hard won, indeed, but now the Neocons, who wrote the suspicious PNAC paper and wanted rid of Hussein, would get their wishes.**

**Many speeches were made in the run up to war with Iraq and post-9/11. But the ones that really summed up the situation was the ones made by President Bush in his state of the union speech to Congress that was given in January 2002AD, and Prime Minister Blair immediately after 9/11. President Bush stated: "North Korea is a regime arming with missiles and weapons of mass destruction, while starving its citizens." "Iran aggressively pursues these weapons and exports terror, while an unelected few repress the Iranian people's hope for freedom." "Iraq continues to flaunt its hostility toward America and to support terror. The Iraqi regime has plotted to develop anthrax, and nerve gas, and nuclear weapons for over a decade." "States like these, and their terrorist allies, constitute an axis of evil, arming to threaten the peace of the world." Bush went on to talk of how "A terrorist underworld -- including groups like Hamas, Hezbollah, Islamic Jihad, Jaish-i-Mohammed -- operates in remote jungles and deserts, and hides in the centers of large cities.", and how the U.S. "found diagrams of American nuclear power plants and public water facilities, detailed instructions for making chemical weapons, surveillance maps of American cities, and thorough descriptions of landmarks in America and throughout the world". Prime Minister Blair stated: "This is a moment to seize. The kaleidoscope has been shaken, the pieces are in flux, soon they will settle again. Before they do, let us re-order this world around us".**

**In the end, it was the British who supplied the "evidence" that would take the West into a war with Iraq, called the Second Iraq War, or the Second Gulf War, which lasted from March 20, 2003AD, to December 18, 2011AD. But although the British evidence was slated as "highly**

dubious” and flawed by the CIA and Doctor Kelly, who later turned up dead after an investigation by the Foreign Affairs Select committees, or the FASC enquiry, the invasion went ahead to remove Hussein from power, which they successfully did, and to remove any weapons of mass destruction that the armed forces may find, in which they failed. It was an 8-year war. It cost the lives of thousands of soldiers and millions of Iraqis, and more police state laws, or the Sunset extensions, were added to the PATRIOT Act at the end of it! So a grand conspiracy had unfolded, and, like many, I believe that 9/11 and the War on Terror was merely a “smokescreen” to get the overt police state up and running due to the backlash caused by the agenda.

### **The assassination of Bin Laden**

Point 8. In April 2011AD, President Obama, who became the U.S. President after President Bush, ordered a covert operation to capture or kill Bin Laden. Under the control of the CIA and the operation called Neptune Spear, on May 2, 2011AD, a team of U.S. Navy SEALs, with support from CIA ground operatives, raided Bin Laden's compound in Abbottabad, Pakistan, and, whatever happened in there, Bin Laden was shot dead.

### **Evidence that the U.S. elites plotted 9/11**

Point 9. The PNAC paper, or the Project For A New American century, and the RAD paper, or Rebuilding America's Defences, was written and produced by the Neocons—a powerful group of elites in the U.S., and this is why, to me, the RAD paper became a “smoking gun”, or evidence of a premeditated crime: It was the U.S. Neocons who wrote the notorious RAD paper. But what were the Neocons writing about that shook me up so much and made me view it as evidence of a premeditated crime? Well, it wasn't so much about what they had written; which was, how they could never justify wars abroad; “regime change”, and implement new laws at home; “the PATRIOT Act”, unless there's a massive terrorist attack on America; “9/11”, but it was more about what had occurred “AFTER” they had written the RAD paper and “AFTER” they came to

power in American in 2001AD with George W. Bush—ex-U.S. President, as their frontman. So what happened after they came to power? Well, get this, (1) the attacks on the World Trade Centre, or the WTC, and the Pentagon occurred on September 11, 2001AD; (2) next, the U.S. Government blame Bin Laden for the attacks; (3) next, Vice President Dick Cheney responds with the “War on Terror”; (4) next, the U.S. and Britain began war on Afghanistan on October 7, 2001AD, in the hunt for Bin Laden, Al-Qaeda bases, and the Taliban who were assisting Bin Laden; (5) next, one month or so after the 9/11 attacks, the USA PATRIOT Act came into force on October 26, 2001AD; (6) next, the U.S. Army invades Iraq on March 20, 2003AD, to remove Hussein from power, which they did; (7) next, months before the Iraq War ended on December 18, 2011AD, (or the Second Gulf War), the U.S. elites added the Sunset extensions to the PATRIOT Act on May 26, 2011AD, which meant they were consolidating their police state.

And they did all that, of course, due to the backlash.

Here is a more detailed account of what  
had occurred post-RAD paper publication

1. The 9/11 attacks occurred and the U.S. Government blame Bin Laden for the attacks. Or to further justify to the public the rise of a police state and to have someone both impressive and credible to blame the 9/11 attacks on, the U.S. elites blamed Bin Laden in order to get the American public to accept a police state to protect them from Bin Laden and Al-Qaeda. As previously stated, Bin Laden was first noticed by the CIA during the days of the Afghan-Soviet conflict when he fought alongside the anti-communist Islamic Afghan Arabs and the Mujihadin fighters who, through the ISI, the CIA were covertly funding and equipping. But after the Afghan-Soviet conflict and after a critical event occurred called “blowback”—Blowback was an event that witnessed Bin Laden turning against the West due to the U.S. supporting the state of Israel who oppresses Arabs in the Palestine—Bin Laden became the ideal candidate for the CIA to frame for the 9/11 attacks.

2. The U.S. Army began war on Afghanistan on



**October 7, 2001AD, in the hunt for Bin Laden, Al-Qaeda bases, and the Taliban who were assisting them.**

**3. One month or so after the 9/11 attacks, the USA PATRIOT Act was enacted into law on October 26, 2001AD.**

**4. Milton William Cooper—see note 10: Naval Intelligence Officer William Cooper—who was the ex-Naval Intelligence operator turned “whistleblower” and activist who had warned the public that the U.S. Government were behind the 9/11 attacks to more or less justify bringing in a police state and a NWO, was shot, several times, at night, outside his family home, by undercover police officers, on November 5, 2001AD, and died on the 6th, apparently after having chasing him up on tax evasion charges and aggressive behaviour that, to date, and as far as I'm aware, have never been proved.**

**5. The elites in Italy, American, and Britain, hatched a plot to frame Saddam Hussein—the President of Iraq, claiming he broke United Nations (UN), resolutions, so they could later justify the military invasion of Iraq that occurred on March 20, 2003AD.**

**6. The U.S. Army invaded Iraq on March 20, 2003AD, to remove Hussein from power, which they did. After a trial, Saddam was hanged on the first day of Eid ul-Adha, a holy day, on December 30, 2006AD, at Camp Justice.**

**7. Prior to the Iraq War ending, the U.S. elites added the Sunset extensions to the PATRIOT Act on May 26, 2011AD. Incidentally, the “USA PATRIOT Act” wording is an abbreviation made from the words Uniting and Strengthening America by Providing Appropriate Tools Required to Intercept and Obstruct Terrorism Act of 2001AD.**

**Here is my thesis on how the 9/11 attacks were planned and executed: The CIA would manage the entire underhand affair. First, as stated in the RAD paper that was written by the U.S. Neocons, the elites would need an impressive target to blow up or attack in America, so they planned to hit the Twin Towers and the Pentagon, etc., on September 11, 2001AD, which were impressive targets; indeed, they would shock the public into demanding protection from the very people who were responsible for it. Second, Eurasian CIA agents would make contact with their**

**Eurasian-Arab contacts to sound them out. Third, after the Eurasian-Arab leaders agreed to participate, the Eurasian-Arab leaders would begin head-hunting non-Eurasian-Arabs, or pure blooded Arabs, who weren't aware they were being set up, and who were also patriotic, or against America, or willing conspirators. Fourth, training and planning would commence. Fifth, on the day of the mission, the 19 chosen and trained agents hijacked 4 American airliners to hit their targets, but 1 hijacker-cell failed.**

**To conclude on 9/11, The PATRIOT Act, Police States, And Bin Laden: The Afghan-Soviet conflict was merely the international Eurasians helping the Eurasian-Afghanists weed out the Afghanistan natives to displace them.**

**The road to the PATRIOT Act (Oct/26/2001), and Sunset Extensions (May/26/2011), being founded, which were laws to create a police state, began shortly after the Eurasian elites got caught in a war against the peoples of the world, which led to a backlash from them; Hitler went after them, Rockwell went after them, Khomeini went after them, Bin Laden declared a jihad against them, Hussein went after them, and Breivik, with his nation in partial ruins, due to all the immigration and poverty, became a martyr when, just 56 days after the Sunset Extensions were added to the PATRIOT Act, he attacked Norway's political elites with bombs and bullets killing a great deal many of them. But although the Arabic people have issues with the western elites, in the case with 9/11 and the Second Gulf War, it was the Han-White and White peoples they were truly going after; Bin Laden was merely someone for them to set-up in order to help bring about police states in order to catch their enemies who are resisting the NWO, or potentially would.**



**THE TWIN TOWERS**

## **NAVAL INTELLIGENCE OFFICER WILLIAM COOPER**

**Note 10. U.S. Naval Intelligence Officer William Milton Cooper—born in 1943AD; shot and killed in 2001AD—was the legendary figure who became a “whistleblower” and activist due to the information he had read and viewed in the top classified files he had access to while working for the U.S. Office of Naval Intelligence between the years 1968AD and 1973AD during the Vietnam War. Although after many years of activism Cooper was shot and killed in controversial circumstances at the hands of the U.S. police, the important information given in his lectures and writings, would help keep our memory of him alive. Cooper left a mountain of evidence behind and more than enough to prove that secret groups are plotting to abolish the U.S. constitution and create a NWO in its place. So, to further your understanding of his important work, please read the fine book he had published in 1990AD, called Behold A Pale Horse, and read the following.**

**What follows is Cooper's route from when he first enlisted in the U.S. Military up to his death in 2001AD, and many of the controversial claims he made.**

**It was back in 1961AD that Cooper began his 4-year military career in the American Airforce, when, after completing his training at Lackland AirForce Base and the Technical School for Aircraft & Missile Pneudraulics at Amarillo AirForce Base, he joined the 495th Bomb Wing of the Strategic Air Command at Sheppard AirForce Base. During his service in the Airforce, he held a level of security clearance that not only cleared him to work on the B-52 bombers—America's strategic bombing fleet that's always on standby should the U.S. come under nuclear attack, but to work alongside many of the atomic bombs themselves. It was an exciting time for him; he was a bright, young, man wining a fine career for himself in the military as his father had done before him, and his future looked good. Only 2 or so years after enlisting in the Airforce, however, Cooper was to have two critical experiences that would change his life**

forever, and possibly even his first insight into how the network that came out of Rome and predates Rome, uses violence to maintain their control over the U.S., and to silence their enemies.

It was early in Cooper's Airforce career that, while on duty as the CQ, or Charge of Quarters, on November 22, 1963AD, he actually watched President John F. Kennedy's (JFK) assassination on live television. The shocking assassination greatly disturbed him and sent his nation into panic, but it also led many to believe that the Communists were behind the assassination due to Kennedy's war on Castro and the Communists, which, incidentally, meant, the creation of Cold War conflict—see note 11: The Cold War, Oswald, & JFK—between the Soviet East and the American West, shortly after WWII, the defeat of Hitler and the Third Reich, was paying off handsomely for the elites.

Cooper was wounded badly over the assassination of President Kennedy, and, at that time, believed the Communists were behind it, as many had, but duty called and, for the next 3 days, as the nation prepared for a probable all-out nuclear war with the communist-held Soviet Union and Castro's communist-held Cuba, and Cooper's military base went to DEFCON 2—Defense Condition Two means war is imminent, Cooper was ordered to sleep under a nuclear-armed B-52 Bomber in readiness for nuclear war. Cooper was shook up over the DEFCON 2 incident at his base. But the shocking assassination of his president, a man he greatly admired, had a much greater impact on him, and, as you will soon discover, it's highly probable that it was the Eyes Only files on who killed Kennedy, he had viewed and exposed to the public, that was one of the principle reasons for why he may have been killed shortly after the attacks on the World Trade Centre and the Pentagon on September 11, 2001AD.

Those were the two major incidents Cooper was involved in while serving with the U.S. Airforce, but there were more to come after he enlisted with the U.S. Navy.

In 1965AD Cooper was given an “honourable discharge” from the U.S. Airforce, before, in December of

the same year, going on to enlist in the U.S. Navy. Later, after boot camp and completion of basic training, he found himself in the U.S. Submarine Division and served onboard the USS Tiru stationed at Pearl Harbour—the U.S. naval base that was bombed by imperial Japan in 1941AD during WWII. It was during Cooper's time serving onboard the USS Tiru that not only did the Vietnam War break out—which many view as a proxy war between capitalist U.S. and the communist Soviet Union and China; but, I suspect, it was merely an easy way for the bankers to make billions of dollars and for the political elites to maintain the illusion that the Cold War is genuine, when, in fact, the Eurasian-Romans control both nations—but claims to have witnessed seeing a UFO, or Unidentified Flying Object, while on watch on the USS Tiru. Cooper claims he was alone on watch when he caught sight of a large, metallic-like, object emerge from the water, make a turn, then re-enter the water. As the object vanished beneath the water, he called for witnesses and, a few minutes or so later, two sailors appeared to investigate his call. As the three sailors stood there looking about them, the object reappeared out from the sea, and, right in front of them, repeated the very same manoeuvres, that Cooper had himself witnessed only moments earlier, several times, before vanishing under the water, out of sight, never to be seen again. It was an incredible event. But after the UFO incident, a commander from the Office of Naval Intelligence boarded the Tiru, and, with that, the three sailors, including Cooper, were asked to read and sign a legal military document forbidden them from talking about the incident. Cooper claims the naval officer refused to write down the truth of what the sailors had witnessed, so, under pressure to redact his testimony, he retracted his first statement; merely told the officer what he believed he wanted to hear, and, with that, swore never to talk about it again. Cooper thought he'd lose his career if he talked about the incident, so didn't mind covering the incident up. But years later he would talk and write publicly about the UFO incident he had witnessed onboard the USS Tiru.

Shortly after the UFO incident witnessed from onboard the Tiru, in 1967AD Cooper transferred to the USS Tombigbee before going on to complete his first tour of duty

somewhere off the coast of Vietnam. As far as I'm aware, Cooper didn't see any action during his first tour, but, by all accounts, it looks like he was set on remaining in the Navy because in 1968AD, shortly after his first 12-month tour had ended in Vietnam, he began training at the School of Naval Security and Intelligence, which was when the critical and metaphorical door that partly and probably led to his death in late 2001AD, was opened up to him. While at school, he was taught how to “set up security perimeters”, “secure installations and buildings”, and “safeguard classified information.” Amongst other things, his training also included “special weapons”, “booby-trap identification and disarming”, the “detection of bugs”, “phone taps”, “transmitters”. But the critical piece of training, that later cleared him to view the Eyes Only files which he later exposed to the public, was when he was, Cooper wrote, “given specialised training in order to prepare and conduct Pacific-area intelligence briefings for the Office of Naval Intelligence.”

After successfully completing his training with Naval Intelligence, Cooper volunteered for a second tour in Vietnam, and, being a cut above, was placed in charge of a patrol boat with soldiers under his command, and, from time-to-time, was involved in some action against the Soviet-Chinese-backed North Vietnamese Army (NVA), or the Vietcong, or VC. Years later, Cooper came to regret enlisting in the armed forces, even came to consider himself “a fool”. But, like so many, he thoroughly believed the anti-communist propaganda that was flooding through the U.S. media at that time when he first enlisted in the U.S. Military; it made him feel proud to be fighting to end communist expansion into South Vietnam, and trusted his government.

Not long after arriving in Vietnam to begin his second tour of duty, along with getting his security clearance upgraded to “Top Secret, Q, Sensitive Compartmentalized Information”, he was asked to read the regulations covering the Personnel Reliability Program governing those personnel who had access to nuclear weapons, information on nuclear weapons, launch codes, and various other things connected to nuclear weapons and military intelligence. Once he was through with that, he was ordered to report to

**the Briefing Team to begin his service, which was where it all began; recall, it was during Cooper's time on the Briefing Team that he claims to have viewed and read top-secret files, that held data on the Kennedy assassination and UFOs, etc., that he later exposed to the public. On that subject, here's what Cooper wrote:**

**“Most of my knowledge on the UFOs, Kennedy's assassination, the Secret Government, the coming ice age, Alternatives 1, 2, & 3, Project GALILEO, and the plan for the New World Order comes directly from the TOP SECRET/MAJIC material which I saw and read between the years 1970 and 1973AD as a member of the Intelligence Briefing Team of the Commander in Chief of the Pacific Fleet.”**

**That was Cooper's route to gaining access to the Eyes Only files. But, here's a thought, is it possible that Naval Intelligence were merely testing him out to see if they could trust him or even corrupt him and, if they could trust him, use him in future covert operations? They may have been. But, unfortunately for them, they failed to recognise the man's patriotism and idealism which was an error that carried a heavy price for them because Cooper didn't betray President Kennedy and the people and become a puppet of elites as may have been the reason for placing the controversial files before his eyes, he actually stood up for them by going AWOL—absent without official leave, and exposing the conspiracy to his good friend Bob Swan.**

**Incidentally, although Cooper exposed the conspiracy to his friend Swan, it wasn't until after he had talked to Swan, after he had returned to duty, and after he had been discharged from the Navy, that he went on to leak those secrets to a reporter in an effort to warn the public about what he had uncovered.**

**By the time Bill went AWOL the “powers that be” surely must have wondered what his problem was; by the time he had leaked classified information to a reporter, they wondered no more and Cooper must have been viewed as a rogue agent, and a rogue agent who had viewed their**



**confidential Eyes Only files while working on the Briefing Team for Naval Intelligence! In his book, Behold A Pale Horse, Cooper tells us precisely what had unfolded:**

**“What I learned during the time I spent with that briefing team is what led me on my 18-year search that has culminated in the writing of this book. On the day that I learned that the Office of Naval Intelligence had participated in the assassination of President John F. Kennedy and that it was the Secret Service agent driving the limo that had shot Kennedy in the head, I went AWOL with no intention of ever returning. My good friend Bob Swan is the one who talked me into going back. Later, on June 1, 1972, on the eve of my wedding, I told Bob everything that I knew about the UFOs, Kennedy's assassination, the Navy, the Secret Government, the coming ice age, Alternatives 1, 2, & 3, Project GALILEO, and the plan for the New World Order. I believed it was all true then and I believe it is all true now.”**

**So Cooper viewed and read the Eyes Only files that alerted him to the alien agenda, the police state, the NWO, and, if that isn't shocking enough for you, reader, hear this, he discovered that the Office of Naval Intelligence and the Secret Service actually participated in the assassination of President John F. Kennedy! It was Cooper's awakening; later it would be ours.**

**In a lecture given in the U.S., Atlanta, on February 23, 1991AD, Cooper stated: “After I left the military on December 11, 1975AD, and attempted to leak the [classified] material to the press, I was attacked twice, so kept quiet for 16 years” . This is what happened:**

**After being discharged from the U.S. Military, and after leaking the Eyes Only secrets to a reporter and public, events began to heat up for Cooper when the car he was driving was forced off the road and crashed leaving him seriously injured! As Cooper lay seriously injured, two agents appeared at the crash site but left believing he was as good as dead. After the agents left the crash site, Cooper crawled up to the road and there he lay injured waiting for**

help to arrive. Help arrived; Cooper was saved. But a short while later he was forced into another car crash and this time lost a leg! It was the second time government agents had tried to kill him and the second time he had cheated death, but it didn't end there. As Cooper was convalescing in hospital after the second attempt to silence him by killing him, two men entered the hospital and aggressively warned him to “shut up or the next time should be final”. So Cooper was worrying someone important, and claims the men identified themselves as “belonging to the Defense Investigative Service”, which Cooper claims was the “Defense Intelligence Agency”. Cooper agreed to keep quiet, and did so for 16 years. But to himself “swore to tell everything he knows as soon as he could work out how to do it without getting hurt again.”

After the warning from what Cooper suspects were government agents, he returned home. But later, after many years went by, began working on a plan to further warn the public about what had happened to him, and to tell them about what he found in the Eyes Only files, which, in the Spring of 1988AD, after having caught what he believed to be government agents spreading false information on Majestic Twelve, or MJ12—a secret group set up to deal with the aliens which Cooper had read about while working for Naval Intelligence, he did.

So Cooper became a “whistleblower” and activist due to the information he had viewed and read while serving with Naval Intelligence during the Vietnam War, and wrote *Behold A Pale Horse* which he published in 1991AD. Now, then, I will tell you about some of the other shocking information he claims to have seen and read between the years 1970 and 1973AD in the Eyes Only files while serving with the Briefing Team attached to the Pacific fleet, and what a story it is.

It was in 1947AD and just after WWII had ended that an alien ship crashed in a desert in New Mexico, and its crew, Cooper claims, were “insect-like beings” from another world. The crashed alien-craft contained a small reactor approximately the size of a basketball, which appeared to be powered by water. Cooper claims there were many crashes

and recoveries between “January 1947 and December 1952”, and, at least, “16 crashed alien-craft, 65 alien bodies, and 1 live alien were recovered”, and it was just after that first crash in 1947AD that the U.S. Government, under the leadership of President Truman at the time, created Project Sign—a secret group, in December 1947AD, to deal with the alien presence, and the U.S. Airforce also played an important role in that effort. Cooper claims, in December 1948AD Project Sign changed its name to Project Grudge, and Project Blue Book, which was “a collection and disinformation group”, was created under Grudge. Blue Teams were formed to recover crashed discs and dead or live aliens, and the Blue Teams later became known as Alpha Teams under Project Pounce and Project Pluto, which were two more secret U.S. Intelligence groups created after Grudge. The supreme intelligence group, created to deal with the alien presence, was the Central Intelligence Group, or the CIG. But later, after the National Security Act was passed, the CIG changed its name to the Central Intelligence Agency, or the CIA, which was when the CIA was born. The National Security Council, or the NSC, which, along with the Office of Policy Co-ordination, or the OPC, was the forerunner of MJ-12, that I will write about later, was another secret group created to oversee the intelligence community and the alien presence, and, because of the laws the NSC passed, the CIA changed from being an intelligence agency that can only legally gather information on foreign sources, into an intelligence agency that can legally gather information, through covert actions, on anyone in the world. So it was a police state act. It was enacted into law back in 1948AD, and the CIA's spying legislation was justified by the U.S. Government's efforts to investigate and deal with the aliens and the Communists, but the alien part was kept secret from the public.

The U.S. elites created many intelligence groups to deal with the alien presence and perhaps even the strange attack weapons—see note 14: Aliens And Their Attack Weapons—and laws were written so the president could be left out of the loop should their covert operations against the aliens ever become known, and, as far as I'm aware, without exception, they were all hidden from the U.S. public, which became the concern. Due to the secrecy, U.S. Secretary of

**Defense James Forrestal objected and demanded the public be told, and, with that, it was an act that may have cost him his life. “Senator Forestal was an idealistic man”, Cooper wrote in his book, and no sooner had he raised his concerns amongst the leaders of Congress about the alien problem, and demanded the public be warned that he was asked to resign by President Truman himself. After being asked to resign by the president, Forrestal began to claim that he was being watched by U.S. government agents, so, with that, and after apparently suffering from some kind of mental breakdown, he was committed to Bethesda Naval Hospital by the administration. Cooper claims the System feared Forestal would never shut up about the alien presence and agenda, so had him committed to discredit him, which meant Forrestal was now contained in the naval hospital with his life in their hands.**

**After complaining to Congress, and after being asked to resign by President Truman, and after having been committed and contained in the hospital, Forestal's friends and family tried to visit him to see how he was, but were denied permission which made them suspicious. Due to that, Forestal's brother notified the authorities that he intends to remove Forestal from the hospital the next day. But the very next day, which was, May 22, 1949AD, get this, Forestal was found dead! He had either thrown himself out of one of the windows in the naval hospital, or someone else threw him out, but Cooper suspects that government agents killed him in that fashion not just to silence him but to have his death viewed as suicide.**

**So did government agents murder Forestal as Cooper suspects, or did Forestal kill himself due to a legitimate breakdown? It's difficult to tell, but Cooper believed that government agents killed him in order to stop him warning the public about the alien threat, and it fits good that they had; to reiterate the suspicious sequence of events that had occurred prior to his death, (1) Forestal was warning the public about the alien threat; (2) he raised his concerns to Congress, but, after that, was asked to resign by the president; (3) after complaining he was being watched, the administration had him committed claiming he was having**

a mental breakdown; (4) when his brother tried to visit him, he was denied permission; (5) Forestal's brother became suspicious after being denied permission to visit him, and told the authorities he intends to remove him from the naval hospital the next day. But the next day Forestal was found dead.

So U.S. Defense Secretary Forestal died in suspicious circumstances, and, because of that, Cooper wrote, “became the first know victim in the conspiracy to cover-up the alien presense from the public”. Although Forestal died, he apparently kept some secret diaries, that were confiscated by the CIA and held in the Whitehouse for many years, which Cooper claims were published by Whitley Strieber—a CIA agent, as fiction, and the book is called “Majestic”.

Cooper claims that after the Roswell crash in 1949AD—and this was around the same time that Forestal may have been murdered and silenced—an actual “live alien was found wandering around the desert”. It was captured, taken to secure military facilities, photographed, which Cooper claims to have viewed while looking through the classified files in Project Grudge, and given the technical name EBE, which means, “extraterrestrial-biological entity”. At first, Cooper wrote, EBE remained silent and refused to talk to his interrogators. But later EBE began to talk. EBE lied a lot, but still had some fantastic information to reveal, which led to the creation of a new U.S. Intelligence group called Yellow Book. EBE became ill in 1951AD, and died on June 2, 1952AD, despite the best efforts to save him, Cooper wrote. But before he died, the U.S. Government had been broadcasting radio signals out into deep space, through another secret group called Project Sigma, in an attempt to contact EBE's crew in the hope of saving him, but Sigma received no response in time to save EBE. Although Project Sigma failed to contact EBE's crew in time to save him, after EBE died, Cooper wrote, Sigma actually made contact with the aliens.

After the alien ship apparently crashed at Roswell in 1949AD, and after either the Blue Teams or Alpha Teams had captured the live alien wandering around some desert, the elites were keen to learn more about them, so, less than

**3 years later on November 4, 1952AD, President Truman, after signing a secret order, created the National Security Agency, or the NSA, for short, whose primary purpose, Cooper wrote, was to “decipher alien communications”, attempt to “open up a dialogue with them,” and also “to keep the alien presence a secret”. That was the first purpose of the newly created NSA. The second purpose was “to monitor all communications and emissions, from any and all electronic devices worldwide, for the purpose of gathering intelligence on humans”.**

**To reiterate, similar to the 1948AD police state act that legally permitted the CIA to gather information on anyone in the world, in 1952AD the NSA were also legally permitted to spy on the public worldwide!**

**The U.S. elites created many intelligence groups over the decades. But with so many agents knowing their affairs, they required a much more covert one to keep the alien presence as secret as possible, one composed of people who were only the most loyal and trusted from their inner-networks, so in 1952AD they founded a super secret group, which first met at the Bilderberg hotel, in Switzerland, in 1954AD, called the Bildebergers, and, Cooper claims, are “the secret government of the world”.**

**It was just before the Bilderberg group held their first known meeting that Dwight D. Eisenhower—America’s supreme commander during WWII, became the U.S. President in 1953AD, and it was during his first year in office, Cooper wrote, that there was a major increase in alien activity; for instance, “at least 10 alien ships were recovered along with 26 dead and 4 live aliens”. “Of the 10, 4 were found in Arizona, 2 in Texas, 1 in New Mexico, 1 in Louisiana, 1 in Montana, 1 in South Africa”, and there were hundreds of UFO sightings. Due to the increase in alien activity, Eisenhower moved to solve the alien problem and, at the same time, keep it back from Congress and the public, so in 1953AD he and his close friend and fellow member of the Council on Foreign Relations; Nelson Rockefeller, founded a new super secret group, called MAJESTIC 12, or MJ-12, to deal with those problems. This was good fortune because, not long after the MJ-12 group**

was created, a shocking event occurred that would possibly change our direction forever; in 1953AD large objects were tracked in space, heading towards Earth, and, Cooper wrote, “they turned out to be alien ships”.

Incidentally, MJ-12 members were made up of Nelson Rockefeller; Director of Central Intelligence (DCI), Allen Dulles; Director of the Federal Bureau of Investigation (DFBI), J. Edgar Hoover, and six men from the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), known as the Wise Men, and they were also members of a secret society called the JASON Society or Scholars whose members were recruited from the Skull and Bones and the Scroll and Key societies of Harvard and Yale. In addition, the MJ-12 group, under President Eisenhower and Kennedy, was called the 5412 Committee or the Special Group; under President Johnston it was called the 303 Committee; under President Nixon, Ford, and Carter it was called the 40 Committee, and under President Reagan it was called the PI40 Committee.

In 1953AD after large objects were tracked in space, that turned out to be alien spaceships, and took up orbit around Earth, contact was made with them through Project Sigma, and, later, a team connected to Project Plato, which was another secret group created after the aliens arrived and took up orbit around Earth, also began communicating with them, so it was through Project Plato that an actual landing and summit was agreed upon that would take place at a later date. All-in-all, there may have been three actual alien landings in the U.S, but, according to Cooper, the third landing, which occurred in 1954AD, witnessed alien ships land at the U.S. Edwards AirForce Base, and President Eisenhower, on February 20, 1954AD, apparently signing a treaty with the Grays. The treaty is as follows: (1) in exchange for alien technology and assistance, the U.S. Government agreed to construct underground bases to be used by both the aliens and the U.S. Government. The base at Dolce is one; the base at S4, which is in the area known as Area 51 or Dreamland, is the second; (2) the human elite would keep the alien presence a secret; (3) the U.S. Government would permit the aliens to abduct humans for scientific experiments, if no harm came to them and if they

were returned safely, and if all abductees were reported to MJ-12; (4) the aliens would make deals with no one but the U.S. Government.

So both the aliens and the U.S. Government agreed to build secret bases for joint use. Construction of the bases moved along very slowly until large amounts of money was made available in 1957AD. Once some of the bases were completed, a secret project, called Project Redlight, was founded in order to test fly and perform experiments with the alien crafts that the U.S. Government had recovered and more so the ones that were recovered intact. Redlight was up and running, but, in the 1960s AD, it was put on hold, due to one of the alien crafts exploding killing the pilots, until the scientists and engineers could work out the problem. Cooper claims that the secret base, where the exchange of technology occurred, was called “Dreamland”, also known as the Darkside of the Moon, and Dreamland was under the control of the U.S. Navy, and all personnel required a Q-clearance to enter the base. Although Dreamland was under the control of the Navy, the Army also played a role; which was, to form a secret organisation to secure the Dreamland site, and the organisation was called the National Reconnaissance Organisation (NRO), which was based at Fort Carson, Colorado, and the NRO soldiers were called Delta. In addition, another project, called Operation Snowbird, was formed to mislead the public should any of them witness any of the Redlight crafts being tested.

The U.S. Government made a treaty with the aliens, built bases for joint use, and camouflaged their test flights through Operation Snowbird. By 1955AD, however, events took a sinister turn for the worse when the U.S. Government began suspecting that the aliens had broken the treaty; for instance, along with mutilated humans and animals being found all across the U.S., and abducted humans not being returned or reported to MJ12 as agreed, the aliens were found to be working with the Soviet Union, so, after several Airforce dogfights with alien-crafts, that taught the humans that their weapons were no match for the Grays’, in November 1954AD a study group was founded to explore all



factors involved in the making and implementing of foreign policy in the nuclear age, which was merely a “smokescreen” to disguise the true subject matter of study; which was, hostile aliens. The study group's first meetings were in 1954AD and they were called the Quantico Meetings due to the members meeting at the Quantico Marine Base in Virginia, U.S., and the study group was made up of 35 members of the CFR's secret scholars known as the JASON Society, and Dr Edgard Teller—father of the hydrogen bomb, was invited to participate. Dr Brzezinski was the study Director for the first 18 months; Dr Henry Kissinger was the Director for the second 18 months when the name changed to Quantico II, and Nelson Rockefeller was a frequent visitor during the studies, and was the man who later built a retreat at the marine base, called the Country Club, which could only be reached by air. The retreat was closed in 1956AD, and, one year or so later, in 1957AD Kissinger published the results of the study groups, called Nuclear Weapons and Foreign Policy. Only a select few were aware of what the true study results were, but perhaps the U.S. Government began looking into ways of acquiring new advanced weapons to help in the defence against the aliens if they continued breaking the treaties and continued their hostilities. Those weapons are: JOSHUA and EXCALIBUR. JOSHUA was an advanced weapon, apparently captured from the Germans during WWII, that could destroy, at a range of 2 miles using low frequency sound waves directed at it, a 4-inch piece of armour-plating, and it was believed that JOSHUA would be effective against the alien ships; EXCALIBUR was designed to destroy alien underground bases with a 1-megaton warhead penetrating to a depth of 1,000 metres.

In 1969AD a confrontation occurred, between the human scientists and aliens, at the Dolce underground lab that the Grays and the U.S. Government had agreed to build and make joint use of, and the aliens captured many human scientists as hostages. Delta forces were sent in and, due to their weapons being inferior to the aliens', 66 humans were killed as a result. Because of that, the humans withdrew from all joint projects with the aliens, but began working with them again 2 years later in 1971AD.

**That was Cooper's story. That was his contribution to the enlightenment of the people, and he's right up there with the best of them who campaigned against the ruling elites and possibly even the aliens. Cooper did well as a revolutionary figure, but, right from the start of his campaigns until the very end of them, made many enemies along the way, and just hoped they'd leave him alone as he carried on with his necessary work. It was a remarkable coincidence, then, that, after Cooper warned the people that “the U.S. Government were planning to attack the United States of America”—Cooper actually stated “Israel”, but was just being sarcastic due to America's support for Israel—during one of his shortwave radio broadcasts that was broadcasted on June 28, 2001AD, merely 3 short months before the shocking attacks on 9/11, he was shot and killed by undercover police officers who were serving a warrant on him for “suspected” aggressive behaviour and tax evasion charges! The undercover police claim Cooper drew his gun and fired on them, so they returned fire killing him. However, the only witnesses were the officers who killed him, so no one's so sure what happened.**

**Why would any of the political elites sanction the assassination of an ex-Naval Intelligence officer? Outwith Cooper exposing their Eyes Only secrets to the public, which is enough of a motive, let me assure you, comrade, that I have another fine motive for the elites sanctioning his assassination, which is, on 9/11 itself Cooper actually made a radio broadcast where he implicitly and explicitly implied that the U.S. Government had actually planned and executed the attacks on the Twin Towers in order to reduce freedoms at home and attack foreign nations! Broadcasted on 9/11 on his shortwave radio show called the Hour of the Time, Cooper stated:**

**"I know exactly why these attacks were launched. They [the elites] need these abuses, not just here but worldwide, to pass laws to strip people of their rights and of their freedoms and to disarm people in order to bring the world under the umbrella of a world totalitarian, socialist, government."**

**Broadcasted on 9/11 on the Hour of the Time, Cooper stated: “What happened to the Twin Towers today was exactly the same as Oklahoma; it wasn't the truck that was parked out on the street that brought the building down; you can't bring down a building like that by flying a plane into the top quarter of it or blowing up a truck full of fertiliser in the street; you have to have charges placed upon the main structural members of the building in order to bring something like that down. Remember, these [Alfred P. Murray building and the Twin Towers] are steel, reinforced concrete, buildings. They're called Hard Targets in military jargon, and the only way to effect a Hard Target is with placed charges on the main structural members.”**

**This was Cooper claiming that it wasn't the planes that brought the buildings down, rather, persons placed charges in the buildings in order to bring them down.**

**Broadcasted on 9/11 on the Hour of the Time, and in regards to what the government's response will be due to the attacks on the Twin Towers and the Pentagon, Cooper stated: “You can expect some serious things to happen both in this country and probably abroad”. On the same radio broadcast, Cooper recorded one of the reporters saying “there's going to be a tremendous reduction in freedom because of what has happened.”**

**Broadcasted on 9/11 on the Hour of the Time, Cooper stated: During his time with the Briefing Team “he viewed a classified file, called Operation Majority, whose subject was concerned with bringing about a world government and taking away the freedoms of the American people after a terrorist event like 9/11.”**

**if you think that's a good motive for wanting Cooper gone, then what about the eerie fact that on an earlier one of Cooper's shortwave radio broadcasts, that was aired on June 28, 2001, just 3 weeks prior to 9/11, Cooper actually predicted 9/11? Here's what Cooper stated:**

**“I'm telling you that something's going to happen. If it doesn't happen in the next 2 or 3 weeks, something eventually, something terrible, is going to happen in this**

country, and it's going to be a terrorist attack. and it's going to be big enough that martial law could be declared and it could start the whole thing."

To conclude on William Cooper: Being on a Briefing Team and just being in the U.S. Military were important events in Cooper's life, because it actually led him to become a "whistleblower" and very, very, likely to his death in 2001AD. But what he went on to do after exposing to the public the shocking things he had read in the classified files while working for the Office of Naval Intelligence, was what stood him out; for instance, how he stood up for President Kennedy by exposing who he believes really had killed him, and how he warned the people about the emerging NWO and the alien threat even after government agents tried to kill him by running him off the road twice leaving him seriously injured. So Cooper was a fine man. He was a great leader and teacher. His death was very suspicious, and I trust him.

As for did Cooper reasonable prove his case. I think he did. For instance, (1) in his book is his collection of military records that appear very authentic, and he also has many military medals that his friend Doyle displayed in one of his videos, so it looks good that Cooper was in all those U.S. Military organisations that he claims to have been in; (2) in his book he also shows a critical letter from Bob Swan, in which Swan confirms the meeting he had with Cooper after Cooper went AWOL, and, in a video lecture given in the U.S., Atlanta, on February 23, 1990AD, Cooper eludes to the fact that Swan holds some of the critical Eyes Only Files that he gave to him to keep safe for him, and for Swan to be his witness.

Before I end this note, know that the events unfolding today are described in the Bible! I found that spooky; an ancient book that predicts the future. But it really does! Hear this, in the Book of Revelations it states, in the end there will be a final battle, known as Armageddon or End of Times, between good and evil, before the Day of Judgement! Not only did I see that but Cooper, who actually used the "Pale Horse" image for his book's cover and title; the title

**being, Behold A Pale Horse, actually stated that the elites, or God, or the aliens, are following Biblical scriptures! So it seems our future is written in our own Bible and it's a future of conflict, so be on guard!**

## **THE COLD WAR, OSWALD, & JFK**

**Note 11. The following six points will show (1) why the alliance between the West and East against Hitler was suspicious; (2) why the Americans “permitting” the Soviets to occupy eastern Poland and other nations post-WWII is suspicious; (3) why the U.S. elites faked the Cold War and the war on the Communists after WWII; (4) why, during the Cold War, the CIA encouraged Kennedy to remove Castro from power in Cuba, and what the Cuban Missile Crisis was really about; (5) Was Oswald guilty?; (6) and what were the motives for the U.S. elites sanctioning the assassination of President Kennedy?**

**1. Why the alliance between the West and East, against Hitler was suspicious: Although Hitler invaded western and northern European nations after becoming the Head of State, excluding the odd communist or two, he did not persecute the peoples or round them up to be deported, and not even in Poland; it was only later that Hitler was accused of secretly killing Jews who he blamed for the anti-White agenda. But, hear this, although the communist Soviet elites and their Cheka, GPU, OGPU, and NKVD secret police executioners had killed millions of Russians and others shortly after WWI in the Red Terror that occurred in 1918AD, famines during the era of collectivisation that began in 1928AD, murdered the Russian Royal Family in 1918AD, and even invaded Finland (the Winter War), on November 30, 1939AD, Britain's Chamberlain and France's Lebrun actually declared war on Hitler on September 3, 1939AD, after Hitler's forces invaded Poland on September 1, 1939AD! Recall also, reader, that Stalin himself had invaded eastern Poland on September 17, 1939AD, which was merely 16 days after Hitler had invaded, and, unlike the Nazis, Stalin and the Red Army rounded up all the officers in the Polish Army, which was around 15,000, marched them into the Katyn Forest, murdered them then buried them! Further, after invading eastern Poland, the Soviets designated the Polish people as Soviet citizens after staged elections by the NKVD**

**secret police. They also arrested and murdered their Polish political enemies along with military leaders, police officers, and priests. Under the NKVD, the Soviets deported hundreds of thousands of Polish people to Siberia and other remote parts of the Soviet Union in four waves between 1939AD and 1941AD.**

**So bad things happened in Poland after the Nazis and Communists invaded in 1939AD. But although the Communists were driven out of eastern Poland during Operation Barbarossa which began in 1941AD by the Germans, the Communists reconquered it in the summer of 1944AD and created a fascist police state as the West did nothing but watch.**

**2. Why the U.S. “allowing” the Soviets to occupy eastern Poland and other nations post-WWII is suspicious: After Hitler's defeat in 1945AD by the Soviet-Communists from the East, and the Leftists from the West, although the U.S. had the atomic bomb—the war winning weapon that had decisively defeated Imperial Japan in WWII, the Soviet-Communists had still, and without much protest from the West, occupied and remained in parts of Central Europe and, through the Stazi secret police, created a police state to watch, hunt, probably murder, and control the citizens through. Because the threat of atomic annihilation of Soviet cities, etc., would have been enough to force the Soviet-Communists out of Central Europe and back into Eastern Europe, and, hear this, the Americans didn't even issue the threat never mind actually engage the imperialist Soviets, then the West's actions should be viewed as the U.S. and Soviet elites conspiring against the citizens in Central Europe, and done to enslave them in a fascist police state.**

**Incidentally, on August 29, 1949AD, the Soviet Union seccessfully exploded its first atomic bomb at the Semipalatinsk Test Site in Kazakhstan.**

**3. Why the U.S. elites faked the Cold War and the war on the Communists after WWII: The Cold War, or the Iron Curtain between the East and West, emerged shortly after the Western elites did nothing to stop the Soviet-**

**Communists creating a fascist police state in Central and Eastern Europe at the close of WWII, and it was marked by the Truman Doctrine that was issued in 1947AD in the U.S., where the U.S. Government were acknowledging they were now at war with their old communist-comrades they had just helped defeat Hitler with! The Cold War would justify many wars; for instance, North Korea, South Vietnam, and Afghanistan, and would also see the private bankers earning billions in profit from those wars. Cooper has two reasons why the U.S. elites declared war on Communism and the Communists: (1) Cooper claims that the war on Communism was used as a “smokescreen” to justify the CIG; CIA, and the NSC; NSA—secret U.S. Intelligence and security groups, receiving tax payers' money so they could finance their Black Projects such as Yellow Book; (2) Cooper also claims that the war on Communism was used to justify new laws to create a global police state; for instance, he claims, in 1948AD the CIA were legally permitted to monitor “all communications worldwide.”**

**4. Why, during the Cold War, the CIA encouraged JFK to remove Castro from power in Cuba, and what the Cuban Missile Crisis was really about: Due to the U.S. Government's declaration of war on Communism at the end of WWII, that was witnessed through the Truman Doctrine—the Truman Doctrine was a foreign policy, made by the U.S. Government, that pledged to assist any nation threatened by Communism, or Soviet expansion, due to, I suppose, Communism's planned economies that ends the “American dream”, and its police states—Kennedy, and just like the public, had been taught to view Communism and the Communists as the greatest threat to western democracy—western democracy is sold as a free market and free press system—so that's why he became an ardent anti-communist and believed that most Americans supported him when he sanctioned the CIA to remove Fidel Castro—Prime Minister of the Republic of Cuba and a Marxist-Leninist communist, from power that ended in the failed Bay of Pigs, or BOP, invasion in 1961AD. To Kennedy, the invasion of Cuba, to remove Castro from power, was a genuine military expedition justified by the Truman Doctrine. To the CIA, it wasn't about removing Castro from**



power at all because Castro, I suppose, was one of the Eurasians and part of the global Eurasian network, it was merely to expose Castro's enemies so they could help him get rid of them, which did happen. Hear this for good results for Castro, what happened after the failed BOP invasion in 1961AD? Castro actually hunted down and eliminated all CIA-backed anti-communist revolutionaries, that made up the doomed BOP invasion force, that were invading to get him! The CIA's fake war to remove Castro from power, also kept up the illusion that the Cold War was real, which was also important to the leader-elites.

The failed BOP invasion and Castro remaining in power should have taught Kennedy a lesson; that Kennedy perhaps couldn't quite understand why “superpower” America and the the CIA failed to bring down Castro. But perhaps failing to recognise how dangerous the situation was for him, he moved forward with his revolutionary reforms that would later very likely cost him his life.

So Kennedy was against the Communists and he failed to bring down Castro in 1961AD. But it looks like Kennedy was still intent on going after Castro because, hear this, what happened after the BOP disaster? Only the global elites very likely ordered Nikita Khrushchev—First Secretary of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union (CPSU), who had made an alliance with Castro shortly after the failed BOP invasion, to deploy nuclear weapons into Cuba and direct them at the U.S., which brought about the Cuban Missile Crisis (CMC), in 1962AD!

President Kennedy going after Castro even after the failed BOP invasion, and also his war on the Communists were possibly more fatal mistakes and may have added to the reasons for his assassination, but it also made many people suspect that Castro and the Communists were involved in the assassination of President Kennedy; for instance, Rockwell believed that Lee Harvey Oswald—the man who was posthumously convicted for killing President Kennedy, was part of a Jewish communist plot linked to Castro due to Oswald's political activism he did in support of Castro and Cuba, and the Warren Commission (the

Commission), that was set up to investigate the president's assassination, covered up the communist connection. So Oswald's guilt is something I will now consider.

First up, President Lyndon B. Johnson, who became the U.S. President after President Kennedy, or JFK, was assassinated, appointed Earl Warren—Chief Justice of the United States, as the chief investigator on the assassination of President Kennedy, on November 29, 1963AD, and that's why the investigation group got the name the “Warren Commission”. Secondly, President Johnson directed the Commission to investigate Kennedy's assassination and the subsequent killing of the alleged assassin; which was, Oswald, and to report its findings and conclusions to him.

After much research into witness testimonies that were relied on by the Commission to posthumously convict Oswald for the murder of JFK, I concluded that, because there were just so many “average citizen” witnesses; for instance, his wife, his friend, his workmates, his landlady, etc., which means it's very difficult to conclude that all of them were lying, or they all pointed out the wrong man, there testimonies were enough to convince me that Oswald was correctly found guilty. The following will take you through the evidence that convinced me of Oswald's guilt, and the following case I make is reliant on witness testimonies that can be viewed in the Commission's report and accessed by the public via the internet:

### **5. Was Oswald guilty?**

(a) Was Oswald connected to Castro, and was Oswald a communist?

The Commission stated that (1) *“Oswald appeared on radio programs twice, claiming to be the spokesman for the Fair Play for Cuba Committee in New Orleans”*; (2) *Oswald was arrested on August 9 in connection with a scuffle which occurred while he was distributing pro-Castro leaflets*; (3) *“Oswald arrived in Moscow by train after crossing the border from Finland, where he had secured a visa for a 6-day stay in the Soviet Union. He immediately applied for Soviet citizenship”*. *“Oswald appeared at the American Embassy, announced that he wished to*

*renounce his U.S. citizenship and become a Russian citizen, and handed the Embassy officer a written statement he had prepared for the occasion. When asked his reasons, Oswald replied, "I am a Marxist." Oswald never formally complied with the legal steps necessary to renounce his American citizenship. The Soviet Government did not grant his request for citizenship, but in January 1960 he was given permission to remain in the Soviet Union on a year-to-year basis. At the same time Oswald was sent to Minsk where he worked in radio factory as an unskilled laborer. In January 1961 his permission to remain in the Soviet Union was extended for another year. A few weeks later, in February 1961, he wrote to the American Embassy in Moscow expressing a desire to return to the United States. The following month Oswald met a 19-year-old Russian girl, Marina Nikolaevna Prusakova, a pharmacist, who had been brought up in Leningrad but was then living with an aunt and uncle in Minsk. They were married on April 30, 1961. Throughout the following year he carried on a correspondence with American and Soviet authorities seeking approval for the departure of himself and his wife to the United States. In the course of this effort, Oswald and his wife visited the U.S. Embassy in Moscow in July of 1961. Primarily on the basis of an interview and questionnaire completed there, the Embassy concluded that Oswald had not lost his citizenship, a decision subsequently ratified by the Department of State in Washington, D.C. Upon their return to Minsk, Oswald and his wife filed with the Soviet authorities for permission to leave together. Their formal application was made in July 1961, and on December 25, 1961, Marina Oswald was advised it would be granted. A daughter was born to the Oswalds in February 1962. In the months that followed they prepared for their return to the United States. On May 9, 1962 the U.S. Immigration and Naturalization Service, at the request of the Department of State, agreed to waive a restriction under the law which would have prevented the issuance of a United States visa to Oswald's Russian wife until she had left the Soviet Union. They finally left Moscow on June 1, 1962, and were assisted in meeting their travel expenses by a loan of \$435.71 from the U.S. Department of State. Two weeks later they arrived in Texas."*

**So I trust & believe the Commission's evidence; media interviews, visas, etc., on both of those points. It's strongly proven, then, that, while it has never been proven that Oswald was in direct contact with Castro himself, Oswald was a communist and linked to the Communists and Cuba.**

**(b) Did Oswald work in the Book Depository and was he in the Depository at the time of the assassination?**

**The Commission stated that Oswald (1) “*started working in the Texas School Book Depository Building on October 16, 1963. When the shots were fired, a Dallas patrolman, Marrion L Baker, who was riding in the motorcade several cars behind the President's, observed that the shots came from the Book Depository. On reaching the building, Baker met with the superintendant of the Book Depository, Roy Truly, before both of them entered the building and ran toward the two elevators in the rear. The elevators were being used so they used the stairs. On their way up to the top of the building, Baker noticed someone in the lunchroom so he rushed in with his gun drawn. Not more than 2 minutes had elapsed since the shooting. The man Baker encounterd was empty handed so, after Truly had identified the man as Oswald: an employee of the Book Depository, Baker and Truly continued up the stairs.*”; (2) “*Frazier saw Oswald enter the Depository Building*” on the day of Kennedy's assassination.”**

**I conclude that Oswald was in the Depository at the time of the assassination.**

**(c) What was Oswald's actions after Kennedy was assassinated and after Baker and Truly had spoken to him, and were they suspicious?**

**The Commission stated that “*Within about 1 minute after his encounter with Baker and Truly, Oswald was seen passing through the second-floor offices. In his hand was a full "Coke" bottle which he had purchased from a vending machine in the lunchroom. He was walking toward the front of the building where a passenger elevator and a short flight of stairs provided access to the main entrance of the building on the first floor. Approximately 7 minutes later, at about 12:40 p.m., Oswald boarded a bus at a point on Elm Street***

*seven short blocks east of the Depository Building. The bus was traveling west toward the very building from which Oswald had come. Its route lay through the Oak Cliff section in southwest Dallas, where it would pass seven blocks east of the roominghouse in which Oswald was living, at 1026 North Beckley Avenue. On the bus was Mrs. Mary Bledsoe, one of Oswald's former landladies who immediately recognized him. Oswald stayed on the bus approximately 3 or 4 minutes, during which time it proceeded only two blocks because of the traffic jam created by the motorcade and the assassination. Oswald then left the bus. A few minutes later he entered a vacant taxi four blocks away and asked the driver to take him to a point on North Beckley Avenue several blocks beyond his roominghouse. The trip required 5 or 6 minutes. At about 1 p.m. Oswald arrived at the roominghouse. The housekeeper, Mrs. Earlene Roberts, was surprised to see Oswald at midday and remarked to him that he seemed to be in quite a hurry. He made no reply. A few minutes later Oswald emerged from his room zipping up his jacket and rushed out of the house.”*

*“Approximately 14 minutes later, and just 45 minutes after the assassination, another violent shooting occurred in Dallas. The victim was Patrolman J. D. Tippit of the Dallas police, an officer with a good record during his more than 11 years with the police force. He was shot near the intersection of 10th Street and Patton Avenue, about nine-tenths of a mile from Oswald's roominghouse. At the time of the assassination, Tippit was alone in his patrol car, the routine practice for most police patrol officers at this time of day. He had been ordered by radio at 12:45 p.m. to proceed to the central Oak Cliff area as part of a concentration of patrol car activity around the center of the city following the assassination. At 12:54 Tippit radioed that he had moved as directed and would be available for any emergency. By this time the police radio had broadcast several messages alerting the police to the suspect described by Brennan at the scene of the assassination -- slender white male, about 30 years old, 5 feet 10 inches and weighing about 165 pounds.”*

*“At approximately 1:15 p.m., Tippit was driving slowly in an easterly direction on East 10th Street in Oak Cliff. About 100 feet past the intersection of 10th Street and Patton Avenue,*

*Tippit pulled up alongside a man walking in the same direction. The man met the general description of the suspect wanted in connection with the assassination. He walked over to Tippit's car, rested his arms on the door on the right-hand side of the car, and apparently exchanged words with Tippit through the window. Tippit opened the door on the left side and started to walk around the front of his car. As he reached the front wheel on the driver's side, the man on the sidewalk drew a revolver and fired several shots in rapid succession, hitting Tippit four times and killing him instantly. An automobile repairman, Domingo Benavides, heard the shots and stopped his pickup truck on the opposite side of the street about 25 feet in front of Tippit's car. He observed the gunman start back toward Patton Avenue, removing the empty cartridge cases from the gun as he went. Benavides rushed to Tippit's side. The patrolman, apparently dead, was lying on his revolver, which was out of its holster. Benavides promptly reported the shooting to police headquarters over the radio in Tippit's car. The message was received shortly after 1:16 p.m.”*

*“As the gunman left the scene, he walked hurriedly back toward Patton Avenue and turned left, heading south. Standing on the northwest corner of 10th Street and Patton Avenue was Helen Markham, who had been walking south on Patton Avenue and had seen both the killer and Tippit cross the intersection in front of her as she waited on the curb for traffic to pass. She witnessed the shooting and then saw the man with a gun in his hand walk back toward the corner and cut across the lawn of the corner house as he started south on Patton Avenue.”*

*“In the corner house itself, Mrs. Barbara Jeanette Davis and her sister-in-law, Mrs. Virginia Davis, heard the shots and rushed to the door in time to see the man walk rapidly across the lawn shaking a revolver as if he were emptying it of cartridge cases. Later that day each woman found a cartridge case near the home. As the gunman turned the corner he passed alongside a taxicab which was parked on Patton Avenue a few feet from 10th Street. The driver, William W. Scoggins, had seen the slaying and was now crouched behind his cab on the street side. As the gunman cut through the shrubbery on the lawn, Scoggins looked up and saw the man*

*approximately 12 feet away. In his hand was a pistol and he muttered words which sounded to Scoggins like "poor dumb cop" or "poor damn cop."*

*"After passing Scoggins, the gunman crossed to the west side of Patton Avenue and ran south toward Jefferson Boulevard, a main Oak Cliff thoroughfare. On the east side of Patton, between 10th Street and Jefferson Boulevard, Ted Callaway, a used car salesman, heard the shots and ran to the sidewalk. As the man with the gun rushed past, Callaway shouted "What's going on?" The man merely shrugged, ran on to Jefferson Boulevard and turned right. On the next corner was a gas station with a parking lot in the rear. The assailant ran into the lot, discarded his jacket and then continued his flight west on Jefferson."*

*"In a shoe store a few blocks farther west on Jefferson, the manager, Johnny Calvin Brewer, heard the siren of a police car moments after the radio in his store announced the shooting of the police officer in Oak Cliff. Brewer saw a man step quickly into the entranceway of the store and stand there with his back toward the street. When the police car made a U-turn and headed back in the direction of the Tippit shooting, the man left and Brewer followed him. He saw the man enter the Texas Theatre, a motion picture house about 60 feet away, without buying a ticket. Brewer pointed this out to the cashier, Mrs. Julia Postal, who called the police. The time was shortly after 1:40 p.m."*

*"At 1:29 p.m., the police radio had noted the similarity in the descriptions of the suspects in the Tippit shooting and the assassination. At 1:45 p.m., in response to Mrs. Postal's call, the police radio sounded the alarm: "Have information a suspect just went in the Texas Theatre on West Jefferson." Within minutes the theater was surrounded. The house lights were then turned up. Patrolman M. N. McDonald and several other policemen approached the man, who had been pointed out to them by Brewer. McDonald ordered the man to his feet and heard him say, "Well, it's all over now." The man drew a gun from his waist with one hand and struck the officer with the other. McDonald struck out with his right hand and grabbed the gun with his left hand. After a brief struggle*

*McDonald and several other police officers disarmed and handcuffed the suspect and drove him to police headquarters, arriving at approximately 2 p.m.”*

I conclude that Oswald's actions, directly after the assassination, were highly suspicious, and the witnesses, that testified against him, appear reliable.

(d) Did Oswald own a rifle and did anyone witness him carrying a rifle, or rifle-like object, on the day of the assassination?

The Commission stated that, after the assassination of President Kennedy, (1) *“the police arrived at the Paine house and asked Marina Oswald whether her husband owned a rifle. She said that he did and then led them into the garage and pointed to the rolled up blanket. As a police officer lifted it, the blanket hung limply over either side of his arm. The rifle was not there.”*; (2) *“The FBI had traced the rifle found on the sixth floor of the Texas School Book Depository to a mail order house in Chicago which had purchased it from a distributor in New York. Approximately 6 hours later the Chicago firm advised that this rifle had been ordered in March 1963 by an A. Hidell for shipment to post office box 2915, in Dallas, Tex., box rented by Oswald. Payment for the rifle was remitted by a money order signed by A. Hidell. By 6:45 p.m. on November 23, the FBI was able to advise the Dallas police that, as a result of handwriting analysis of the documents used to purchase the rifle, it had concluded that the rifle had been ordered by Lee Harvey Oswald.”*; (3) *“Oswald walked to Frazier's house about half a block away and placed a long bulky package, made out of wrapping paper and tape, into the rear seat of the car. He told Frazier that the package contained curtain rods. When they reached the Depository parking lot, Oswald walked quickly ahead. Frazier followed and saw Oswald enter the Depository Building carrying the long bulky package with him.”*

So Oswald did own a rifle and it wasn't where it should have been on the day of the assassination, and he was witnessed carrying an object, that matches the profile of a rifle, into the Depository on the day of the assassination.



So it looks good that Oswald was correctly found guilty by the Commission for his part in the assassination of President Kennedy. Just to reiterate some of the witness testimonies that also won me over: (1) after police officers turned up at the Paine house, after the assassination of Kennedy, and asked Oswald's wife if he owned a rifle, his wife stated "he did own a rifle". But when officers asked Oswald's wife if they could see the rifle, the rifle wasn't there, and, of course, it was later located in the Depository where Oswald worked and was proven to be on the day of the assassination; (2) Oswald's friend, Frazier, noticed Oswald carrying a covered up object into the Depository. Asking what it was, Oswald stated it was "curtain rods". So curtain rods, of course, would fit the profile of a rifle; (3) Truly and Baker talked to Oswald moments after the shooting, which means he was in the Snipers Nest at the precise time Kennedy was shot; (4) Oswald's former landlady noticed him boarding a bus at a time helpful to ascertain his movements just after the assassination; Oswald left the Depository only moments after talking to Officer Baker, and Oswald was the only person to leave after the assassination; (5) before the assassination, Oswald rented a room under a false name. Roberts—the housekeeper, claims it was Oswald who rented the room and signed for it under the alias O. H. Lee, and "O. H. Lee", of course, is Oswald's name in reverse; the correct way would be L. H. Oswald, and is how he should have signed for the room; (6) a mechanic, called Benavides, heard the shots, that killed Officer Tippit, then watched as the gunman, who he claims was Oswald, walked away from the scene reloading his weapon; (7) just after Officer Tippit was shot and killed, Markham, who was in that same area as Benavides, had seen both the killer and Tippit in front of her as she waited on the curb (kerb), for traffic to pass. She witnessed the shooting of Tippit, and witnessed the killer, who she claims was Oswald, with a gun in his hand; (8) at the exact same time as Benavides and Markham witnessed the events, in the exact same area, the Davis sisters heard the gunshots and witnessed Oswald reloading his weapon; (9) after Oswald was seen shooting Officer Tippet somewhere around Oak Cliff and just past 10th Street and Patton Avenue, store manager Brewer saw Oswald hiding in

a store entrance as a police patrol car drove past. Once the police car had drove past, Oswald also left and Brewer followed him to a Texas theatre where Oswald went in without buying a ticket. Brewer alerted the cashier, Julia Postal, to that, who called the police and, in response, the police quickly surrounded the theatre. Officer McDonald and several other policemen approached Oswald who had been pointed out by Brewer. McDonald ordered Oswald to his feet, but, as Oswald got up, he drew his gun with one hand and struck McDonald with the other. In defense, Officer McDonald struck out with his right hand and grabbed the gun with his left, and, after a brief struggle, McDonald and several other police officers disarmed and handcuffed Oswald then drove him to their police headquarters.

I've established that Oswald was correctly found guilty by the Commission, due to the overwhelming evidence against him. The question to answer now, then, is was Oswald acting alone as the Warren Commission would have the people believe, or was Oswald part of a communist assassination team, or any team, for that matter?

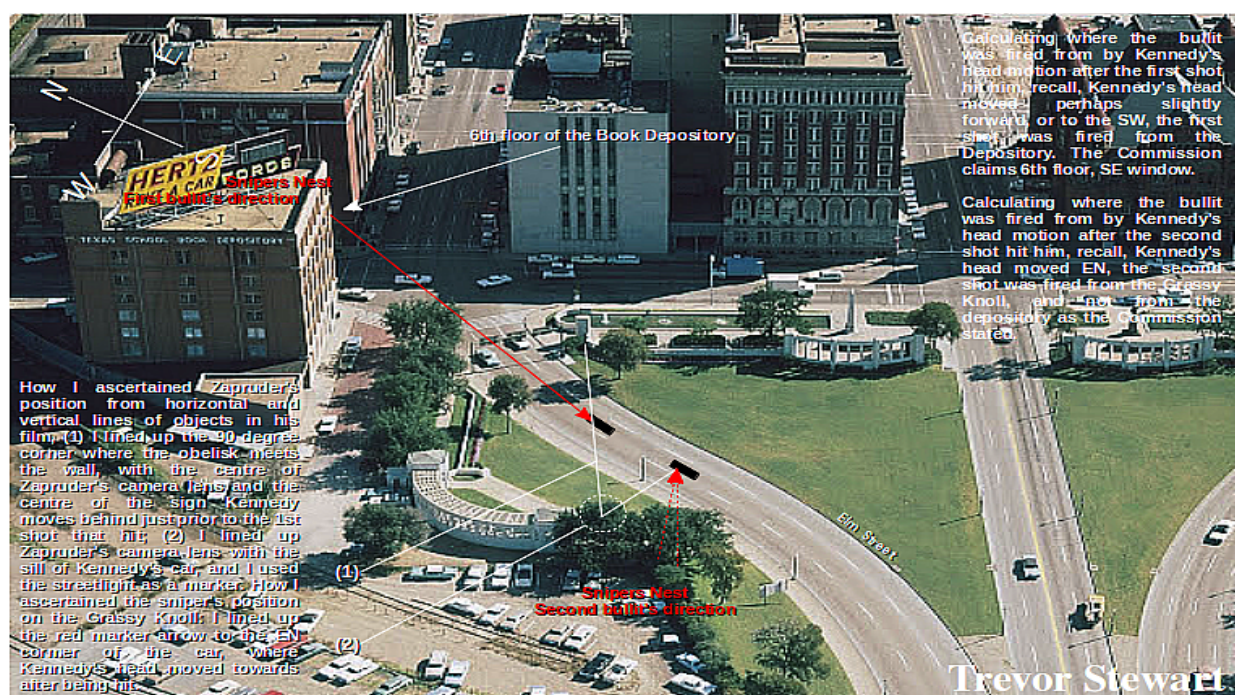
(e) Was Oswald acting alone?

To establish whether Oswald was acting alone or not, outwith him working alongside people in the Depository, I need to know one very important thing: did all the shots, that hit Kennedy, come from the Depository as the Commission claimed—the Commission, recall, claimed that “all the shots which caused the President's and Governor Connally's wounds were fired from the sixth floor window of the southeast corner of the Texas School Book Depository. The weight of the evidence indicates that there were three shots fired.”—or did any of the shots, that hit Kennedy, come from another position? Before I begin, know that the Zapruder frames, used by the Warren Commission, were published, in black and white, as Commission Exhibit 885 in volume XVIII of the Hearings and Exhibits. Further, the first broadcast of the Zapruder film, was on a late-night television show, called Underground News, with Chuck Collins, in Chicago in 1970AD.

**It was thanks to the evidence in the Zapruder film that made the Commission conclude that there was just one assassin and that all shots fired at Kennedy track back to the Depository where Oswald worked. The footage was kept secret from the public for some 6 years, and people accepted the Commission's conclusions. But once the footage was made public in 1970AD, non-government investigators began questioning the Commission's findings claiming that the Zapruder footage proves that the second shot that hit Kennedy came from the Grassy Knoll position and not from the Depository. It was that belief that led to the creation of the Second Gunman theory and, due to Oswald being a communist and his political activism he did on behalf of Castro, Castro and the Communists getting accused of being involved in the assassination of JFK.**

**That's the critical aspect of the Kennedy assassination that fuelled the Second Gunman theory, led to the Castro connection, and made many people—recall that Director Oliver Stone, in his movie, JFK, supported the Second Gunman theory—conclude that the Commission was deceiving the public by covering up the fact that the second shot that hit the president came from the Grassy Knoll. So to better understand the Second Gunman theory for myself, I also studied the Zapruder footage and made a schematic that you can view below, and made a video called THE JFK ASSASSINATION—ANALYSIS AND CONCLUSIONS, to better explain the results of my study to you. Before viewing the schematic, I'll give you the results of my study. Before I begin, the method I used to make my calculations were this: I watched to see if there were any changes in Kennedy's head motion from the first shot that hit, to the second shot that hit. The logic being, if shot from the same position the head's motion would be very similar if, that is, the road, the car, and Kennedy's head were continuously moving in the same direction, which they were, and I also included the cardinal points to help with orientation: (1) after studying Kennedy's head motion after the first shot hit him—the Commission states “rear of the neck”—I concluded that the trajectory of the bullet, which is defined by Kennedy's head motion after being shot if nothing impedes that motion and nothing did, aligns precisely with the Book Depository and**

the SE window that the Commission claims the shots came from. So the Commission was correct on the first shot; (2) after studying Kennedy's head motion after the second shot hit him, I concluded that the trajectory of the bullet didn't even come close to fitting the same pattern as the first shot that the Commission claims was fired from the Depository, but instead, hear this, actually aligns with the Grassy Knoll position which is a colossal 145 or so degrees short of the Depository! In other words, if all shots came from the Book Depository as the Commission claims, then why did Kennedy's head, after the second shot hit him, not move southwards as it did with the first shot, but instead move northeastwards? So the Commission was in error or lied—and it was an impossible shot; it was Stone's Magic Bullet, and you can see the problem in the schematic I made and inserted below.



*Crime scene*

It was due to Kennedy's head and body motion after he had been shot, that made it easy for people, including myself, to see the deception or error. So I conclude that the Commission deceived the public or was in error; there was a second gunman and the second shot did come from the Grassy Knoll, or very close and to the right, or SW, of where Abraham Zapruder himself was standing as he filmed Kennedy's motorcade and assassination.

To reiterate: (a) after the first shot hit, the president moved slightly forward but remained straight before slightly

slumping to the right or eastsouth, which means the bullet came from the Depository; (b) after the second shot hit, the president moved in an eastnortherly direction, or back and to the right, which means the bullet came from the Grassy Knoll.

So the evidence supports a second gunman firing from a secondary position or the Grassy Knoll, which means Oswald “was” part of a well-organised communist assassination team, and people only noticed that the second shot came from the Grassy Knoll and the Commission lied or was in error after the Zapruder film was made available to the public, which, recall, was first shown on television in the U.S. in 1970AD. But although many believed that the Commission lied, the U.S. Government still maintains that Oswald shot the president, he was acting alone, and the 3 bullets found in the Depository have been accounted for; 2 hit the president; 1 may have hit Governor Connally or it may have been the same bullet that hit Kennedy that hit Connally. So, moving on, why would the Commission state that Oswald was a “lonewolf loner” communist instead of being part of a well-organised communist assassination team and deny that the second shot came from the depository? Simple, to protect “Castro” from a fatal U.S. backlash should a connection be made between Oswald, who was involved in political activism on behalf of Castro, the Communists, and Cuba, and a communist assassination “team” that could lead back to Castro who, recall, due to the CIA-backed BOP invasion of Cuba in 1961AD, and JFK’s pursuit of him, had the clearest motive, excluding some others that I will get to later, for killing Kennedy. Oswald also had a strong motive for killing Kennedy, of course, which was, not only would Marxist Oswald view Kennedy as a capitalist enemy of the people, due to Kennedy being a millionaire, but he would also hate Kennedy due to Kennedy attempting to remove Castro from power in 1961AD. As for why the U.S. elites would want to protect Castro, what about this: Castro was one of the Eurasian elites and an important part in their international network!

Outwith Castro and Oswald both having very strong motives for killing President Kennedy and plotting against



him, did anyone else have a motive for killing the president, and is there any evidence that points to anyone else plotting against him?

Yes, I know that Cooper—the ex-Naval Intelligence officer, claimed that he read Eyes Only files that asserted that the Office of Naval Intelligence organised the assassination of President Kennedy, and the Secret Service were also in on it!

I've answered the question was Oswald guilty and why did the Commission lie about there being a second gunman which would prove Lee H. Oswald was part of an organised communist assassination team. The last question to answer, then, is

(6) What were the motives for the American elites sanctioning the assassination of President Kennedy?

I have four good motives:

(1) first motive; Kennedy's war on the Communists and Castro: Due to the U.S. Government's declaration of war on Communism just after the end of WWII that was witnessed through the Truman Doctrine—the Truman Doctrine was a foreign policy made by the U.S. Government, that pledged to assist any nation threatened by Communism, or Soviet expansion, due to, I suppose, Communism's non-free market planned economies, police states, and one party state that ends the American Dream—Kennedy, and similar to the public, had been taught to view Communism and the Communists as the biggest threat to western democracy—western democracy is sold as a free market, free press, multiple party system—so that's why he became an ardent anti-communist and believed most Americans supported him when he sanctioned the CIA to remove Castro from power that ended in the failed BOP invasion in 1961AD and with Krutschev moving to protect Castro that ended in the CMC in 1962AD.

Going after Castro was a big mistake for President JFK, and the failed BOP invasion and Castro remaining in power really should have taught him a lesson; that President

**Kennedy perhaps couldn't understand why “superpower America” and the best intelligence organisation on the planet; the CIA, failed to beat Castro. But, although he must have known how dangerous the situation was for him, he moved forward with his revolutionary reforms that would later cost him his life. To Kennedy, the invasion of Cuba to remove Castro from power, was a genuine military expedition justified by the Truman Doctrine. To the CIA, it wasn't about removing Castro from power at all because Castro, recall, was part of the global Eurasian network, it was merely to expose Castro's enemies so they could help him eliminate them; which did happen, hear this for good results for Castro and the Communists after the failed BOP invasion in 1961AD, Castro hunted down and eliminated all CIA-backed anti-communist revolutionaries that made up the doomed BOP invasion force! The CIA's fake war to remove Castro from power, also kept up the illusion that the Cold War was in fact real, which was also important.**

**So Kennedy was against the Communists and he failed to bring down Castro in 1961AD. But it looks like the elites required a rushed stratagem to protect Castro from Kennedy, which means they may have feared Kennedy would continue pursuing Castro, because, shortly after the failed BOP invasion, they ordered First Secretary Nikita Khrushchev—the Soviet who had made an alliance with Castro shortly after the failed BOP invasion, to deploy nuclear weapons into Cuba and direct them at America, which brought about the CMC in 1962AD. Castro was saved by the Khrushchev manoeuvre that most of the public must have viewed as merely Cold War conflict, or conflict between the East and West, or Communism versus Capitalism, but Kennedy was now playing a very dangerous game, indeed, by further moving against Castro and also because of the other reformist things he was doing that you can read about shortly.**

**In conclusion: (a) the BOP invasion of Cuba in 1961AD, that ended in failure, was to expose and destroy Castro's enemies. It was not to remove Castro from power; (b) the CMC in 1962AD, was to preclude Kennedy from interfering in Castro's affairs in Cuba, because Castro was part of the Eurasian network that had won control over most nations in South America due to the Spanish Empire,**

and it also served to keep up the illusion of Cold War conflict;

(2) second motive; Kennedy could not be corrupted: Kennedy rejected the Operation Northwood plan that was made by the U.S. Joint Chief of Staff's (JCS), to carry out “false flag” attacks in America. Hear this, the Northwood plan was to “bomb and shoot US citizens” so they could blame Castro and justify a war against him in Cuba. If Kennedy agreed, however, or the war on Castro went ahead, then it must have been only to expose Castro's enemies rather than to remove him from power.

(3) third motive; Kennedy was ending corruption in the U.S. System: Kennedy's speech on world peace on June 10, 1963AD, surely must have caused great concern to the elites, because, hear this, now the president was warning the world that secret groups were covering up mistakes within the System, which means Kennedy—the troublesome and fearless revolutionary reformer, may have been about to embark on a dangerous mission to clean up corruption, or “organised crime”, in the U.S. System. He also stated he would “shatter the CIA into a thousand pieces”. It was much worse than that, however, because, if left unchecked, with a mere stroke of his Presidential Pen, Kennedy could now inflict serious damage on their secret networks and groups, with his Executive Orders!

(4) fourth motive; Kennedy was opposed to sending combat troops to Vietnam which would wreck the bankers' profits. The following will show that the elites wanted a war in South Vietnam, and Kennedy's anti-war position would wreck the bankers' profits: (1) Just 15 months after President Kennedy was shot and killed, hear this, President Lyndon B. Johnson, who, recall, became the U.S. President after President Kennedy was assassinated, deployed the very first combat troops into Vietnam, which occurred on March 8, 1965AD; (2) U.S. Secretary of Defense McNamara stated “that Kennedy was strongly considering pulling the United States out of Vietnam after the 1964AD election.” In case you're confused, only U.S. Special Forces and U.S. advisors were operating in South Vietnam during JFK's presidency;



**(3) JFK signed a National Security Action Memorandum (NSAM-263), that “ordered the withdrawal” of most of the U.S. forces by 1965AD; (4) the bankers stood to make huge profits from a war between the U.S. and South Vietnam, so Kennedy's anti-war posturings really must have rattled their cage. The bankers' profit comes about like this: the U.S. Government borrows money to pay for the (10-year) Vietnam war, from the bankers, or the Federal Reserve—America's top “private bank”, which has as “interest” attached to it, which is typically very high (usury), and that interest is paid by the tax-payers indirectly to the private bankers which they keep for themselves, which means war is very profitable for the bankers, and is why many believe that the private bankers and the rest of the elites support wars.**

**So JFK was against total war in Vietnam, and the Vietnam War suspiciously began in near earnest after his assassination, and the bankers stood to benefit the most from the war, which adds weight that the bankers had the greatest motive for getting rid of Kennedy. But being against the war didn't at all mean he was just for leaving the South Vietnamese people to the mercy of the Communists; he merely supported the deployment of advisers and special forces; it appears he didn't like the idea of sending American youth to fight and die in a foreign war just to prove to the people how idealistic and kind he was. So it appears Kennedy was a fair man who tried his best to save his own while, at the same time, trying to save others.**

**To conclude on The Cold War, Oswald, and JFK: It looks like Kennedy was also mixed race. But was he killed due to race wars and him attempting to break up the Eurasian network that controls the U.S., or due to him being a good guy leader and his war on Communism, the BOP invasion to remove Castro from power, his refusal to authorise the Northwood plan, which meant the president could not be corrupted, his warning about mass corruption in the U.S. System, given at the peace conference in 1963AD, and his intention to withdraw U.S. forces from Vietnam, as testified to by Defense Secretary McNamara, which would wreck the bankers' profits? I think he was assassinated due to all of that.**

**I found there was a lack of quality information on Oswald for me to fully judge his character by, or to really get to know him through. Therefore, mostly speculating, here are my best assumptions on him: He was a serious and idealistic young man but not all together bad and he was more a class soldier rather than a common criminal. Oswald didn't have such the unsettled childhood that's been made out to be; for instance, although his mother did place him in an orphanage with his brother and half-brother, he went in age 3, came out age 4, so not such a big deal, and the reason they were in there wasn't due to them being dysfunctional kids; it was apparently due to his mother having to work. So, Oswald's apparent troublesome childhood aside, it must have been due to his “idealism” that turned him into the aggressive communist he eventually became, and that turning began just after he left school age 17, which was when he began to study Communism, considered joining the American Communist Party, and even wrote to the Socialist Party of America telling them how much he admires Marxism, and after the Capitalists had attempted to violently remove Castro—a man he greatly admired, from power with the BOP invasion in 1961AD, that led to the CMC in 1962AD. Oswald wasn't such the bad guy he's been made out to be; for instance, (1) although it's claimed he attempted to kill his former major when he was in the U.S. marines, and he tried to kill himself when he was living in the former Soviet Union, the evidence for that doesn't appear very reliable and really needs clarifying, and, truth be told, he really just wanted to change the world for the better, is why he became a Marxist, which also meant he rejected the capitalist system that keeps millions of people in constant poverty and reliant on welfare; (2) when the Commission stated to the public that Oswald's workmates in the Book Depository called him a “loner”, it really seems suspicious because how many loners become activists for socialist causes, relocate to the Soviet Union due to their idealism, and take a Soviet wife? Not many, and he seems more like a low-level socialite rather than a loner. What the Commission should have said and is either indicative of their bad reading of the situation or the Commission trying to make him look bad but also of Oswald's obvious guilt in the assassination of JFK, was that “Oswald was only acting**

like a loner, while working in the Depository, because he was plotting to assassinate the president, and was shutting himself off, from his fellow workmates during that intense period because it required his full attention”. So the Commission really missed a valuable piece of evidence that would have played badly on Oswald if it was required.

Therefore, just like President Kennedy, it was Lee's “idealism” that sealed his fate, cost him half his life, and made him an ideal patsy to be used and abused by Secret Service agents, in disguise as Communists, to kill President Kennedy before they kill him in order to keep him from exposing the “team” he was working with, which, given time and had he lived, he may very well have done, which means, due to the U.S. backlash due to Castro, face value, having the clearest motive for assassinating JFK, the elites may be forced to go after Castro, which means Castro—their man in Cuba, may fall.

Face value, from Lee's perspective, not many people would kill a good guy president who was warning the people about corruption in the U.S. System and doing what he could to honour the Truman Doctrine without forcing young Americans onto the battlefield to die, outwith a confused or brainwashed person, and Kennedy really should have been much more careful after going after Castro and the Communists. Therefore, finding and guiding a young political, Marxist, warrior like Oswald, who, similar to the political elites, will use violence to achieve his political objectives, to rid them of their big enemy; the President Kennedy, was truly a gift from the gods or really fine programming by the Eurasian elites. The elites fail to produce many at Oswald's level through their divisive Communism or Nationalism programmes; individualism, fear, and just unskilled people, I suppose, precludes that being produced in most of them, so Oswald was one of a kind and the sort they forever seek either to use him to kill their enemies, or kill him before he kills them.

Incidentally, what had occurred with Oswald wasn't so different from what had occurred with Timothy McVeigh—the young American who bombed the Alfred P. Murray building on April 19, 1995AD, in retaliation for government agents killing American citizens at Ruby Ridge and WACO

**—see note 12 and note 13—and I also suspect that government agents, this time in disguise as U.S. Patriots, coerced McVeigh into their bomb team then, after the event, grabbed him as the suspect. So, just like Oswald, McVeigh was also the sort they forever seek either to use or to kill.**

## **SIEGE AT RUBY RIDGE**

**Note 12.** To include all the Ruby Ridge testimonies in this segment would swamp the book, so you can read them at the following links. You can also read Kevin Harris's critical testimony below.

### **TESTIMONIES AND THE DOJ REPORT**

<http://law2.umkc.edu/faculty/projects/ftrials/weaver/harristestimony.html>

<http://law2.umkc.edu/faculty/projects/ftrials/weaver/marshaltestimony.html>

<http://www.rkba.org/federal/doj/ruby-ridge.report.txt>

**The following is my own study and conclusions into the Ruby Ridge incident and it is based on the DOJ Report, the Senate Enquiry, and the testimonies of U.S. Marshals Larry Cooper and Arthur Roderick, and U.S. citizens Kevin Harris and Randy Weaver.**

**Randy was raised on a farm in Iowa in the U.S. He left for college but dropped out to join the U.S. Army, which he did in October 1968AD, to, just like President Kennedy and Bill Cooper, do his duty in the Vietnam War. Randy missed being sent to the war, for whatever reasons, but he met Victoria Jordison (Vicki) and they married in 1971AD.**

**Similar to many of the American peoples, the Weavers believed that the political elites are conspiring against the people; collapsing their cities and bringing in a NWO, so they moved to Ruby Ridge in 1983AD to build a home and escape the chaos, and, later, Randy campaigned to become the sheriff in 1985AD receiving 1/4th of the vote. So Randy was a cut above, a leader of men, and a potential threat to the establishment.**





Due to the System's war against the peoples, or using non-Whites against the Whites to steal away White jobs, incite them against each other, speed up the collapse, and bring about chaos to bring in a police state and a NWO, Randy, naturally enough, became perhaps somewhat tribal and attended 3 or 4 Aryan Nations meetings. It was at one of those meetings in 1989AD that Guss Magisono—a spy for the Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms, or the (B)ATF, framed and entrapped Randy. Guss Magisono, real name Fadeley, had been arrested previously by the ATF for gunrunning, and, in exchange for dropping the gun-charge, became an undercover informant. What the ATF's spy did, he asked Randy to get him some weapons, and a short while later, on October 24, 1989AD, Randy sold Fadely 2 sawed-off shotguns for \$300. Because it's illegal to cut the gun-

barrels down too short, or sell shotguns with the barrels cut down too short, the ATF arrested Randy but Randy denied the charge. On June 12, 1990AD, ATF Agent Herb Byerly—the spy's handler, used the gun-charge (barrels too short) to bribe or blackmail Randy. What Byerly would do, he told Randy that he would drop the gun-charge if, like Fadely, he spies on the Aryan Nations for the ATF. Randy told Byerly to go to Hell, and, with that, Byerly submitted a charge against him to the U.S. Attorney in June 1990AD. After his encounter with Byerly, Randy warned the Aryan Nation's about the ATF trying to infiltrate their organisation.

On December 13, 1990AD, Randy was charged for possessing illegal firearms, and around 1 month later, on January 17, 1991AD, ATF agents, in disguise as brokendown motorists on the Ruby Creek Bridge near Randy's cabin, arrested Randy after he stopped to help them. On arrest, Randy was told about the gun-charges and taken to the Boundary County Jail where next day in court, which was January 18, under U.S. Magistrate Judge Stephen Ayers, Randy pleaded not guilty to the charges, and bail was set at a colossal \$10,000. In court during the proceedings, Judge Ayers told Randy that if he lost the case or is found guilty he will “probably be required to reimburse the government for the cost” of the trial. After court, Randy was released on bail to stand trial at a later date, but went home believing, due to refusing to become a spy for the ATF, he would lose the case therefore his property, and his family would be made homeless.

So Randy was in it up to his neck. But not satisfied with the low-level gun-charges, which Randy was contesting, Byerly, in what seems like his own private war with Randy for undoubtedly failing to be his spy, alleged that Randy was also suspected of being involved in bank robberies and had criminal convictions. Randy knew it was untrue, and later at the Senate Enquiry, held in 1995AD, the truth was told when the Enquiry stated that "Weaver was not a suspect in any bank robberies”, “had no criminal convictions”, and the ATF were “exaggerating”.

There was a mix up in court dates; for instance, the trial was moved from February 19 to 20, 1991AD, and



**Randy got a letter stating his trial was set for March 20, 1991AD. But because they failed to contact Randy and Randy missed the February 20 trial, the ATF issued a bench warrant to arrest him. Due to the mix up, the U.S. marshals, which is the law enforcement arm of the federal court, whose job it is to arrest and bring in fugitives, deactivated the bench warrant until March 20 to see if Randy shows up to court, but Randy failed to appear at court; not because of just being a rebel for a sake of it, but because he feared being framed. He stated: “I said I wanted assurances that my family would be okay, that the property would stay there, and I wanted the ATF to admit they were wrong. I wanted my .22 pistol back, and I wanted the sheriff to apologize for calling me paranoid and dangerous.”**

**Because Randy failed to keep his March 20, 1991AD, court appointment, U.S. marshals, under their “get Randy mission” called Northern Exposure, made many attempts to arrest him over the next year and a half or so, even installing covert surveillance cameras around his cabin to record his activities. But although the marshals were under orders to “not to injure any of the Weavers” a catastrophic and sinister incident would occur in late August 1992AD, which was 17 months after his failure to appear at court. Eager to capture their man after months of frustrations, the marshals had a brainstorm; what they would do, they would lure out the Weavers' dogs—Randy had 3 dogs—and, hoping Randy would follow them or take the bait, arrest Randy for failing to attend court. This is what happened:**

**On August 21, 1992AD, 6 U.S. Marshals left their base on Schweitzer Mountain at around 2,30 am in a van and a jeep and drove to the home of Bruce Whittaker, the sheriff of Boundary County. Once at the sheriff's house, they left the van and, in the jeep, drove to the Rau house, which is north of Randy's cabin, arriving around 4,30 am. From the Rau house, the 6 marshals walked up a trail to an area known as the Y where the 6 marshals divided into 2 teams. The first team, made up of David Hunt, Joseph Thomas, and Frank Norris, would be the OP team. They would take the left fork of the Y and continue up to the Observation Post, which is situated around half a mile to three quarters of a mile from the Weaver house and 900ft**



above it on the north ridge. The second team, made up of Art Roderick, Larry Cooper, and William Degan, would be the Reconnaissance Team. They would take the right fork of the Y and make their way up towards the Weaver cabin.

Once the teams were in position, the second team began throwing rocks at the house to get the dogs and Randy to follow them.

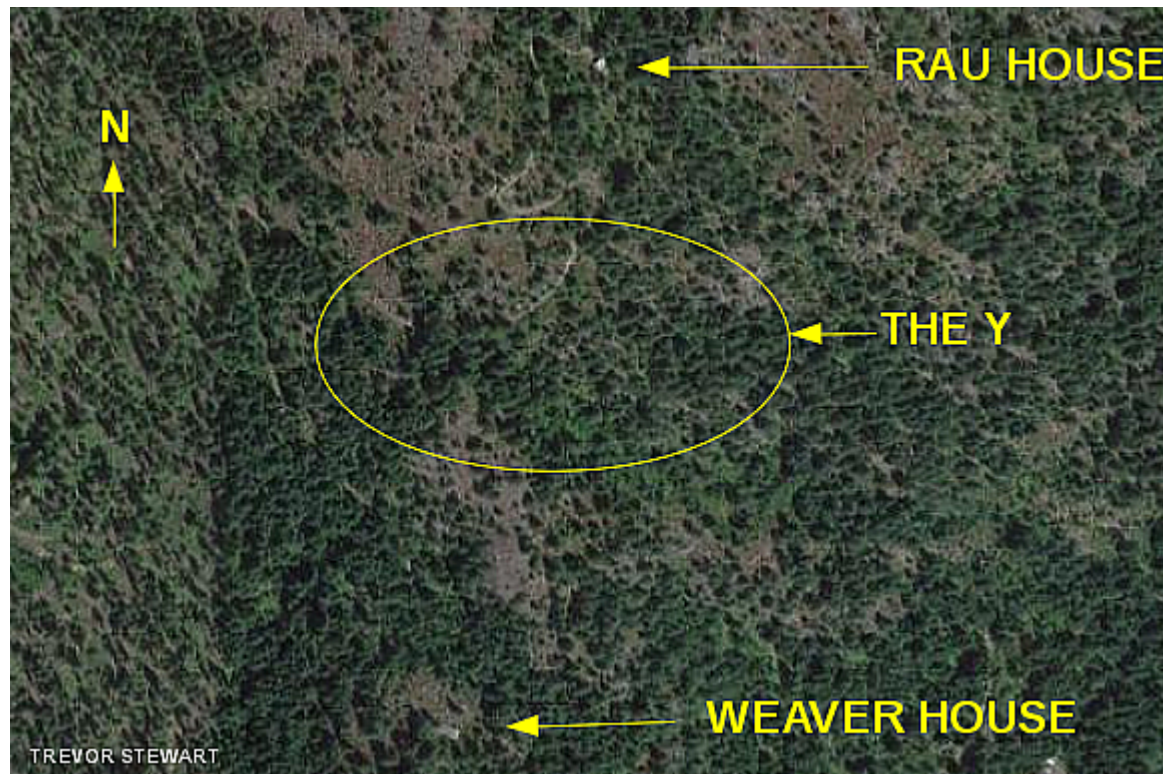
It was the Striker, the big yellow labrador, who heard the rocks first and began barking which warned Randy, 44, Sammy, 14, and Kevin, 23, who came out to investigate. But by the time they got outside and made their way to the rocks outside the house, Striker had gone down the hill, near to the lower garden, and was barking up into the woods. At this time, or once the bait was taken, Roderick, Cooper, and Degan fellback and took up concealed positions amongst the trees and scrub, and there they waited to ambush and capture Randy.

Randy, Sammy, and Kevin, thinking that Striker had picked up the scent of a mountain lion, a bear, a game animal, or something, followed behind Striker as Striker led them forward. A short time later, Randy decided to go down the old logging road and told Sammy and Kevin to follow Striker and to meet him down at the Y—see images below—which is roughly half a kilometre from the main Weaver cabin, north of it, and out of sight of it. As Randy reached the Y, Cooper, who was armed and camouflaged and wore no visible U.S. Marshal markings, emerged from the trees and scrub and shouted freeze, Weaver! Stunned, Randy cursed then turned and moved back up the hill and trail shouting to the boys to “Get home.” “Get home, boys, it's an ambush.”, or words to that effect. But evidently Kevin and Sammy failed to hear Randy's first warnings so continued to follow Striker who, trailing the scent of his prey, was making his way through the woods towards the Y. At the Y and concealed amongst the trees and scrub, it was 10,30 am and it was Cooper who saw the dog and boys first. Cooper decided to let the dog go past his position and to not shoot the dog fearing it may precipitate a firefight. But Roderick, standing out in the clearing and approximately 40ft from Cooper's position, on seeing the dog, suddenly shot Striker in front of the boy Sammy, then retreated into the woods for cover. At the exact same time somewhere up the trail, Randy

heard the shot that got Striker; heard Striker yelp in pain before dying, and again shouted to the boys to get home. At the same time back at the Y, Sammy, who must have been in a state of shock after seeing his dog getting shot and killed, shouted to Roderick, "You shot my dog, you son of a bitch.", and, as brave and heroic as a boy could be, shot back at Roderick for killing Striker. It was only a few rounds that Sammy fired in Roderick's direction, missing him, but Degan shot back at Sammy, hitting him close to the elbow of his right arm to his severe injury, and also hitting the stock of his rifle. On hearing the shootings, Randy, and not sure what to do, fired more shots in the air, yelling again for the boys to get home, then, on hearing Sammy shout "I'm coming, dad", started to move back up the trail to the cabin. Back at the Y, after firing a couple of shots at Roderick for shooting his dog without clear motive, and after being shot in the arm and seriously injured by Degan, Sammy turned to run and this was when Cooper, who insists it must have been an accident, shot him in the back and Sammy died at the Y. Kevin, who witnessed the exchange of shots and feeling in danger due to Cooper shooting two 3-round bursts at him, shot in the direction of the agents who were shooting at Sammy, hitting and killing Degan. After the exchange, Kevin checked Sammy; Sammy was dead, then moved back to the house to alert the family. Around the same time, the OP team made their way to the Y, and, while Cooper, Roderick, and medic Norris remained with Degan who had died, Hunt and Thomas from the OP team, made it to the Rau house to call for assistance. The DOJ Report states:

“Following the shooting at the Y, Deputy Marshal David Hunt, who was familiar with the terrain of the mountain, and Deputy Marshal Joseph Thomas left, at approximately 10:45 a.m. to get aid. They headed through the woods to the Rau house [FN446] where they arrived approximately 40 minutes later. Hunt immediately placed a "911" call for assistance which was received by the Boundary County Sheriff's Office, Bonners Ferry, Idaho, at 11:20 a.m. Hunt told the dispatcher: I have an emergency situation on my hands..... I got one officer dead. I got (inaudible) pinned down. I need help quick.....I want the

**State Police, I want all the help that I can get. I gotta go back in for more officers that are trapped. [FN447]”**



**Before continuing, the following is my own 4 extracts from Cooper and Roderick's testimonies that were given at the U.S. Senate Enquiry in 1995AD. You can read the full testimonies at the above links or here:**

[Senate Judiciary Committee Testimony: The U.S. Marshals \(Sept. 15, 1995\).html](http://law2.umkc.edu/faculty/projects/ftrials/weaver/marshaltestimony.html)  
<http://law2.umkc.edu/faculty/projects/ftrials/weaver/marshaltestimony.html>

**I will give my opinion first, then give the witness testimony.**

**Author. 1. The marshals want the public to believe that, although Degan had his weapon pointed at Kevin Harris with Cooper watching, Kevin, who had done nothing wrong and, according to Cooper, had his back to Degan, just turned around, acquired his target, and shot Degan with 1 shot. But it's unlikely that happened because surely Degan, an expert soldier, would have shot Kevin as Kevin, who was armed, turned to apparently shoot him, and, further, surely Cooper, who was also an expert soldier and watched the event, and surely must also have had his weapon aimed at Kevin who, recall, was armed, could easily have shot Kevin as Kevin was apparently turning to shoot at Degan. Cooper didn't do that; of course, he stated he shot at Kevin after Marshal Degan was shot. Further, it was shown**

that Degan fired a total of 7 shots during the incident, and 1 of them hit Sammy in the elbow or close to the elbow, which Cooper, in his testimony, failed to account for. Cooper stated:

Witness. 1. “The events I will describe next are etched in my mind, and I am certain of what I saw. As Kevin Harris and Samuel Weaver moved past Deputy Degan's position, Samuel Weaver was a step or two ahead of Kevin Harris. When Kevin Harris reached a point about 10 feet in front of Deputy Degan's position, Deputy Degan called out, "Stop. U.S. Marshals." As I heard Deputy Degan begin to announce, I joined in, but before I finished my words, Kevin Harris turned, fired from the hip, and shot Deputy Degan. I have a clear mental picture of Kevin Harris firing that first shot at the Y. There is no other aspect of this tragedy about which I am more certain.”

“When Deputy Degan was hit, his body moved to the left in the direction of the stump. I could see Kevin Harris starting to raise his rifle from his hip, so I fired a three-round burst at Kevin Harris. When I fired, Kevin Harris dropped from my sight, so I assumed I had hit him. I turned my rifle in the direction of Samuel Weaver. However, at this moment I heard what sounded like two shots off to my right, down in the direction where I last saw Deputy Roderick. Samuel Weaver reacted to this sound by yelling, "You son of a bitch," and running down the road to my right. I did not fire at Samuel Weaver. Instead, my attention was fixed on Deputy Degan calling to me for help, and the gunfire that began to come into my position from the direction of the right fork of the Y where I had seen Randall Weaver.”

Author. 2. Cooper claimed that the last time he saw Sammy was when he saw him running away. But how could that be true if forensics stated that it was 1 of Cooper's bullets that had killed Sammy? In 1997AD Sheriff Greg Sprungl from Boundary County searched the Y for the bullet that killed Sammy. The bullet they found matched Cooper's gun and also contained fibres that matched Sammy's shirt.

**So, how many people get shot through the heart and run up the road? Cooper stated:**

**Witness. 2. “I believe it was at this point, as gunfire came into my position, that I yelled over the radio to the OP team that Deputy Degan was shot and I needed help. I also knew that I could not get to Deputy Degan while the gunfire was coming into my position. I therefore rose up and fired a second three round burst in the direction of the incoming fire. Even after I rose up to shoot over the rock I was using for cover, my view of the right fork of the Y was obscured by foliage and a tree between the rock and the road. All I could do was direct my three-round burst in the direction of the gunfire. Immediately after I fired my second and final burst, I saw Samuel Weaver through the gaps in the foliage, running in the direction of the right fork of the Y leading up to the Weaver compound. At that point, the incoming fire seemed to shift down to my right, where Deputy Roderick was located. I took this opportunity to move to my left, up to Deputy Degan's position.”**

**Ballistics revealed that 19 rounds were fired during the incident at the Y. Roderick fired one shot from an M16A1; Degan fired seven shots from an M16; Cooper fired six shots from a 9mm Colt submachine gun; Sammy fired three shots from a .223 Ruger Mini-14, and Kevin fired two shots from a .30-06 M1917 Enfield Rifle.**

**Author. 3. The ballistic report also proved that the marshals were either lying or badly mistaken. Roderick stated “I heard the sound of constant gunfire.” But if that's true, then why did Roderick fire only 1 shot throughout the entire shooting event, and fail to engage Kevin and Sammy who were supposedly attacking his colleagues and himself? Roderick stated:**

**Witness. 3. “At this moment I saw the dog stop, look in the direction of the gunfire, and then back toward me. Realizing that we now were in the midst of a potentially deadly encounter, I fired a shot at the dog and I saw the dog fall. I dove into the woods to find cover, and I heard the sound of constant gunfire.”**

**Author. 4. Roderick wants the public to believe that he shot Striker because he believed they were now in the midst of a potentially deadly encounter. But Striker did not attack him or Cooper, and why concentrate so much on the dog Striker, when he should be concentrating on Harris and Sammy who were shooting at his colleagues and himself? Roderick stated:**

**Witness. 4. “As I ran into the "Y", I saw a figure that I soon realized was Randall Weaver. He moved off the right fork of the "Y", the road leading to the Weaver compound, and toward the woods out of my sight. The man was yelling, and I yelled at him several times: "Stop, U.S. Marshals."**

**“I moved sideways, covering with my rifle the area where Randall Weaver had disappeared into the woods. I also watched as the dog came into the "Y" past Degan and Cooper and toward the right fork of the "Y". I heard Degan also yell "Stop. U.S. Marshals." The next thing I heard was the report of a heavy caliber rifle fired from my left where Cooper, Degan, Harris, and Samuel Weaver were. At this moment I saw the dog stop, look in the direction of the gunfire, and then back toward me. Realizing that we now were in the midst of a potentially deadly encounter, I fired a shot at the dog and I saw the dog fall. I dove into the woods to find cover, and I heard the sound of constant gunfire.”**

**The DOJ Report tells it a little different. In it they state “Concerned that the dog would attack or lead Weaver, Harris, and the others toward the marshals if they kept running, Roderick fired once at the dog with his M16 rifle, striking the dog near the base of the spine. [FN377]”**

**Not so much different: The dog did not attack the marshals, and the marshals did not keep running; they halted at the Y. So, again, why shoot the dog? And hadn't the dog already led them to the marshals? Further, if the marshals did keep running and Striker did lead Randy, Kevin, and Sammy to them, which, recall, Striker already had, why would the marshals necessarily believe that their lives would be in danger? What did the marshals think**



**Randy, Kevin, and Sammy would do? Just shoot the marshals then go home hoping no one would mind? That SWAT wouldn't show up and, if they survive the tactical assault, they wouldn't all go the Chair? And for what? Just because Randy missed his court appointment because he believed he would be framed? Further, if Randy was hunting the marshals to kill them, why would he bring along his two sons and, get this, allow Striker to take up point, or lead the way, which would warn the marshals of his attack? So it's unlikely the dog needed to be harmed and Randy, Kevin, and Sammy would try to ambush and kill the marshals. What's more likely, is that the unprovoked shooting of Sammy's dog initiated the incident at the Y. As for Sammy's death, if you were trying to kill someone with a gun, say with their back to you, then through the head or heart would be the perfect shot. And so it was with Sammy; Sammy got it through the back and heart. The marshals said they didn't shoot at Sammy; they said it must have been an accident, but I say it looks deliberate due to the precision of the shot that got him, or it was a 1000/1 shot.**

**Incidentally, before moving on, think about this: how credible is it that small particles of fibres from Sammy's shirt would be found on the bullet that killed him after 5 years laying on the ground and through 5 Winters, 5 Summers, and 10 equinoxes? It makes you wonder if U.S. Marshal Cooper was framed because, as well as being difficult to believe that he would deliberately shoot a young boy in the back, he always denied shooting Sammy and, recall, stated that the last time he saw Sammy was when Sammy was "running in the direction of the right fork of the Y leading up to the Weaver compound."**

**Having made it back to the house, Kevin told the family that Sammy and Striker had been shot and killed by the marshals, which caused immense suffering to all. But a short time later, Randy and Vicki went down to the Y to retrieve Sammy's body and, later with help from Kevin, carried his body back home and placed him in the guest house or the Birthing Shed where, only 10 months earlier, Elisheba was born. That night, Kevin was up all night in a state of shock over the occurrence at the Y, the girls cried all**

night, and in the morning no one said so much. But later that same morning, they heard a radio report stating that Kevin had shot and killed a deputy marshal, but no talk of Sammy's death was made.

After the incident at the Y, the marshals reported it to the FBI, telling them all sorts of fabrications to cover themselves, and, later in the courts, get this, it was found that the ATF had lied to the marshals, and the marshals had lied to the FBI. What they did, the ATF and marshals had exaggerated Randy's gun deals; had claimed they were going to kill their kids, is why Hostage Rescue got deployed; had exaggerated Randy's racial beliefs; calling him a White supremacist instead of what Randy, give-or-take, considered, at that time, he was; which was, a White separatist, and the marshals hadn't even informed the FBI that Sammy had died at the Y; they only discovered Sammy's body, which was in the Birthing Shed, on August 24, which was 3 days after his death. They also called the Weavers "skinhead types led by Vicki", and "that the real force behind the Weavers was Vicki Weaver herself.", which came about, no doubt, due to Vicki, standing up for her framed and blackmailed husband, writing a cheeky but accurate letter to U.S. Attorney Maurice Ellsworth, referring to him as the "Servant of the Queen of Babylon" and telling him to leave her family alone. Vicki, using Biblical language to describe the corrupt government and their hand in the collapsing societies, wrote "The stink of your lawless government has reached Heaven, the abode of Yahweh our Yashua, and, whether we live or whether we die, we will not bow to your evil commandments." But there's a couple of versions available, so it's difficult to tell if Vicki even wrote it or wrote it in that way.

Considering all the exaggerations or lies, in the end, the Department of Justice, who wrote the DOJ Report, stated: "The assumptions of federal and some state and local law enforcement personnel about Weaver—that he was a Green Beret, that he would shoot on sight anyone who attempted to arrest him, that he had collected certain types of arms, that he had "booby-trapped" and tunnelled his property—exaggerated the threat he posed."



**Due to the incident at the Y, or the FBI just taken the marshals' word for the occurrence at the Y, the FBI went into war-mode; calling in Hostage Rescue, the National Guard, armoured personnel carriers or APCs, military choppers, and sent hundreds of agents and many snipers to surround Randy's house and property. One of the FBI commanders even changed the Rules of Engagement or ROEs, but under very sinister circumstances. What he did, on August 22, which was the morning after Sammy and Degan had been killed at the Y, Hostage Rescue Team or HRT Commander Richard Rogers asked his bosses to approve his new ROEs. The FBI's standard ROEs state that their agents are only permitted to use deadly force if they or another agent is in danger. But now Rogers was asking if he could change the ROEs to eliminate any adult male carrying weapons without negotiating their surrender or informing the suspects. It was a radical and sinister change, and so radical that Rogers's new ROE proposals were rejected by his bosses. Here's the new ROEs he submitted:**

**“If any adult male is observed with a weapon prior to the announcement, deadly force can and should be employed, if the shot can be taken without endangering any children. If any adult in the compound is observed with a weapon after the surrender announcement is made, and is not attempting to surrender, deadly force can and should be employed to neutralize the individual. If compromised by any animal, particularly the dogs, that animal should be eliminated. Any subjects other than Randall Weaver, Vicki Weaver, Kevin Harris, presenting threats of death or grievous bodily harm, the FBI rules of deadly force are in effect. Deadly force can be utilized to prevent the death or grievous bodily injury to oneself or that of another.”**

**So you know, Roger's was asking permission to shoot dead Randy and Kevin, the witnesses to the incident at the Y, without warning them to surrender, if they are armed.**

**Rogers's bosses, in FBI headquarters, rejected his ROE changes because “a negotiating plan [to surrender] was not included.” But, hear this, Larry Potts—assistant director of the FBI's criminal division, told Eugene Glenn—**

**Ruby Ridge field commander, that the new ROEs had been approved by FBI headquarters, and, with that, although receiving non-written authority, Glenn went on to brief his men on the new ROEs.**

**There was much controversy over the ROE changes; were they authorised or not, and the DOJ Report gave a Greek Salad explanation. But, regardless to that, the 9 HRT sniper/observers VIEWED THE CHANGES AS A SHOOT TO KILL ORDER WITHOUT FIRST WARNING THE ARMED ADULT MALES OR RANDY AND KEVIN. The important point to remember here is, while the changes to the ROEs are important; that is, were they authorised or not, the changes came about due to Marshal Degan being killed at the Y, and the FBI just accepting the marshals' word for the occurrence at the Y. On that controversy concerning the ROE change, the DOJ Report stated:**

**“It is our conclusion that Rogers justifiably believed that the Rules of Engagement provided to help the HRT and SOG personnel were fully authorized. On the trip to Idaho, Rogers had received oral authorization for the use of special Rules from Potts and Coulson. [FN709] Finally, before the snipers were briefed on the Rules and deployed, Rogers secured Glenn's acknowledgement that FBI Headquarters had approved the final version of the Rules.”**

**So, get this, the authorisation was supposedly “oral”; it was not “written”, which means the FBI may be lying. To explain how dangerous “non-written authorisation” is, what may happen if an agent deliberately or in error shoots a suspect not inkeeping with the FBI’s standard ROEs and without “written authorisation” to change them? You got it, to protect the agent from prosecution, or to cover up the crime or error, his commanders can just claim they gave their agent “oral authorisation”. Therefore it is a system open to abuse.**

**In addition, regarding whether or not the FBI entered into negotiations with Randy and party after the incident at the Y but before Vicki was killed, it looks like they had not. On that, Randy, in his Senate Enquiry testimony, stated:**

**“That first afternoon or that morning after Sam had been killed, we heard enough sirens in the valley. It sounded like every patrol car in the State had pulled into the valley, and we knew there was a lot of people around. But even after what had happened to Sam, the next day I still had the faith, believe it or not, that I could walk out of that house and somebody would talk to me. If I did not believe that, I would not have gone out, let alone let my daughter go out with me or Kevin. When the dog started making the noises and I said I am going to go check and see what the dogs are barking at, there was apparently somebody there, and I figured they would want to talk to us. But they did not. They just shot at us.”**

**So the FBI had surrounded the Weaver property and their new, but probably non-authorised; due to them not being written, which is critical to preclude illegal conduct, ROEs gave their snipers the "green light" to shoot on sight, “without warning”, any “armed adult males”. But had all the snipers, as most presumably had, figured out that their target was just a U.S. family and not a terrorist cell tracked back to the cabin after some failed operation, and refused their orders by not shooting their suspects unless actually threatened, which is the standard ROEs, then what would shortly unfold would have been avoided.**

**In the house, at this time, was Randy, Vicki, Kevin, Sara 16, Rachel 10, and 10 months old Elisheba, and, although it was just a family with the patriarch missing his court appointment due to fearing being framed, one of the FBI snipers, Lon Horiuchi, was showing no wisdom because, although Sammy, Striker, and Degan were killed on August 21 under disputed circumstances and the snipers were just taken their bosses word for what had occurred at the Y, which is a concern to the public, Horiuchi, whose life was never threatened, actually shot and killed Vicki at 6pm on August 22 as Vicki was holding her baby. Although on August 22 the new ROEs gave the FBI snipers the go to kill only “armed adult males” thereby excluding Vicki and the girls unless the FBI/HRT snipers feel threatened, and Vicki was not holding any guns only her baby, she was, nevertheless, shot and killed. This is what happened:**

**Randy, Kevin, and Sarah came out of the main-house to tend to the 2 dogs—Randy had 3 protector dogs to warn the family of approaching wild animals and such things, but Striker, recall, was killed at the Y—get some batteries, and say their final goodbyes to Sammy who they had previously placed in the Birthing Shed next to the main-house, after his death. But as they did so, the FBI/HRT Sierra Four (S4) sniper team, only 200 yards away to the north, had them in their sights. Incidentally, Randy and Kevin were armed, so evidently the FBI hadn't warned them about their new shoot to kill policy, which also means that those who changed the ROEs presumably wanted them, it's reasonable to assume, due to them being “witnesses” to the incident at the Y.**

**With his back to the S4 snipers, as Randy reached up to open the latch that opens the Birthing Shed door, S4 sniper Horiuchi, who was situated above and to the north of the main-house, with Randy in his crosshairs, fired a single shot hitting Randy on the back of his upper-arm. Shocked, Randy, Sarah, and Kevin ran back to the main-house to take cover, as the snipers followed them in their sights. At the front of the house on the porch that faces northwest, as Vicki was holding the door open for Randy, Sarah, and Kevin to escape through, Horiuchi fired a second shot but this time hitting Vicki who was holding her baby, and the bullet also hit Kevin. Randy stated: “The bullet went through Vicki's head and killed her, and the same bullet went into Kevin's left arm and tore it up real bad, then it split up and the main bullet kept going in and lodged about an inch from his heart.” Concerning Vicki's injuries, the DOJ Report states: “The bullet entered the right side of Weaver's face, severing her carteroid artery and vein and causing a massive, instantaneous loss of blood, resulting in death. The clothing Weaver was wearing when her body was recovered was saturated in blood.” Autopsy report of George Lindholm, August 31, 1992.**

**One sniper, Horiuchi, shot Randy in the back of his upper-arm, Vicki in the side of her face, and Kevin received serious wounds from the same bullet that hit Vicki. For whatever reasons, the rest of the snipers did not shoot; but it may have been due to their lives not being threatened and not trusting the new ROEs. With Randy wounded, Vicki**

dead on the floor, and Kevin almost dead on the floor, they all now believed, including the kids, that the FBI snipers would kill them all.

Horiuchi made many claims over the shooting of Randy, Kevin, and Vicki, but, all-in-all, it seems Horiuchi shot them to protect the FBI/HRT helicopter that, he claims, Randy or Kevin were attempting to shoot at. At the trial that followed, however, the FBI/HRT helicopter pilot—Agent Frank Costanza, testified that he was nowhere near the Weaver cabin when sniper-Horiuchi shot and wounded Randy and Kevin and killed Vicki on August 22, 1992, so, get this, the judge threw out Horiuchi's justification!

Was Horiuchi lying or mistaken?

Horiuchi claimed he witnessed a helicopter take off; it was behind him or behind him and to the right when the target, that turned out to be Randy, was threatening it, and his target was in front of him. What that means, if the target was threatening the helicopter with his weapon, they would be facing towards the helicopter, which is behind Horiuchi, and towards sniper-Horiuchi, which means the shot that hit Randy should have hit him in the front not the back of the arm. The shot, recall, hit Randy in the back of his upper-arm not the front, and that is inconsistent with Horiuchi's testimony and Randy's injury received, therefore it looks like Horiuchi either lied to the court or was seriously mistaken. Further, in the DOJ Report, Horiuchi claimed that Randy, who was the target and person he first shot at for menacing the helicopter, was the target he tracked in his sights running back to the cabin after he first shot him for menacing the helicopter. But how can that be true if the person he in fact tracked back to the cabin and shot was Kevin! Horiuchi stated:

“I believed he was the same individual that had attempted to shoot at the helicopter, and therefore, I assumed that he was moving back to the house to get a more protected location inside the house and I didn't want him back in the house knowing that the children were inside the house, that would have been my last opportunity to shoot

him before he got into the house because I probably would not have shot at anyone inside the house for fear of shooting the children....[H]e would have been more protected inside the house and he could have shot at either me or my fellow agents or the helicopter still flying around at that location, probably knowing that we couldn't shoot back in there without harming some of the children. [FN679]”

As for Vicki, sniper-Horiuchi stated that he shot her “accidentally” as she was holding the door open for Randy, Sara, and Kevin to escape through after he had shot Randy, but it was Kevin he was aiming at or leading; that is, he had his crosshairs slightly ahead of Kevin so, when he shot, Kevin would move into the fired bullet as Kevin ran through the door. But how accurate is that and what does the physical evidence show? First, it clearly states in the DOJ Report that “The cross hairs of the rifle's scope were on the edge of the door or just on the wood portion of the door. [FN681] The door was fully open and Horiuchi could see the entire front face of the door except for the bottom portion. [FN682]” But how can that be true if Horiuchi shot through the lower-right glass pane? See image below. Second, because there's no bullet-hole in the door-curtain, which means they must have been fully or mostly opened, how can Horiuchi claim he could not see Vicki; third, the position of the bullet-hole in the glass-pane shows that Vicki was crouched over and down for protection, with her head behind the lower-right glass-pane, and easily visible to Horiuchi; fourth, the shot to the head, which is the ideal place for a sniper to aim for, is strong evidence that sniper-Horiuchi was very likely aiming at Vicki not Kevin.



**After reviewing the evidence, I find that Vicki's death looks suspicious and deliberate. In fact, worse than that, it resembles a “2 with 1 shot”. To explain: Fixing Horiuchi, Vicki, and Kevin's positions through sniper-Horiuchi's gun-sights, Vicki was behind the door and window, Kevin, who sniper Horiuchi claims he was trying to shoot, was behind Vicki, and Horiuchi was in front of Vicki, say, 200 yards (600ft) away in a northerly direction, so that clearly rules out sniper-Horiuchi trying to get 2 with 1 bullet if aimed at Kevin who was behind Vicki to the south, which means sniper-Horiuchi must have been aiming at Vicki, curtains opened, seeing her clearly, and, holding his breath, squeezed the trigger just as Kevin was moving behind Vicki, or spots Kevin moving into his sights, as Kevin was attempting to run through the door into the cabin for safety. Conversely, if it was a catastrophic accident, you must conclude it was a miracle of a shot to be aiming at Kevin but hit Vicki on the side of the face as she was crouching behind the door and glass-panes holding her baby.**

**After the marshal shot and killed Sam on August 21/91, and the S4 sniper shot and killed Vicki and also shot and almost killed Randy and Kevin on August 22/91, the Weaver party were so afraid to leave the relative safety of their home, that so began the 9-day seige at Ruby Ridge.**

Everything went wrong at Ruby Ridge, and the BATF, the U.S. Marshals, and the FBI tried their very best to cover themselves with lie after lie. But not all the FBI agents, all of the time, were believing the fabricators. Hear this, on August 24, which was only 2 days after Vicki was shot and killed, FBI Deputy Assistant Director Danny Coulson, who wasn't told that Vicki had been killed, actually wrote a memo stating:

**“Something to Consider**

- 1. Charge against Weaver is Bull S\_\_\_\_.**
- 2. No one saw Weaver do any shooting.**
- 3. Vicki has no charges against her.**
- 4. Weaver's defense. He ran down the hill to see what the dog was barking at. Some guys in camys shot his dog. Started shooting at him. Killed his son. Harris did the shooting. He is in pretty strong legal position.”**

After Striker, Sammy, Degan, and Vicky had been killed, the FBI went on to deploy psychological warfare measures against Randy, Kevin, and the kids. What they did, they illuminated the house with high-powered lights, they sent in 2 APCs to clear the main-house surroundings, they sent a mobile robot, with a phone and shotgun attached to it, to possibly kill Randy or Kevin if they dared pick up the phone, and, although they were probably aware that Vicki had been seriously injured or killed by FBI sniper Horiuchi—recall, during the trials, Horiuchi stated he heard Vicki scream for 30 seconds, after his second shot, which he assumed was Vicki reacting to Kevin getting shot; however, it can also be interpreted as Vicki getting shot. But, either way, he must have reported it to his commanders, so they must have known—they used a bullhorn to terrorise the Weaver family by, according to Randy and others, saying things like “Good morning, Mrs. Weaver”. “How are you doing this morning?” “How is the baby?” “We had pancakes for breakfast. What did you have?” So the FBI were acting very peculiar, and, later, Randy claimed that Bo Gritz—one of the civilian negotiators, told him that HRT Commander Richard (Dick) Rogers said we had to kill Vicki to stop her killing the kids.



**At the Senate Enquiry, Randy stated:**

**Bo Gritz, when he found out that Vicki had been killed, went to Dick Rogers and asked him, after he had been up talking to us that day—this is just one reason. And he said, "Why did you have to kill Mrs. Weaver?" And Dick Rogers did not say, oh, well, I am sorry, you know, that was a mistake, that was an accident. He said, "We had to take Vicki Weaver out of the equation because we were afraid she would kill her children."**

**In the end, the siege at Ruby Ridge was brought to an end thanks to civilian negotiators not the FBI whom the survivors feared. Bo Gritz talked out Kevin, who was half dead, on August 30, and he was stretchered off to the hospital. The FBI then warned Gritz to talk the rest out as soon as possible or they would end the siege with a "tactical assault". So, in fear of being killed, Randy and his three daughters emerged on August 31.**

**In July 1993AD in the court case that followed, Randy got an 18-month jail sentence for missing his court date and selling 2 sawed-off shotguns to the ATF spy. But, later, due to Randy and his daughters filing a Wrongful Death suit against the federal government for their agents killing Vicki and Sammy, the federal government settled out of court and awarded Randy \$100,000 and his 3 daughters \$1 million each. Kevin also filed a civil suit for damages, and received a \$380,000 settlement from the U.S. Government.**

**Randy Weaver and Kevin Harris were more or less cleared of all charges and were awarded compensation as did the kids who survived the siege at Ruby Ridge. But the brutal killings of innocent U.S. civilians at Ruby Ridge caused serious concern across the educated world, and is correctly viewed as another "wake up" call.**

## **THE SENATE INQUIRY**

<http://law2.umkc.edu/faculty/projects/ftrials/weaver/harristestimony.html>

### **TESTIMONY OF KEVIN HARRIS**

**Mr. HARRIS. “My name is Kevin Harris. I am 28 years old, I live in a small town in Washington State where I work as a welder. I have a 5-year-old son named Jade. I completed the ninth grade in school.**

**I’m not a public speaker or a trained witness, and I am very nervous. My lawyers have told me that there is great risk for me in coming here because people may misunderstand me or because I might misspeak in some damaging way. But someone needs to tell you the truth about what happened at the Y and at Ruby Ridge, and I’m going to do that.**

**I didn’t come here—and I never was at Ruby Ridge—because of religion or politics. I know that a lot of people were offended by Randy’s and Vicki’s beliefs. But I visited the Weavers simply because they were like a family to me. They loved me and I loved them. They always welcomed me, accepted me, and made me feel that I belonged. They were warm and hospitable. There was always a place to sleep and food on the table, even when they didn’t have much for themselves.**

**I met the Weavers when I was 16. I guess I was a troubled kid. My dad died when I was 2, and I was raised by a series of step-fathers. The Weavers permitted me to be part of their family—something which was missing from my life—and I welcomed it. I knew them, and sometimes lived with them, off and on for the next 9 years, until August 1992.**

**I rarely lived with them on a full-time basis. There was one period of about 8 months, beginning in the spring of 1984 right after they had finished their cabin, when I was there continuously. But mostly I came and went. I remember one period of about a year-and-a-half when I didn’t see them at all.**

**I remember going to the cabin in late August or early September 1991. Vicki was pregnant with Elisheba and her mom and dad came to visit. They wanted her to come down off the mountain to be near a hospital, but she refused. They made me promise to stay with the family until the baby was born in case there were problems, I stayed until the day after Elisheba was born, then left for the winter.**

**Sometimes I carried guns when I was at the cabin. I heard later that the marshals watched us with their spy cameras and figured out that I had a gun 66 percent of the time. The Weavers lived off the land. There was a garden, and we hunted whenever game was available. When we killed a deer, Vicki would can the venison. I also felt better having a gun in the woods, for protection from animals like mountain lions, bears, and moose, which are fairly common up there. Many people in Boundry County carry guns as a matter of course. It's not uncommon to see men, even women, carrying guns in the grocery store.**

**We had no idea that the deputy marshals would be in the woods on that Friday. In fact, I really didn't believe that the marshals would come up and try to arrest Randy. I figured that they would just wait him out. I mean, that's what would have made sense. When I learned at the trial that they had come to the cabin on a number of occasions, I was very surprised. Whenever I was at the cabin, I freely went to town, picked up mail, and went to the grocery store, and no law enforcement officer ever stopped me or even questioned me. The only time I was ever contacted by law enforcement officers was the previous August, when a man who identified himself as a marshal called my foster mom in Spokane looking for me. I returned the call. The man told me, "You're probably not going to be able to help me, but I want to ask you something. What kinds of guns does Weaver have, and would he booby-trap his property?" I said, "You're right, I can't help you." He said OK and hung up.**

**I spent a good part of the spring and summer of 1992 at the Weaver cabin. I tried to spend a week every month or so with my son, who lived with his mother in Spokane. I came back to the cabin the weekend before the 21st after one of**

these visits. It was just bad luck that I was even at the cabin that week. I had been promised a job running equipment on a hay farm over at Ephrata, WA. The job was supposed to have begun that Monday, the 17th, but it was delayed a week. And I don't remember exactly why; the hay was wet or something or some equipment had broken down. If not for that, I wouldn't even have been there on the 21st.

Anyway, it was a typical week. I remember that I took the kids, except Elisheba, down to Ruby Creek on Thursday, and we spent the day fishing and swimming. We caught a nice mess of fish, small trout, and took them back and fried them up for dinner. Incidentally—it says here, "Incidentally, we didn't take any guns on that trip." But I believe that I was carrying a sidearm.

August 21, 1992, was a Friday, and Friday was the day which the Weavers kept as the Sabbath. We did no work on that day—just relaxed, read, and visited.

Late in the morning we heard the dogs bark, and we went outside. Striker, the big yellow Lab, frequently barked at squirrels or noises or anything, but this was not that kind of a bark. It was more insistent, as if someone or something were around.

When we got outside to the rocks, Striker had gone on down the hill near the lower garden, and he was barking up into the woods, toward an opening where we had taken down some trees for firewood.

Sam and Randy went down the driveway, and I went down a small path through the rocks. They got to the garden area ahead of me.

By the time I got down there, Striker had come out of the woods and was at the road with Randy and Sam. He wasn't barking any more, but he was still interested in something in the woods.

Striker started trotting down the road toward the tree line, then looking back at us as if he wanted us to follow. It's

open in this area, and just before the dense trees begin, there's an old ski trail up to the right where they used to drag out logs, and Strike stopped there. Up the hill to your right after a few yards, the slope flattens out, and a game trail cuts through.

The dog headed up toward this game trail. I was thinking that an animal might be there since lots of deer come down to raid our garden. We were about out of venison, and we would have been glad to shoot a deer.

Randy and Sam and I all went up to the game trail. Striker seemed to be sniffing something, and I told Randy I was going to follow the game trail. Sam said, "Me, too." Randy said he would go back and head down the other road.

Sam and I started down the game trail—the dog, Sam, and then me. The dog was walking along ahead of us, sniffing and wagging his tail, not running. He was no longer barking. He'd go ahead, then wait for us to catch up. He never got far enough ahead that we had to call him back. After a while, I figured that whatever animal had been there was probably gone.

We came out of the woods above the fern field. I immediately looked up the road thinking I might see the hind end of a deer running away. We didn't see anything, so we turned and walked down to the fern field.

The officers testified that they came out in or below the fern field, so I'm sure that Striker wasn't directly tracking them at that point.

We went through the fern field and down the road to where it connects up with the road up to that cabin, what everybody now called the Y. It's an old logging road, but it's really more of a trail. The trees grow over the top, and it's dark under them, almost like a tunnel. The trail is fairly narrow, and we walked single file. We were just walking along, heading back to the cabin. I was carrying my 30.06 rifle in my right hand, hanging down at my side. Sam was about 10 or 15 feet ahead of me.

**As we got to the Y, I saw Striker run off ahead. Suddenly I saw that he was near a person. The person had camouflage clothing on and seemed to have a beard. He wasn't looking at us. He was looking up in the direction of the road to the cabin, so I saw his profile. He had what looked like a pistol in his right hand.**

**At my trial I learned that the beard I saw was really a camouflage stocking over the marshal's face and that the pistol was the silenced sub-machine gun.**

**Then the dog seemed to lung for the man's hands, the way that Striker did when you play with him. I thought about telling the man, don't worry, the dog won't hurt you, that's how he plays. But I never got the chance.**

**I was still walking forward, and the dog was jumping around the man. The dog then moved away from the man, in a circle, and ended up facing uphill. Suddenly the dog was shot. My impression was that the man near him was the one who shot him, but I can't be sure of that. I watched as the camouflaged man ran into the brush.**

**Sam stopped above the dog. As I came up next to him, he started to raise his weapon and said, "You shot my dog, you son of a bitch."**

**As soon as he started to raise his weapon up, I turned to my right and headed for cover.**

**As I did, I saw smoke puffs and brass shell casing flying in the air down in the woods below the trail. I assumed Sam was shooting and that someone was shooting back at him, but I didn't actually see Sam shoot.**

**In fact, once I turned away from Sam as he raised his gun, I never saw him alive again. I have since learned that his shell casings were found farther up the road, so he probably wasn't shooting at that time.**

**I took two, maybe three steps crouched down, found some cover beside the woods. There were still shots being fired,**

and so I fired once into the brush. I believed that whoever was in the woods was shooting at both Sam and me. I have since learned that there were at least six bullet grates and metal fragments found in the area right behind me, so I'm sure that I was right.

I continued to move further into the woods and came up next to a stump.

Up behind me I heard Sam saying something that made me think he'd been hit. It was something like "Oh, shit!" I'm not sure where he was, but I could tell he was well back behind me. I could also hear Randy yelling that we should come home, and I heard Sam say, "I'm coming, Dad." I also hear Sam say, "C'mon Kevin, Kevin c'mon".

I heard a dull hissing sound like "thhhpp," and right away I heard Sam yelp. It was the kind of sound you'd make if you were slugged in your chest with a fist. I didn't hear anything from Sam after that.

I heard moaning from the woods, and someone saying, "I'm hit, I'm hit." There was someone standing up, leaning over something, probably a person. The person standing up said, "I know, I know." Then this person jumped unto the road and said, "U.S. Marshals! U.S. Marshals!" This was the first time I'd heard anyone identify themselves.

Then another man jumped up on the road and looked up in my direction. I fired my gun about 10 feet to his left. He jumped back into the brush, and I never saw him again.

Obviously, I could have shot and killed either or both of these men.

Then nothing happened for 5 or 10 minutes. I waited, frozen. I didn't hear any shooting or anything that I can recall. Then I heard a vehicle moving down below. It sounded like a rig driving up to the Y. I gathered myself and dove back further into the woods. A branch caught my hat and knocked it off. I ran deeper into the woods, and then turned uphill toward the cabin.

**I ran through the woods alongside the road a ways, and then I saw Sam laying out on the road. I came out on the road above Sam. I put my rifle down on the ground and lifted up my hands, looked down toward the Y and said, "I just want to check on Sam." I walked down to where his body was, in plain view of the men at the Y.**

**Sam was lying face down in the road. He had on blue jeans, a white tee-shirt, a flannel shirt, and a sheepskin vest, with the fuzzy side in. I rolled him over, and there was blood all over his front. His eyes were rolled back in his head, half closed. His lips were turning blue. He wasn't breathing. I felt for a pulse, and there was none. I left him laying on his back.**

**I learned later that Sam's right arm was shot up pretty bad, probably from when he was shot the first time, but I didn't see the arm wound then. I also learned later that the killing shot, the second shot, went right through him, from the back, and pierced his heart.**

**Then I picked up my rifle and headed up the hill figuring that eyes were everywhere in the woods watching me. As I got up closer to the cabin, I heard someone say, 'There's Kevin!' I tried to think of how to tell Vicki and Randy that Sam was dead, and finally I just said it. I sat down and started to cry.**

**They couldn't believe it. They said, Are you sure? I said I was sure, that I had stopped and looked at his body. Randy went kind of berserk. He grabbed his gun and fired it up into the air repeatedly. He screamed and yelled and cursed. Vicki screamed and cried. Then the girls came out, and Vicki told them what had happened.**

**After a while, Vicki and Randy decided that they had to go get Sam's body. I told them where he was, and I tried to talk them out of going down there. I was afraid they'd get shot, too. But they insisted on going. I stayed with the girls. I knew when they found Sam's body because I could hear Vicki wailing and screaming, and Randy, too.**



A while later, I heard Vicki call to me from down by the garden. She said, "Kevin, come down here. we need some help." They had gotten Sam's body to the trees, and then Randy and I got him as far as the pumphouse. Then I picked him up, put him over my shoulder, and carried him to the small cabin we called the birthing shed. I laid him on the bed where Vicki gave birth to Elisheba and left him there with his mother and father.

I understand they took his clothes off; cleaned him up, and wrapped him in a sheet, but I wasn't there for that. After a while, Vicki came out of the shed and came over to me and said, "I've never once wished that that was you and not him." Then she gave me a big hug.

For a long time after Sam was put in the birthing shed, I sat by myself on a rock ledge looking out to the east. Later I went back to the house. The girls cried all night. I assume they didn't sleep. I know I didn't.

The next morning no one talked much. We were in a daze. I remember Vicki cooking something for Elisheba, but I don't recall anyone else eating.

Early in the morning, we heard the other dogs whimpering, and Randy and Sara went out to feed them. We listened to the radio and heard a report that I had shot and killed a deputy U.S. marshal.

We heard sirens in the valley. We figured they would be coming up at some point with bullhorns to demand that we come out. Late in the afternoon, we heard the dog, which was tied on the rock outcropping, whimpering like he might be wrapped up in his chain. Sara wanted to check on him, and Randy wanted to look at Sam. I needed batteries for my flashlight, and I knew there were some in a stash of Sam's personal things that he kept in a box out on the rocks, so I went with them.

Sara checked on the dog, and then followed her dad over to the shed. Suddenly there was a shot. Weaver hollered, "I'm hit, I'm hit!" Sara started pushing him around the edge of

the shed. I went straight back down the driveway. Randy was screaming, "I'm hit, Ma, I'm hit!" Vicki came out of the door, halfway along the rock path, called at us to come in. She went back to the door, opened it, then stood in it, holding it open.

Randy and Sara were ahead of me. I was running until I caught up with them, then I slowed down to their pace. I had my rifle in my left hand. As I started through the door, I heard a loud boom. I was looking at Vicki, at her face. As I heard the shot, it was as if there was something moving under her skin, then her face was deformed, almost seemed to explode.

Next thing I knew I was lying on the floor. When I couldn't feel my left hand, I realized I'd been hit.

Rachel was screaming really bad. I think she's the only one who saw what happened besides me. Randy picked the baby up, and she was all sprayed with blood and tissue. Randy handed her to Rachel, then turned to Vicki, lifted up her head, and said, "Oh, Ma".

Vicki convulsed several times, and then was still. Randy pulled her body into the kitchen. There was a big pool of blood flowing out of her onto the floor. At first I thought it was my blood and for sure I was going to die.

Sara and Randy helped me take my leather coat off. My chest felt all mushy, and there was blood caked everywhere inside my coat and on my shirt.

They'd killed Sam and Vicki and almost killed Randy and me, and we were afraid that if we came outside they'd finish us all off. So we stayed inside.

You've heard from others about the siege. I lay in a chair for 9 days, in and out of consciousness, my wounds beginning to rot and stink. I only got up twice the whole time, to go to the bathroom. Both times I fainted. There were bright search lights at night and always the voice of the negotiators, calling out to talk to Vicki, as if she were still alive.

**I kept hearing on the radio that I was wanted for murder. By then Bo Gritz and Jack McLamb had come up to help out, and we were talking to them. They brought me a paper where the FBI promised that if I went out, they would leave Weaver and the girls alone. I decided to go and went out with Jack McLamb.**

**At the hospital two FBI agents questioned me while I was on a bed, with doctors and nurses working on me. I explained as best I could while the doctors were trying to treat me what had happened at the Y. I was in the hospital for about 2 ½ weeks.**

**After I got out of the hospital, I was taken to Boise and placed in jail, where I was charged in Federal district court with the first degree murder of William Degan. The prosecutors demanded the death penalty. I was amazed by what they said I was guilty of. They threw the book at me: conspiring with the Weaver family to cause an armed confrontation with the Government; assault with a deadly weapon on Roderick, Cooper, and Degan; assault with a deadly weapon on a helicopter; harboring a fugitive—Randy; aiding and abetting the possession of firearms by Randy; and using a firearm to commit these crimes.**

**The trial lasted about 2 months, and the Government called 56 witnesses. After that, we rested our case without calling a single witness. On July 8, 1993, after more than 10 months in custody, the jury found me not guilty of all charges.**

**Since that day at the Y, I have learned that Mr. Roderick and Mr. Cooper claim that we ambushed the marshals, and Mr. Cooper claims that I just wheeled and shot Mr. Degan for no more reason than that he called out to me.**

**I want to say this as clearly as I possibly can so that there is absolutely no mistake in anyone's mind: what Mr. Roderick and Mr. Cooper say is false.**

**I would not have been anywhere near those woods if I had known that all those men with assault rifles and a silenced sub-machine gun, and who knows what other weapons, were**

out there. We were just walking along the trail to the Y, making a perfect target of ourselves.

If I had wanted to shoot someone, I had the perfect opportunity when I saw the man with the dog. He wasn't even looking at me. But I didn't shoot him, because I didn't have any intention of shooting anyone.

The first thing that happened at the Y is that someone shot Striker. I saw that, and I know it with complete certainty. Everything else that happened followed from that.

Marshal Thomas Norris who was on the six-man team that day reported, in his statement to the FBI and testified under oath at my trial, that the first three shots fired at the Y had the distinctive sound of a .223. And anyone who has been around guns knows that the sound of a .223 is very different from the big boom of a 30.06.

I learned later that when Marshal Hunt got down to Mrs. Rau's house he left her with the impression that the dog was shot first. Her statement to the FBI says that he told her, "Roderick finally put down the dog. Right after he put the dog down, the marshals realized they were going to be ambushed by the Weavers."

I also learned later long after my trial had begun that when Captain Dave Neal, of the Idaho State Police Team, got to the Y late that night and met with Mr. Roderick, that Mr. Roderick left him with the clear impression that the dog had been shot first. And after the Justice Department report came out, I learned that Mr. Henry Hudson, the Director of the U.S. Marshals Service, had the same impression.

At page 184 of the report, Mr. Danny Coulson is quoted saying that he met with Director Hudson and two other high officials from the Marshals Service on the evening of the 21st. Mr. Hudson described the incident in this way, "One of the Deputy United States Marshals had been attacked by a dog and had shot the dog which started a fire. During the fire one Deputy United States Marshal had been killed."

**Also, Mr. Cooper has denied all along that he shot Sam. After the FBI found Sam's body in the birthing shed, Marshal Mike Johnson said, at a press conference, that "I shot Sam in the back." They came here and told you that it was Randy but the Government's own expert witness, Dr. Fackler, said at my trial that Cooper shot Sam and he was right.**

**According to their story no one knew that Sam had been killed until they found his body the following week. But we, we have known all along that this was false because first I and then Randy and Vicki walked down to Sam's body in plain view of the Y where the marshals were. I held up my hands and said I was going to look at Sam. Vicki and Randy cried and wailed loudly.**

**We learned only last week that a former Justice Department official, Mr. Jeffrey Howard, knew that Sam was dead less than 24 hours after he was killed. I understand that Mr. Hudson provided a statement to the FBI after the trial in which he said the same thing, "How could these men have known about this unless they were told by one of the marshals on the scene?"**

**I never met Mr. Degan but everyone says that he was a very good man and I am very, very sorry that he is dead. I do not know what his intentions were and I probably will never know. I think it is possible that he was there, that he was just like I was, in the middle of something that should not have happened, that he did not start and that was out of his control.**

**Sitting in that cabin for 8 or 9 days, I was not only scared of dying—in fact, at times dying did not look so bad—but I felt sure that if I did survive I would be given a meaningless trial in a kangaroo court and then sent off to prison for the rest of my life or even executed. After all I have been through I am truly thankful for the court system that we have in this country. In many other countries in the world just the word of the deputy marshals would have been all it took to put me away forever or worse. But the court system worked. It presumed me innocent, appointed lawyers to**

**represent me and gave me a fair trial with a jury and the jury acquitted me.”**

## **SIEGE AT WACO, TEXAS**

**Note 13. On February 28, 1993AD, the U.S. Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, and Firearms, or the ATF, attempted to serve search and arrest warrants for David Koresh and other suspects from the Branch Davidians for allegedly stockpiling weapons at their church called Mount Karmal, which is 13 miles from Waco, Texas. Attempting to serve the warrants, shots were fired and 4 government agents were killed; 14 were wounded, and 6 Branch Davidians were killed. Because they were outnumbered, the ATF agents retreated and a 51-day siege ensued. Eventually, due to non-compliance, the FBI began an assault on the church, using tanks and tear gas, and Mount Carmel became engulfed in flames leaving 48 adults, 25 children, 2 pregnant woman, and leader Koresh dead.**

**So what was going on? The Branch Davidians, who believed and taught that the approaching Armageddon, or collapsing nations, will see the Second Coming of Christ and His defeat over the armies of Babylon, or government forces, were a well-organised group growing by the year thanks to their leader David Koresh. Koresh understood how corrupt it all is; how the cities are collapsing and the System does nothing about it even adds to it, so, because of that and like millions of other wise and educared U.S. citizens, he armed himself and the Branch Davidians. They didn't arm to mount offensives against the oppressive, fascist, System or anything that ambitious, it was just to prepare the present and future Branch Davidians so they can better protect their church and families from the fall-out of a collapsing society. It didn't seem so wrong. But the problem was, the government doesn't care for well-organised survival types at all, or even the men and woman from the security; in fact, ordering in the ATF units against such serious peoples with such serious beliefs and doctrines, that must surely be viewed as a suicide mission and lead to many ATF casualties, which it evidently did, is evidence enough that the System was not only under bad command but seemed willing to pay just about any price to bring down Koresh and his group of well-organised, well-armed,**

and self-efficient followers. So, whatever else was going on with Koresh, that's closer to the truth, and, just like at Ruby Ridge with Randy and Vicki Weaver in 1992AD, the System really showed their hand what with all their cheap allegations from cheap hearsay sources that were never proven, that Koresh and the Davidians were “stockpiling weapons and planning to commit suicide and kill the kids.” But how does the allegation of “stockpiling weapons” fit with the “committing suicide” allegation? Does the System expect the public to believe that the Branch Davidians were going to kill themselves and their kids “AFTER” they had stockpiled weapons? So you can see that that makes no sense, which means they were lying, right? And, the fact is, Koresh wasn't accused of robbing banks, murdering people, or building explosives to bomb the oppressive government and its forces, all the System had on him, recall, was cheap hearsay allegations that were never proven. So if he did stockpile weapons then undoubtedly they were meant for the collapse that the System itself admits is here due to, the elites say, overpopulation, mass unemployment, and a massive rise in crime, etc. The ruling elites want the public to believe that the collapse is natural and it's because of overpopulation. But, what them being behind Arrested Development, mass-immigration, and the hated private banks that suck the life out of the peoples and nations, it's clear that they are, at the very least, adding to the collapse and chaos, and they do that to reduce the populations and implement a NWO.

The battle between good and evil has begun, reader, and what happened at Ruby Ridge in 1992AD, and Mount Carmel in 1993AD, is irrefutable evidence that the elites don't want survivalists in their midst at all, so wake up, get prepared, or die!



## **ALIENS AND THEIR ATTACK WEAPONS**

**Note 14. The evidence I have that suggests aliens are interacting with people here on planet Earth, isn't so overwhelming, I would admit, but the 3 pieces I do have for you may be all I'll ever need to convince you that it may just be true.**

**“They would hear this tune and they could never, ever, get rid of it, and it drove them to do some crazy things.”**

**“a live alien was found wandering  
around the desert”**

**“the aliens are telepathic”**

**The witness who made those spooky statements was, of course, Cooper—the legendary “whistleblower” from U.S. Navy Intelligence. They were stated in one of his fine lectures he had given at Sedona, Arizona, America, in 1989AD, and in his book, and they are the most incredible statements ever made from someone who worked within U.S. Intelligence.**

**That's the first piece of my evidence; which is, Cooper—a loyal American and “whistleblower” who worked for U.S. Intelligence, claimed to have read Eyes Only files; for instance, Project Grudge, that talked about aliens operating on and around our planet and that either the Blue or Red Teams captured a “live” alien that was telepathic and they called EBE. The second piece is Martin Stubbs's UFOs he recorded from a NASA downlink in 1995AD, which I will now write about.**

**Since before and after Yuri Gagarin—a Russian cosmonaut, became the first man in space in 1965AD; Alan Shepard—an American astronaut, was the second, mankind had long dreamed of exploring and understanding that unknown sector and even the planets themselves; the**

American Explorer 1 was launched in 1958AD, which was launched after the Soviet Union's Sputnik 1 and 2 probes were launched, which was part of the “space race” between those Cold War nations, Kennedy promised “we will get to the Moon by the end of the decade”, Neil Armstrong touched down on the Moon in 1969AD, and, after the American Voyager programme was aborted, the Viking 1 and 2 probes replaced it before sailing on their voyage to Mars in 1975AD, reaching Mars in 1976AD. So by the time Martin Stubbs appeared with his incredible story and evidence, the elites and their scientists had made incredible progress in the field of space exploration. And so it was that back in 1995AD when the North America Space Agency (NASA), was performing electrical tests in space and filming the mission called STS-75, Stubbs, with video recorder, satellite dish, and decoder on hand, tuned into NASA's downlink—NASA's communication system connecting the MiR Space Station to NASA's headquarters in Texas on Earth—in the hope of discovering what the astronauts were filming. After hundreds of hours of recording NASA's transmissions, Stubbs finally hit the jackpot with some incredible footage, to say the least, and the jackpot, as some would have you believe, was not asteroids, comets, satellites, ice crystals, airy-disc, or unexplained lights far off in the distance within our own Milky Way, it was hundreds of objects that undoubtedly resemble, hear this, “ALIEN SPACESHIPS”. As far as I'm aware, Stubbs's starships never made it on to the CNN or BBC News broadcasts. But, then again, did anyone's who were out to warn the public about the alien threat or corruption in government? Did Cooper's or even my own? Cooper did receive some media attention, and I made it onto the STV News as a missing person, which wasn't so impressive. But in a non-corrupt or fairer world things could have been much different for the both of us. In the end, and similar to what had happened with Cooper, Stubbs's went public talking about the objects he recorded and made a video showing the UFOs that you can view on the internet—see STS-75.

NASA claims that the objects the astronauts and Stubbs's had recorded were probably “ice-crystals” or a phenomena known as “airy-disc”. But, after exploring both of NASA's explanations that didn't impress me all that

**much; that is, they look nothing like any ice crystals I've ever seen, and airy disc objects move with the camera not independent from it, I'm still convinced that they are real alien spaceships, and spaceships that were once in orbit over our planet.**

**So that's the second piece of my evidence; which is, Stubbs's UFOs recorded from a NASA downlink in 1995AD. The third piece is the UFO images I myself located and later went to the police with after the incident on the internet and with the Nazi signs spray-painted around my flat. You can view my UFO images in the Images part of this book. But for now, here's one of them:**



*Advanced craft*

**The following is a culmination of my own research over the past years, and it is something you would be wise to consider very deeply.**

**Alien attack weapons are: (1) altering behaviour. One method to weaken we humans would be to manipulate who we breed with; for instance, by manipulating the behaviour of men and woman, or making them more at ease with each other; less at ease with each other, they can breed the strains they require; for instance, homosexuals or heterosexuals, smart or dumb. Creating “strains” of weak and simple humans is one method the aliens have to weaken**

our race; covertly attacking the toughest and smartest of us and supporting those just a little below that level and decreasing in quality each generation until the best of us are gone and only the worst remain, is another; for instance, if example A is inferior to example B, the alien will subtly attack B; or put B on a “downer”, and elevate A above them; or turn A into the “life and sole” or the fake leader. Result: the aliens have just weeded out one of the best of our race. Worse, if the attack continues, the victim; due to a loss of control over their own behaviour, may quietly slip away into social isolation. Result: only the weak remain. So if “paranoia”, “instant depression”, and “anxiety attacks” are sophisticated alien attack weapons by the EBEs who constantly and mostly secretly live through us, then they are excellent weapons to control who gets on in the world, who gets the jobs, and who gets to be our next multicultural or nationalist leaders. The people who end up with the jobs will mostly be the inferior, or immoral, criminal, and weaker, types, of course, and an effort is needed to hide it;

(2) static-like noises intermittently directed at the target, in and around the ears, when awake. I named that alien attack weapon “electro-magnetic pings” or “EMPs”, for short, and the EMPs are specifically designed to force the target into obedience or, that failing, to kill themselves due to constant provocation, stress, and anxiety; (3) negating sleep through the dangerous EMP attack weapon. It can drive one to using sleeping tablets, and beyond crue; (4) twitching eyes when one attempts to sleep. Most annoying; (5) fear and panic during one's dreams or a nightmare, that leads the target to either die of a heart attack or awaken in terror and panic, drenched in sweat, heart racing at a seriously dangerous level, only to feel that they have been injured and, hear this, believe they actually felt pain or it felt real; real enough to kill you through a heart attack. Some of those “nightmares” include: (a) seeing Big Cats; or lions and tigers, stalking and chasing you, and feeling pain when they strike; (b) fallen off high structures; (c) throat, eyes, and body parts getting injured, and feeling pain; (d) seeing spiders. Spiders in the ears, mouth, etc; (6) making strangers or even those you know behave strangely or aggressively and violently towards you; alternatively, making them favourable towards you; (7) dogs growling and barking at you; (8) vehicles

**almost hitting you; due to momentarily “losing yourself” while at a road crossing. It's always an amazing experience to escape death by mere inches; (9) unprepared for loud noises; car horns, ambulance and police sirens, etc., that cause instant shock, and no doubt rattle the old and weak greatly; (10) making the target forgetful when talking and reading, and making them mispronounce words.**

**When the alien first attacks, the intention is to confuse and panic you into killing yourself. So don't kill yourself; stay calm and play it out if you can. Two examples: (1) Defence Secretary James Forrestall—the first known victim in the effort to conceal the aliens from the people. Did Forrestall throw himself out of the hospital window due to the alien attacking and panicking him?; (2) Doctor David Kelly—the agitated British weapons inspector and “whistleblower” who turned up dead after slating the British Government's “45 minute claim” held in the Dodgy Dossier (September Dossier), that the British Government were partly relying on to make the case for intervention and war in Iraq in 2003.**

**The attack begins with a creepy introduction of static-like sounding noises (EMPs) on the ceiling or walls and in and around the ears, that are so obvious they'd be impossible not to notice, and so it begins. You'll sense that “something” intellectual and invisible is there in your presence, listening, watching, waiting, and later, whatever “it” is, it actually starts talking to you! But not face to face as with people, but in the very inner depths of one's mind itself, a once peaceful and secret place no longer. I named that alien communication system “electro-magnetic communications” or “EMCs”, for short, and recall that Cooper also claimed that the aliens are telepathic, and the Watchers, from the Book of Enoch, also fits that description.**

**The invisible alien talks and talks and talks and talks until you're convinced it's insane, convinced you're insane, and this, I suppose, is a tactic done to provoke you into killing yourself or others, or you become so recklessly crazy with arguing with the alien “voice” that never stops abusing**

and teasing you, that you eventually may get into trouble with the police, and the human elites, whom the aliens favour and got them into those comfortable positions of control to help them get the best of us, lock you up and throw away the key! Throughout the “talk-talk” attack, the alien also hits you with its seriously dangerous EMPs that will drive you insane in no time at all. It's a job to defend against over such a long period of time, but you will have no other choice but to try. Providence to your assistance, “mind over matter” may be the only weapon we have to negate that threat outwith the use of loud music as a distraction, or even the use of sedatives, so it is as cruel as it is lethal and no doubt you'll be ranting around for years to come until you learn to control it through, all I can give you, ignoring it and never reacting to its taunts, which is what it wants, is how it takes you out, is how it defeats you, and is why the human elites, as well as others, obey it, as you may come to learn. Unfortunately for some, killing themselves or others may be the inevitable outcome of an attack. But have hope best men and woman from the human race whom they disfavour, the attack weakens after several years or so, but still remains a danger, so, instead of killing yourself or others, why not be bold (you only live once) and record anything strange that happens to you; especially any strange interactions you may have with people in general but more so with the people who work within the government-run organisations, and put it online so we can all learn from it as I had done. It's better than doing nothing; it will give you purpose as you dig-in and fight to secure your existence, and should benefit our future leaders. The alien must surely be harming people covertly; without it talking to them, of course, which will have serious consequences for the victim, which may be, they probably think they have an illness. But it differs from person to person, so try to stay calm as you work your way through the attack. If the alien does talk to you while it attacks you, then it will be a massive and lonely battle; due to not being able to alert anyone, and, outwith the invisible alien typically and constantly stressing you out with its EMC and EMP attack weapons, traitors and crazies, under alien control, looking to do damage to you will also come as a major shock. But remember this as you prepare for battle and if you're even good enough to survive



**and fight back in the first place, if they're harming you then you can be sure they'll be harming other good people, which means you are within your rights to move against that attack by those criminals, by, all I can give you and outwith damaging them covertly which so many good people must surely do due to those criminals being so very arrogant, stupid, and repugnant, recording all interactions you have with them, and making those recordings public. It's no loss to our human race or society, because one does well to be rid of traitors and criminals, and God knows what they're getting up to behind our backs, but it isn't good, I can assure you of that, and by recording all that strange behaviour and exposing the aliens must surely wreck their plan to destroy the best of us covertly.**

**To conclude on Aliens And Their Attack Weapons: In a world where aliens are the true elites and the human elites bringing in a NWO on their behalf, then if you engage the human elites to enact change, then it's not always the human elites and their agents who may attempt to kill you; they merely use the System to assist the aliens; that's why they get the best jobs and wear the biggest grins on their subversive and treasonous faces, it's the aliens who attempt to kill you! This, then, that has mastered a way to operate through their human hosts in some fantastic way that we humans can barely even understand, and perhaps created us with the mysterious Triune brain serving as an inbuilt control unit that's armed with strange and dangerous weapons that can force their hosts into full compliance in no time at all, is the ALIEN MIND behind the NWO, and the true ruler of Earth.**

# **CHAPTER 11**

## **BREIVIK'S LOG**

Along with the rest of the White nations, Anders Breivik's nation of Norway has been overrun by that same curious phenomena that had made both Fuhrer Hitler and Commander Rockwell so apoplectic; immigrants, and, just as both of those pro-White and anti-communist leaders had done before him, Breivik also had a bad reaction to it. Breivik hadn't done as much damage to the Left as Hitler had done; of course, when, amongst other things, after Hindenburg was forced to make Hitler Chancellor of Germany in 1933AD, Hitler obliged the multicultural elites to escape Germany for friendly America, due to their subversive behaviour, but Hitler would sympathise with him for attacking Norway's political elites and, in the process, becoming a martyre. Born into a world where patriotism and nationalism is viewed as a serious threat that promises to reverse the Left's anti-White agenda and global dictatorship, Hitler may say, and forced to share his nation with millions of immigrants who are being used against him to break him, his people, and nation, what hope did he have being a native trying to fit into that fantastic environment? Through their agenda, Hitler may say, the Left has forcibly created multicultural societies at the cost of the native peoples and, criminally so, have blocked them from objecting to it through the use of “politically correct” laws that they have implemented over the past decades or so. But Breivik isn't the idiot who will support an agenda that's designed to secretly destroy his own race, just to please the pseudo multicultural elites and the “politically correct” cowards who live amongst us, and this is why he attacked those lying Leftists with bombs and bullets.

Breivik was only in his 20s and not long removed from his teenage years when he realised that the political right is just as controlled as the political left due to, amongst other things, his association with the Norwegian Progress Party that he had become involved with. He first got involved with the Progress Party with great hope, but it ended in disappointment when he started to doubt the party's



intentions; believing the leaders to be nothing but a mob of lying, communist, agents in disguise as nationalist politicians who are slowing the fightback down, which was when he began warning the people and looking for alternative ways to achieve his political ambitions.

After Norway's political elites sanctioned the immigrants grabbing a massive “one-fifth” of Norway's territory—and know that the nation of Norway; but this may just be propaganda to demoralise the natives in order stop them fighting back, apparently has a very light population of around only 5 million, so immense damage has been done to the native people—Breivik, as with the rest of the patriots from the occupied White nations, was crushed. Convinced that the political elites, who sanctioned the Islamification—Asians being permitted to occupy vast areas within the White nations—of Europe are involved in a secret war against the White race, and aware that the standing political parties are all controlled by those traitors, he made contact with a revolutionary political-based group in order to raise opposition forces against them. It was back in 2002AD that he first made contact with the Pan-European Resistance Network and had taken part in the resurrection of an old Crusader and Christian movement called the Knights Templar, which is a military and religious group dedicated to the protection of Christians, and it was the Knights Templar's leaders who commissioned him to produce a political-based book laying out their beliefs and goals, which he did, and the book, as stated in the preface, is called a European Declaration of Independence – 2083.

Due to the ruling elites permitting 10s of millions of foreigners to settle in Western Europe—Western Europe I define as north of the Alps and west of Ukraine; traditionally non-Slavic or Eastern European peoples — from before and after WWII, and recognising that saving his nation through the democratic process had faded away for him, he dismissed those around him as politically correct careerists and selfish individualists who care only for themselves; leftist liars who'd sell their own out just as quickly as they'd sell everyone else out, and made the grim,

but bold, decision to move against Norway's political elites violently. In his log, dated April to May 2002AD, Brevik was so despondent and frustrated by this time in his young life, that it became entangled within his very words themselves.

**Brevik wrote:**

**LOG DATE: APRIL-MAY 2002**

**“I am going to discontinue my involvement in the Norwegian Progress Party as I have lost faith in the democratic struggle to save Europe from Islamification. Armed struggle appears futile at this point but it is the only way forward.”**

It was his first entry in his log proclaiming his intention to attack Norway's political elites. Therefore, based on the above log dates, it was from just before the resurrection of the Knights Templars in April 2002AD, that he first began thinking about taking up arms against the political elites, and it was a complex plan that covered the length of almost a decade, or from 2002 to 2011AD. To show how difficult the decision to take up arms was for him, later in his log, dated between 2002 and 2006AD, Brevik wrote:

**LOG DATE: 2002-2006**

**“I don't know if I will ever proceed with a martyrdom operation at this point as it simply seems too radical.”**

After writing the above statements in his log, if he did have any doubts over using violence against his political and ideological enemies, then he hadn't any more; Breivik had seriously crossed the line and all doubts had gone. In his log, dated between 2002 to 2006AD, he wrote:

**LOG DATE: 2002-2006**

**“I really need to finalise this compendium soon and move on to next phase. (research into weaponry, armour and explosives followed by acquirement phase). Will have to destroy my old hard drives and buy new ones before the**

**research phase, and then destroy these ones again before acquirement phase.”**

**From 2002 to 2006AD his log is pretty much unkept. But in the next log entry date that's dated from 2006 to 2008AD, he goes on to describe his preparations for the attacks on Norway's political elites and installations in great detail. It's as calculating as you can get, and, just to reiterate and to add some more technical information, it was a plan he had probably been thinking about from just before the resurrection of the Knights Templar political movement in 2002AD, but only began physically working on from 2005AD when he first joined the Oslo firearms club in his effort to obtain a permit from the government to own a Glock handgun, and when he relocated to his mother's house from just before 2006AD, to begin working on his book.**

**Starting with financing his operations or producing his book and purchasing all the equipment he would require for the attacks on the Cultural Marxists, as Breivik calls the Left's political elites, he planned to acquire 3 million euros. But as of 2005AD, he is holding only 500,000 euros, so attempts to make up the shortfall by speculating on the Market. Playing the Market cost him. But, writes in his log, if he tightens his budget, the capital he has remaining in his bank accounts should just be enough to complete his book, finance future operations, and, because he gave up his job to concentrate on his martyrdom projects, cover his general living expenses over the next 5 years or so.**

### **Compendium & Research Phase**

**One of his first moves is to conserve his capital to better finance the forthcoming operations he was just about to start working on, so, in 2006AD from just before he began writing his book, he relocates to his mother's house to save on rent and start his research.**

**The next entry in the log; relative to Breivik planning his attacks on the political elites, is in 2010AD.**

By 2010AD, he writes in his log, he has completed his book and moved on to the Research Phase, as he calls it. During this phase, for security purposes, he conceals the data for each phase of the operation on computer memory sticks, and, after each phase was completed, would destroy any evidence relating to him researching armour, weapons, and explosives, etc., over the internet, including his harddrives.

Breivik writes in his log:

**LOG DATE: FEBRUARY 2010**

“I have budgeted 2 weeks for the research phase, but it might take up to 6 weeks. The research phase will be followed by the acquirement phase where I have budgeted 4-8 months. The acquirement phase will be followed by a one week only construction and preparation phase.”

Outwith the log; within the compendium proper, Breivik goes on to divide the research, acquirement, and manufacturing operations into the following 4 phases:

Breivik writes in his log:

**LOCATION: 3.30**

1. Armour research phase
2. Armour acquirement phase  
Purge harddrive, purge evidence, bury armour crate
3. Weapons research phase
4. Weapons acquirement phase  
Purge harddrive, evidence, did not bury weapons crate
5. Explosives research phase
6. Explosives acquirement phase  
Purge harddrive, purge evidence
7. Explosives manufacturing phase
8. Execution

By March 2010AD, in between writing his log up and researching armour, weapons, and explosives on the internet, he was working daily also on the internet, in order

to collect around 10,000 e-mail addresses from patriotic-minded people so he could distribute his book to them immediately before the attacks. He had been collecting e-mail addresses continuously now for approximately seven months, he writes in his log, and by early 2010AD he had collected around 8,000 contacts. Due to his pressing schedule, however, and also due to the tediousness of the operation, he failed to reach his intended target of around 10,000 e-mail contacts, so he aborted the e-mail mission and, after erasing all contact information from his harddrive in order to safeguard the identities of his e-mail contacts, moved on to the Armour Acquirement Phase, as he calls it.

### **Armour Acquirement Phase**

After researching and selecting the armour required for the final moment of reckoning; when SWAT—special weapons and tactics, units deploy to the area in full body armour to arrest him or, if he's armed, possibly even to kill him, he then orders the parts; the armour parts he failed to acquire he actually set about designing and manufacturing them himself, which he called Lokis, after the Norse God of Deception, due to making it himself. It had taken around 3 to 4 months to acquire all the armour parts he required for the final operations against the Cultural Marxists, he writes in his log. But prior to that, he had researched then ordered 3 Pelican storage cases to store his weapons and equipment in while preparing for and awaiting Mission Day. They were advanced storage cases; Breivik writes in his diary, he estimates they can remain buried underground “for several years” without damaging the equipment inside.

In the Summer of July 2010AD, Breivik rose at five in the morning, packed his gear, got in the car he was renting, and set off to burry one of his Peli cases, that contained his armour and other equipment, in some forest in Norway. It was going to be a long, hard, day, but also a potentially dangerous one.

After 3 or 4 hours of careful driving and after locating a forest track just off the motorway he was driving

on that would lead him deeper and deeper into the woods he had previously reconnoitred on GEI, he drove up it, got out the car, and scouted around for a secure site to bury the case, which he failed to find, so he returned to the car and drove on in search of another track which, after 30 minutes or so, he successfully found. Driving as far up the track as he possible could to conceal the car from the passing traffic on the motorway, he parked it, got out, and headed back into the forest, careful as he went, to look around for a secure site which, after an hour or so, he found, so he returned to the car to retrieve the case and, due to the case being too heavy to easily carry, dragged it through the forest to where the cache-site was situated before preparing the ground for the cargo. Preparing the ground was a thoroughly difficult task; Breivik writes in his log, starting the dig at 11am; ending at 6pm, with a back-breaking, hand-blistering, 4ft dig and coming under attack by an army of swarming bugs. But, after backfilling the pit and restoring the site so no one could tell that he'd been there, he drove away from the forest happy with his day's work. If all goes according to plan, Breivik writes in his log, it would be an entire year before he returns to the forest to retrieve his equipment.

After securing his armour and equipment in the forest and evading detection and capture from the System Protectors; as Breivik calls the police officers in Norway and the rest of the occupied White nations whose implicit work is to enforce the Left's agenda and laws whether they support them or not, he goes on to begin the Weapons Acquirement Phase, as he calls it, where he sets out to secure the weapons he requires for Mission Day.

Breivik writes in his log:

**LOG DATE: AUGUST/01/2010**

**“Phase shift - armour phase to weapons phase; harddrive replaced with new one, and all evidence from former phase purged. I’m preparing for a car trip to Prague to establish a weapons connection for the acquisition of an assault rifle, a glock, splint grenades and AP**

**ammo (grenades and AP ammo is a bonus).”**

### **Weapons acquirement phase**

**Deciding it easier to aquire guns in the underworld on the continent rather than aquiring them through legal means back home in Norway, Breivik scheduled a covert mission to Prague on August 1, 2010AD. Once in Prague, he scouted around for a week or two, but, after failing to make contact with underground gun-runners, returned to Norway to try to secure them legally. Back home in Norway, he applies to the authorities for permission to own a rifle and Glock pistol. He's optimistic about receiving permission on the rifle due to him owning, without incident, a bolt-action shotgun for over the past several years or so, and after having completed the 1-week Hunter Course—a prerequisite for obtaining the new rifle he wants. But as for permission to own and carry a Glock, although he's been a member of the Oslo firearms club for a couple of years now, the club's policy is that all members must train regularly before applying for a licence. So, with that understanding, he increases his efforts at the firearms club over the forthcoming Winter period.**

**In 2010/2011AD and throughout the Winter months of November, December, and January, he's at the gun and rifle club training regularly. 15 training sessions were completed and documented, he writes in his log, so, later, or around mid-January 2011AD, he applies to the authorities for permission to receive the licenses for the weapons he wants. Breivik first joined his local firearms club back in 2005AD in order to receive a license to own a Glock from the government, but it wasn't until 2010/2011AD that he finally completed the gun and rifle training sessions before applying for the permits. Later, his application to secure a permit to own a semi-automatic rifle was authorised without any known difficulties from the government, so this, I presume, is why he aborted his plan, he had made earlier, if he had illegal weapons, to bury his weapons at a secondary cache-site and separate from the first. After receiving the gun permit from the Norwegian Government, without delay, he goes on to order, along with 30 magazines**

for it, a new rifle—a semi-automatic Ruger Mini 14 .223 calibre.

In between keeping his log up to date, completing gun-application forms, and firearms training sessions at the local gun and rifle club he was a member of, he continued his research into some of the other critical technical aspects of his projects. Once he was through with that, he moved on to the Explosives Research Phase, as he calls it, where he sets out to acquire all the equipment he would require in the complicated, dangerous, and illegal process to manufacture explosives with.

Breivik writes in his log:

**LOG DATE: SEPTEMBER 2010**

**“I have now changed my hard drive, again, and I’m now going to start the “explosives research phase”. I’ve been looking forward to this phase for a long time.”**

### **Explosives Research Phase**

A month or so after writing the above statements in his log, he writes that he has completed the Explosives Research Phase.

Breivik writes in his log:

**LOG DATE: OCTOBER-NOVEMBER 2010**

**“I have just completed the “explosives research phase”. My rifle application came through and I have now ordered a 800 Euro silencer specifically created for automatic and semi-automatic rifles. The Ruger Mini 14 costs about 1400 Euro including a customized trigger job from the gun smith. I will have to buy a new stock with picatinny rails (400 Euro) and 30 bullet factory mags (60 Euro per mag) from a US supplier.”**



**Sometime between October and November 2010AD, Breivik attends a friend's birthday party somewhere in Norway. He's slightly annoyed with some of them, but holds back on his criticisms in his log whatever he feels in his head. Shortly after the party, however, the truth is told when he goes on to order liquid nicotine to inject into his bullets turning them into lethal chemical weapons. It was a bitter act perhaps, but his politically correct friends, with their culture of lying to themselves and everyone else so they can get an easy ride through life, surely must have added to his frustrations so surely drove him on.**

**Breivik writes in his log:**

**LOG DATE: OCTOBER-NOVEMBER 2010 “I have now cleared out all of the information (evidence) from the previous phase and changed my hard drive once again. I am now ready to start the chemical acquirement phase...!”**

### **Chemical Acquirement Phase**

**Breivik writes in his log:**

**LOG DATE: OCTOBER-NOVEMBER 2010  
“I have now made my first order for one of the chemicals required for my initiator.”**

**LOG DATE: OCTOBER-NOVEMBER 2010  
“It has been decided that the operation will be effectuated in Autumn, 2011.”**

**Breivik calculated that the Chemical Acquirement Phase would be the most dangerous and difficult phase for him due to him having to purchase, store, and manufacture explosives, which means it was impossible to complete his explosives programme from where he was then living, so he opted to rent an isolated farm in order to reduce those risks and fix those problems. It was back in the Autumn of 2009AD that he first wrote up the idea of renting a farm to store the many tons of materials he would require in order to manufacture explosives with, but also to protect himself**

legally, through “plausible deniability”, should law enforcement agents ever catch him in possession of fertiliser, which is a controlled substance, used by farmers, that can be converted, through a complicated and dangerous set of procedures, into powerful explosives. So, to safely and legally purchase and be in possession of fertiliser, he established a farming company called Geofarm, and he did that 2 years prior to him relocating to the farm in 2011AD, which would be around 2009AD.

Outwith the log; within the compendium proper, he calculates the weight of the equipment he may use during the final operation to attack the leftist-held government installations and the political elites in Norway.

Breivik writes in his log:

**LOCATION: 3.32 ARMOUR PHASE – KT  
GUIDE TO BALLISTIC ARMOUR.**

**“WEAPONS AND AMMO:**

**4 splint grenades: 2 kg**

**3 smoke grenades: 1 kg**

**Assault rifle with sights + etc (no ammo): 4kg**

**Pistol with sight + (no ammo): 1 kg**

**7 x 28 round banana clips:  $0,9 \text{ kg} \times 7 = 6,3 \text{ kg}$**

**4 x 28 round pistol clips:  $0,81 \text{ kg} \times 4 = 3,24 \text{ kg}$**

**Total: 17,54”**

Purchasing all the equipment for the final operations, including the production of his book and his general living expenses over a 5 or 6-year period, had greatly used up the capital he had started the projects out with, he writes in the log, but has 15,000 euros remaining in his banking accounts, and access to another 30,000 euros in credit on the many credit cards he owns, which means he can still cover the cost of all the materials he would require in order to produce explosives with.

**Breivik began another cycle on steroids.**

**Breivik using steroids was an interesting fact I discovered during my research into his book. So here's what I think: Because “aggression” is a side effect typically associated with their use, then the use of steroids, along with his young age and his understanding of how the political elites, through their provocative immigration agenda, have brought Norway to the point of total chaos in order to justify, amongst other things, a police state, should be added to the list of reasons for why he did what he did.**

**Incidentally—and the following can easily be viewed as evidence of a conspiracy against Anders—the Norwegian lawmen suspiciously failed to consider Anders's young age, the provocative anti-White agenda, the class war, and his use of steroids at his trial. Further, while I stated some time ago that “Breivik was an anomaly”, I would like to partly correct that statement, and say that millions of Patriots in the occupied White nations, have also chosen his bold path; that is, by joining the Militia or even nationalist political parties opposed to the Left's agenda, they have shown an intent to, if necessary, use force to protect themselves, their families, and their nations from a rogue government. So I apologise to Anders for that error. Incidentally, in regards to the Right To Bear Arms entitlement, let me warn that, while the U.S. Militia and their right to keep and bear arms are legally protected by the Second Amendment, which is a “security act” enshrined within their nation's constitution, which critically states:**

**“A well regulated Militia, being necessary to the security of a free state, the right of the people to keep and bear Arms, shall not be infringed.”**

**as good as it is, because the culture is for banning guns—and the elites attempting to ban “fully automatic” assault rifles necessary for effective combat, is just as damaging as a complete ban on guns—then sooner or later the fascist elites may actually bring out the Cohen Act, which means the law-abiding citizens who need arms to protect themselves in a rapidly collapsing nation, may shortly be at**

**the mercy of the millions of “armed criminals” who will never give up their “illegal” weapons, and must surely be the point of the ruling elites attempting to ban “legally-owned” weapons in the first place. So be on guard!**

**Probably around the Winter month of February (or even early March in Spring) 2011AD, Breivik, curiously enough, “was invited”—yes, “invited”, to accept a higher ranking in the freemason organisation he had been a member of for the past 5 years or so, but, due to his “other work”, he declined the invitation stating he wouldn't be available until Autumn 2011AD, due to his forthcoming travelling commitments.**

**Discovering that Breivik was in the Freemasons—an ancient and somewhat secret organisation founded in the 15th century AD, whose members are mostly Eurasian royalty, politicians, business leaders, judges, lawyers, doctors, media leaders, military leaders, police officers, head-teachers, etc—came as a shock to many. But, all-in-all, I concluded that, because “prestige” was the most probable reason for Breivik joining the Freemasons, his connection to it should be viewed as harmless. However, whether Norwegian Intelligence were aware of what his plans were and intentionally failed to stop him is difficult to ascertain, but I'm pretty much convinced they did know, and here's why: (1) the “investigator” looking around the farmhouse Breivik was renting and using to shield his explosives programme, appears somewhat suspicious. There's a reason for the investigator's presence; which was, “a drug investigation linked to the previous tenants who were renting the farmhouse”. But the investigator's presence at the farm just as Breivik was finalising his plans to attack the political elites, is still a curious incident, so worth taken note of; (2) the give it all away “invitation from the freemason elites” to move higher up the ranks of that most secret and powerful organisation; the Freemasons, is in itself very suspicious, I suppose, but what of the timing?**

**Breivik writes in his log:**

**LOG DATE: MARCH/01/2011**

**“Economic status (as of March 1st) I decided to sell my dear Breitling Crosswind and my Montblanc Meisterstück pen in January in order to strengthen my operational budget. I was able to sell my Crosswind for 1800 Euro and my pen for 200 Euro.**

**My remaining budget is now:**

**In bank: 3750 Euro**

**In cash: 3750 Euro**

**Credit (9 credit cards): 28 750 Euro”**

**By April 2011AD Breivik's operations to strike back at the Cultural Marxists for wrecking his nation of Norway, were on track and looking good; he had, between the Winter months of December and January 2010/2011AD, purchased, along with several other critical items required for Mission Day, a Ruger mini 14 rifle, so he was now ready to move on to the next phase in the operation; it was now time to locate and rent an isolated farm in order to keep his explosives programme as secret as possible and, just as critical, to justify the purchase of a high volume of fertiliser should anyone become suspicious.**

**Breivik writes in his log:**

**LOG DATE: MARCH/01/2011**

**“I will shortly convert the public listing/definition of my company from regular to agricultural. This will allow me to acquire (rent) and register a farm with accompanying fields. The fields, registered through my company, will give me a specific “farming ID number” which is a requirement for ordering large amounts of fertilizer from the national supplier.”**

**On April 6, 2011AD, Breivik hires a car to keep an appointment arranged for April 7 with a farm owner. After meeting with and agreeing to rent a farmhouse from a man**

**called Petter, that, more or less, met his requirements, he plans to move in to the farmhouse on May 2, 2011AD.**

**So this was it; Breivik was set on carrying out his final mission and it seemed nothing could now stop his fateful encounter with the Cultural Marxists who had wrecked his nation of Norway, and even if he failed to produce the explosives he was just about to start working on on the farm, he writes in his log, he still has the ability to inflict serious damage on them with his guns. So while Breivik was on the farm from May 2 to July 22, assuming the identity of a farmer and preparing to “go out” in a storm of patriotic glory, the political elites, who promote the provocative multicultural agenda and who gave one-fifth of the peoples' sector of Norway away to the immigrants and foreigners as they suspiciously kept their own sectors for themselves, were preparing to attend their annual political rally oblivious to what was about to unfold. Playing the Patriots worked good for them; the world became their toy, but soon they would pay the highest price for that betrayal.**

**Well organised and effervescent to the core, from the farm he would go on to order bomb-making equipment over the internet, before picking it up in the nearby city, or the products would be delivered directly to the farm. Surrounding the partially isolated farm he had settled on, was an army base only a few kilometres away, and many more farms within the same radius. The farm covered an area of around 90 hectares to plough, sow, grow, and reap, and was pretty much ideal for what he was planning on doing. To keep his work as secret as possible, he rarely visited his friends and family throughout his time on the farm. As far as Breivik was concerned, one uninvited visitor shows up at the farm and catches him with his “chems” and guns laying out all over the place and they'll lock him up for sure. Just before relocating to the farm on May 2, 2011AD, he made his first order for fertiliser on April 27, 2011AD; it was delivered to the farm one week later.**

**Breivik writes in his log:**

**LOG DATE: APRIL/27/2011**

**“The last week in the capital I spent a lot of time with friends, partying and attending various social events. I knew that it would be the last chance, for a very long time, I would enjoy their presence.”**

### **Events On The Farm**

**On May 2, 2011AD, after packing his equipment into the car, he set off on a 2 to 3-hour drive from Oslo—the capital city of Norway, in his relocation move that would see him take up residence at the farm. On arrival, he moved his equipment into the farmhouse before starting his work in earnest. For security purposes, he covers the windows to stop anyone looking in should anyone happen to do so, then measures up a large sheet of plastic to place over one of the windows, before cutting a circle out of it to fit the fume-hood—a devise to remove fumes with...**

**To read more on that story, but in Breivik's own hand, you can download his book at this hyperlink:**

**[https://fas.org/programs/tap/\\_docs/2083 -  
\\_A\\_European\\_Declaration\\_of\\_Independence.pdf](https://fas.org/programs/tap/_docs/2083_-_A_European_Declaration_of_Independence.pdf)**

**No one but Anders really knows how he was feeling after relocating to the farm to begin his explosives programme in 2011AD. But, due to his past actions, it's fair to say, he had grown to hate the Cultural Marxists so much by that time in his young life that evidently he had, and certainly a long time ago, crossed his Rubicon in search of justice, vengeance, and peace. He had grown up with the multicultural agenda ringing in his patriotic head for such a long time that it had driven him to the point of total hopelessness. Now the time had come to pay the architects of that criminal agenda back. It would be his life for theirs, Breivik calculated, but it would be worth it.**

# **CHAPTER 12**

## **MY STORY**

**Before I was injured I was studying and writing on the internet and some of my interests are history and politics which led me onto political-based websites hosted by Alex Jones, David Icke, Professor Kevin MacDonald, and David Duke who are activists. After I was injured, and after some other things happened that left me feeling threatened, I was so convinced that it was connected to some of those political websites and video websites I had been writing on over the years, that I went to the police to get help. While on the internet writing on those political-based websites, I remember keeping a low profile by dumbing myself down somewhat, as to not draw too much attention from them due to me not trusting them so much, and the years went by without me noticing anything unusual, so it was some time later that I became suspicious due to some of the things I noticed them doing and saying relative to my own activist work. At first I thought I was just imagining it or something. But by the time Jones made a video banging his fists on his desk shouting “you will work for us” and “we have our people everywhere”—this was Jones given me his aggressive ultimatum only a couple of weeks or so before I was injured—I was convinced they were after me, and, with that, around 2 weeks later the strange events occurred that left me with such serious injuries that I came close to dying.**

**Many events happened after I was injured. But, hear this for an irrefutable piece of incriminating evidence against Jones and his American internet team, after I returned to Jones's YouTube channel to see if I could find the incriminating video where he was banging his fists on his desk and shouting his orders and threats at me, to use as evidence against him, the video had been removed! I guess Jones and his team didn't want anyone seeing it. Trying to locate the video proved a difficult task; I found, because Jones has hundreds of videos on his YouTube channel, so, although I had some good clues to go on—which was, the video was made around the same time as Gerald Clienteen was on his show warning the public about how someone had**



just stolen “a hundred grand from his bank account”, and, just as helpful, I also knew it was made just a couple of weeks before the Christmas period in 2011AD—in the end, as hard as I tried, I failed to find it, which means it had been removed.

So I was writing on political-based websites for some years before I had my run in with Jones that left me injured, and the incriminating video was removed.

The last thing I remember before getting injured was Jones given me his aggressive ultimatum and the negative feelings passing over me as I finally realised they were watching me and possibly even after me, so I was worried by that time and feeling a great deal panicky. I was disorientated all through the following events and they all seemed to unfold during the hours of darkness, but it felt like I had just awakened or became conscious; I was on my bed and realised I had been injured in the neck and arm. Give or take, that's all I remember about the events that had unfolded in my flat. But the next thing I remember after the events in my flat, was being just below the summit of the Law Hill; it was dark, and seeing strange lights; probably about 5 in an arc, on the east side of the Tay Roadbridge, and 3 lights above the Broughty Ferry Castle, and hearing what sounded like people up on the summit of the Law Hill shouting, and that it felt like someone had been talking to me. I remember thinking that the lights were some type of military crafts and connected to the incident I had with Jones on the internet. Also on the Law, that was when I realised just how serious my left arm was injured. That's all I remember about the events up on the Law Hill. But after the events on the Law, I remember being in Ward 26 in Ninewells Hospital, and just caught enough to catch the hospital staff trying to psych me out with disturbing noises being broadcasted into the hospital room from somewhere or other, and some “uninjured” guy, who looked like a soldier, being shoved in with me to intimidate me, which his presence and behaviour did. So I remember feeling threatened by both the staff and soldier, and feeling like I needed to escape just incase I get injured again. On Ward 26 itself, there was an old man laying in a coma-like state in

a bed just across from the one I was in, so it was just me and the old man in a square room with maybe 6 beds stuck to the walls; 3 down each side, and a backwall that held the windows. When the uninjured guy appeared in the room, he took up one of the empty hospital beds on the same side as me but nearest to the windows on the backwall. I'm not exactly sure how long I was in there for, but maybe me, the old man, and the soldier spent 3 or 4 nights together in that hospital room.

After ending their PSY-OPS where they were playing animal abuse sounds and war-like sounds; screaming animals, guns firing, explosions and things, across some type of audio system, and just going about their business as if nothing was happening; I also pretended not to hear it, I felt so threatened by all the weird things the staff were doing that I felt I needed to escape first chance I get, and who knows where I was inside that maze-like hospital that seemed massive, empty, and hostile. It was at that time, or just after I had escaped from the hospital, that I made it onto the STV News—a news programme based in Scotland, as a “missing person”, where the police were asking the public to keep a watch out for me! It was only later that I found out I was on the STV News, of course, and I didn't get as much time on the news as I would expect for a civilian who goes missing from the hospital, I later came to realise, but it was better than nothing because now I had the evidence that at least proves I “was” in the hospital, that I “did” go missing from the hospital, and it had all taken place “just after” the incident with Jones on the internet. As further evidence of that, I also obtained one of the “missing person” posters put up by Tayside Police, I presume, who had been searching for me.

Incidentally, you can view the STV News broadcast where they warned the public to look out for me, on my websites.

I'm not exactly sure how long I went missing from the hospital for, but, during my escape from the hospital and returning, and after the PSY-OPS and the soldier's threatening behaviour and presence, what I remember is

**this: moving fast along one of the hospital's corridors, and making it outside free and relieved. It was dark outside. I was alone. After escaping the hospital, I vaguely remember crawling on grass, but it seemed like a week had past since I made my escape from the hospital, so it felt like I had lost time. After the “crawling on the grass and loss of time” memory, I remember being on the eastern perimeter of Camperdown Park, which is a good 3 miles or so from Ninewells Hospital, and as I was looking west across the park's trees, I observed lights moving down and at an angle towards the tops of them. After seeing the lights that must have been some type of aircraft, and just enough light fallen through the trees for me to see a little, I could see I was now inside the park and amongst the park's trees and I could see a brilliant white light sparkling high amongst a separate large group of trees across a fence and a large clearing in front of me. The next thing I remember after seeing the white light amongst the trees, was being back outside the park, or on the eastern perimeter of the park and next to a carpark, and the barking police dogs that had awakened me from what seemed like a sleep of death. The 2 police officers were friendly. I'm not exactly sure what happened in the forest outwith seeing the light. But later, or after struggling to my feet and feeling really disorientated and grim as could be, I got the shock of my life when I realised that the sleeve of my coat was really heavy with the blood from my injured arm, and my left foot, up to my ankle, was frozen solid! So after struggling to my feet and getting in the police car, the police brought me back to the hospital. I'm not exactly sure, but, for a moment, I could swear that one of the cops gave me a Mars Bar or something just before I got in the police car.**

**If you're interested, I made a video document filming and talking about my time spent in Camperdown Park, called Searching Camperdown Park, that you can view on my websites.**

**In the police car on the way back to Ninewells Hospital, I remember hoping they'd let up on me because I was feeling pretty much all in by that time; my mind was in chaos, my legs were cut up, my neck hurt and bled, my arm**

bled and was numb and painful, and my left foot and ankle was like a block of frozen solid ice, and nobody really gave a damn, and I was also hoping that the soldier had gone. What would happen if he's still in there, I remember thinking, and this time tries to kill me, and the hospital staff keep up their PSY-OPS programme? Should I be forced to defend myself violently? And even if I do get the jump on the big, uninjured, soldier, how the hell am I going to explain his dead body to the doctors and police, and hiding his dead body seems unlikely and ridiculous, so it was a real struggle for me, and being injured, weak, and feeling like I had been drugged wasn't helping me much either. Fortunately for me, however, in the end, and after the police found me and returned me to the hospital, the soldier had gone and the staff left me alone.

Some of the staff in Ninewells Hospital are really dangerous people, I came to learn, and, truth be told, they had me in a right state. So remember what I told you and be on guard! In retrospect, I really wish I had my camera on me at that time in Ninewells, but I wasn't even close to thinking about gathering evidence against them at that time, but it would have been real good if I had. But, not to worry, at least you have my testimony, my evidence, and warning, so better than nothing.

Back in the hospital and once I realised the soldier had probably gone for good, I felt much safer but was still in a bad state and feeling exhausted and starved wasn't doing me much favours either; it seemed I had last ate a hundred years ago. The ambiance seemed different this time round; I remember thinking, I remember the staff were behaving themselves or acting reasonably normal. But although they didn't fall over me or anything that kindly, they did, at least, patch me up, so I was thankful to them for that. It was some time later, or perhaps after 2 or 3 disorientated days of me talking things over with several doctors, that I was given the all clear and permitted to return home. I was glad to get out of the hospital and back home, I must say, but, although I was still in a state of shock that, incidentally, had taken me years to “almost” recover from and regain my concentration and composure but never my physical strength and body

weight, considering everything I'd gone through, I thought I came through that ordeal rather well. I was always worried about my dog, Broady, I recall, and it felt like I was in one of those bad dreams where, try as you may, something just seems to be stopping your forward motion to save the thing you fight to protect. But, to my relief, I found out later that the police, after they broke into my flat and had taken away my computer, found him and gave him to my older brother to look after for me. What happened to my dog perplexed me greatly. I had raised him since he was a puppy; from a few months old to around 14 years, so it really broke me that did—see below. Losing my dog left scars enough, but my nephew Stuart Alexander dying was a total disaster, which is something I will write about later, and also how Stuart's death made me think about and become suspicious about someone else I knew who had died violently maybe 2 years before I was injured.

Here is more on what I remember about the “attack” itself and the injuries I ended up with after the incident I had with Jones on the internet: The next thing I remember after the incident with Jones, was awakening or becoming conscious and feeling drugged and disorientated and realising I was on my bed and had been injured; I felt pain in my neck and left arm, and remember seeing blood. As I became conscious, I had a flashback; or something I vaguely remember that had happened only a short time before I became conscious, that I was being held by something, or someone, that was pressing something; softly but quite deeply, into my neck; something, I later found, that left a 1-inch scar similar to a stab wound, and it felt like the pain from my left arm was somehow being subdued; that if I felt all the pain I would have just instantly died or something.

So those were the few memories I had after becoming conscious. But if I wasn't so sure how badly injured my arm was in my flat due to not remembering so much, then I was when I was on the Law Hill. I remember my arm was still numb. But, that aside, I could also remember feeling constant sharp pains all over it; like tiny electrical wires were all loose and sparky given me endless little shocks, which meant the nerve in my arm had been partially cut.

**In the end, or once I was in the hospital for a second time, and after an operation on my arm, where the surgeons put me to sleep for a time, I found I had been cut on the neck perhaps once only, and stabbed almost right through my left arm perhaps 3 or 4 times, that left my arm with serious nerve damage and much of it, along with parts of my hand and fingers, permanently numb with a good loss of strength.**

**For more evidence, you can view my scars in the Images section of Invaders, and in some of my videos that are on the internet.**

**That's all I remember. But there's something else that happened later on, or after both my sister and sister-in-law had cleaned up my flat just before I was released from Ninewells Hospital, which was, when I was rolling up my blood stained carpet to dispose of it, it was then that I realised that most of the blood was “on the carpet” at the bottom of the bed, and “not on the bed” where I first remembered being after I became conscious. So that was something strange that I noticed some time later that confused me greatly. There was some blood on my bed that I remember very clearly after I returned home from the hospital. But because there was much more blood on the carpet than on the bed covers and bed mattress, I concluded that, whatever happened, it must have happened mostly on the bedroom floor near the bottom of my bed.**

**Back home in my flat, as I was trying to stay calm and piece together what had happened to me, and also trying to come to terms with my painful, numb, and mangled left arm that would award me with sharp, painful, shocks every time I touched it against something (and really painful around the left part of my wrist for some reason; the injury was much higher up my arm), I discovered something else had happened to me that puzzled me greatly; I realised that everything that had happened to me had happened over a 2-week period but I can only remember the few incidents I tell here, so I had a lot of missing time to account for. I never did work out precisely where I was for all that time, and what had happened to me. But, wherever I was and**

whatever was going on, it definitely happened just after the incident with Jones on the internet. Furthermore—and this is something I realised much later on and is another strange thing that happened to me that can easily be investigated and corroborated—I actually missed signing on, so had to make a new claim for welfare.

As I was trying to piece those lost days back together and also wondering what Tayside Police's reasons would be for breaking into my flat and removing my computer—their reason, incidentally, was to see if I had been talking to anyone on the internet, so, by chance, they could maybe find out where I was—something else was about to happen that would leave me really sad and broken for a very long time. After returning to my flat from the city, I noticed my dog was in such a bad state that me and my brother had to take him to the vet where he was “put down” on July 12, 2012AD. I'm not exactly sure what happened; he seemed okay before I left to go into town, but I just can't stop thinking that someone entered my flat to injure him to get to me. Anyway, he was a real bright dog. He did live to almost 15, so not so bad, and we had some great adventures together. I had some great pictures and video footage of him that really did him justice. But after all the chaos I had gone through, I lost everything apart from one really bad image of him, so not so good, and I miss him greatly.

I was on high alert after the incident with Broady, of course, and as worried as one could be, and, as you are about to discover, I had a right to be.

Around the first week of December 2012AD is my best recollection, which was only 5 months after Broady's passing, someone spray-painted a threatening sign on the wall attached to my flat, which was a nazi-type sign—see images below—with a sniper target, or a circle with a cross, included in the design, and also some graffiti in the stairwell in the block of flats where I live. It worried me greatly, and instantly I thought of MacDonald's Jew-blaming website I was reading and occasionally writing on and that some soldier Jew had come for me! But then I remembered the Eurasians and their ancient war strategy that sees them



blaming the Jews for their handiwork; for instance, the Eurasian leaders wanted me to think that the Jews were the ones after me and not them. Simple as that. Anyway, feeling threatened by all the madness, I later decided to photograph the graffiti; which I did on December 12, 2012AD and is the date on the photographs I had taken, and go to the police to see if they would help me.

## THE NAZI SIGNS



Incidentally, the stairwell and outside wall graffiti was removed before I had the idea to photograph them to prove I may be in danger. But I did photograph the one on the wall attached to my flat, or, rather, the paint stain that remained after it had been removed, and also the other signs that weren't removed, so I did get something that could be used as evidence.

The graffiti caught me by surprise and certainly had me worried. But before going to the police for help, I wanted to make sure they wouldn't just kill me without anyone knowing, so I spray-painted my own massive statement on a large wall near to where I live, which was, **TREVOR STEWART STABBED BY PHASE-SHIFTING TROOPS!**, to draw attention to myself, and I also posted my statement on the internet and through many letterboxes in and around



the Tayside (Dundee) area and student sectors around the citycentre. After I was done with that, I emailed my statement to the main police station, or police headquarters, at Bellstreet in Dundee, as I continued to prepare the evidence that I would later go to the police with to get help. I wasn't thinking so much about the police coming to speak to me at that time; if I recall, I was actually preparing the evidence before going to speak to them, so when they knocked on my door to speak to me about the statement I had emailed to them, and the graffiti with my name on it, or, at least, that's what I assumed, it took me by surprise. In no way was I prepared to get into all the complications with them right at that moment in my flat; I recall thinking, because I hadn't fully prepared my evidence. So, what I did, I respectably invited the two male officers in but only explained the basics to them—what had occurred after the incident with Jones on the internet; for instance, my injuries, my dog getting injured, the graffiti, why I suspect Jones was involved, and the UFO images—then stated that's all I wanted to say, if they don't mind. So after that and before leaving, one of police officers told me to contact them if I require assistance.

The police took me by surprise when they knocked on my door, that's for sure, and I really thought I was done for again and feeling all weird and nervous. But, not to worry, providence to my assistance, I did survive that ordeal, the police were friendly, and I felt much safer after talking to them because now they definitely know I had told many people about the incident I had with Jones on the internet, Broady getting injured, the graffiti, and the UFO images, and I also felt much safer when I later went to them with my evidence to try and get some help.

It was no more than 2 or 3 weeks after laying the counter-measures possibly needed to protect myself from any rogue cops who move amongst the good ones, and having prepared my evidence, that I went to police headquarters to get help. It was a tough decision to make, and I really didn't know how it would go down; maybe they'd help me; maybe they'd lock me up or maybe they'd even kill me, but to get some help I needed to take some risks, so off I went to police headquarters.

Before continuing, there's a couple of important points I'd like to make: (1) my statements weren't so great; I later concluded, because being so shocked by Broady's death, the graffiti, and convalescing from my own injuries and sufferings, I found it very difficult to concentrate when I was writing them out, but they are very accurate, so not so bad; (2) after the incident with the nazi signs and before going to the police for help, I posted some videos on the internet warning the public about what had happened to me, but someone closed my Disclose TV channel and some of my YouTube channels that I had uploaded my videos to. I told the police about that, but they never investigated; (3) before I was injured it was always quiet in the flat right above my own. But in the run up to me getting injured and Jones delivering his ultimatum to me, there was a lot of noise and a lot of people going in and out from the same flat. That caught my attention and stuck in my mind. But I didn't think so much about it until after I was injured when something else happened that obliged me to inform the police just in case it had anything to do with me getting injured and the nazi signs, etc; which was, just days after the graffiti appeared, I witnessed Archie, whose mother lives in the flat above my own, disposing of some furniture at the back of the flats I live in—see image above. I was never so sure what was going on, and I apologised later just in case it was innocent; (4) as for Nipper, who lives in a flat next to me, Archie, Jones, Icke, MacDonald, and Duke and me calling them Jews then Polish, here's my explanation: Because I believe that the Eurasians are behind the anti-White agenda and some of them blame the Jews for it to deflect blame from themselves, and I suspect that Archie, Nipper, Jones, MacDonald, Duke, and Icke are Eurasians, I called them Jews and Poles until I felt safe enough to talk about them being Eurasians, which I later did. So I believe that some of them were targeting me because of my race; which is, as far as I'm aware, White, and failing to obey Jones. The police came to question me about the new statement I emailed to them at Bellstreet—I made a video about that you can watch on my websites—which was when they put their “Room 101” police card through my letterbox for me to contact them. I didn't get in contact with them because I just didn't care for the hassle and interrogation,

and never heard anymore about it; (5) someone did tell me that Nipper did the graffiti, is why I told the police about him, which they failed to investigate, but I'm not so sure if he did it or not; (6) I can't recall if I ever talked about the graffiti in any great detail, and couldn't find much looking back through my statements and videos to jog my memory, so I will address that now:

It was early morning when a workman knocked on my door and asked for some water to dilute his acids to clean some graffiti off the walls, and I gave him a free half bucket of the stuff. While filling his bucket at the sink in my kitchen, it was then that I looked out through my kitchen window and noticed the large nazi sign on the wall attached to my flat in Lochee. Again, then, I instantly thought of MacDonald's Jew-blaming website I was reading and occasionally writing on, and that some militant Jew had come for me, but then I thought of the Eurasians and their war strategy. There was graffiti in the stairwell as well, but it was, along with the graffiti on the wall attached to my flat, quickly removed, I later realised. But later that morning, or after the workman had finished and I went outside for some reason or other that escapes me now, I noticed there were many more nazi signs very near to my flat. Curious by it all, I walked around Lochee to see how many there were, and, in the end, I concluded that there was a ring of 5 of them surrounding my flat, including the one which was removed from the wall attached to my flat. Incidentally, the 5th nazi sign was mostly hidden by Climbing Ivy, so I failed to notice and photograph it. But noticing it later, I recorded it with my camera, so the 5th nazi sign is also available in one of my videos. The nazi signs stood out and looked very threatening, and whoever did it really had me convinced that they were coming back to finish me off for good. But one good thing came from it; they gave me the good idea to photograph them before going to the police for help.

As stated above, after the graffiti incident but before going to the police to see if they would help me, I wanted the police to know that I had told a lot of people about what had happened to me so they wouldn't just take me away and kill me or something. So, again, then, what I did, I

photographed the graffiti, I posted copies of my statement through many letterboxes, I put my own graffiti on a wall to draw attention to myself, I made some videos talking about what had happened to me, that I put on the internet, I emailed my first statement to Tayside Police, which was when they visited me then left because I wasn't prepared to talk to them at tha time, and, during all that chaos, I began preparing the evidence that I would take to the police with me to see if they would help me, which I will now explain.

On January 1, 2013AD, I made my way to police headquarters in the city of Dundee, which is, at a slow pace, about a 1 hour walk from my flat in Lochee. It was Winter time and dark outside so I had my waterproof jacket on with my backpack thrown over one shoulder with my evidence inside. It was probably around 5,30pm when I finally entered police headquarters and, because the story I was about to tell them was so very complicated and fantastic, I was a bag of nerves! In police headquarters at reception, after waiting around for what seemed like an eternity and with my confidence at an all time low, two very, very, relaxed police officers appeared at the reception and led me to one of their interview rooms where, in a state of mild fear and hopelessness, I told them about my injuries, Jones, my dog, the UFO images, the nazi signs, and offered them the two compact discs that held my evidence. After that, a little war broke out!

Regarding the UFO images: In 2011AD and at two different times before the incident with Jones on the internet, I had obtained, through my own efforts, 19 very clear and impressive UFO-type images with co-ordinates that I told the police about when I went to them to get help. The police didn't accept or look at the evidence held on the two discs I had brought with me, but I did show the two officers the two UFO images that were on my cell phone.

In the police interview room where the male police officer did all the talking and the female officer remained silent, after explaining what had happened and offering them the evidence to support my claims, we argued and argued then, later, after realising the bad cop would never

help me even if Jones himself entered the room and made a confession, I asked if I could leave. The officer agreed; said he'd drive me home. So after climbing into the back of an unlit police van with a really small evil cage for me to squirm in, we set off to where I live in Lochee, or so I thought. If I remember correctly, I believed something was wrong after they drove past where I assumed they should have let me out, so, after the male officer—the one I ended up arguing with in police headquarters—drew me a sneaky grin as he exited the police van to exchange with another officer at the Lochee sub-station where we had stopped, it was then that I felt done for and betrayed and had a bad feeling that the bad cops were taken me to the hospital! The cop lied to me for sure. But that didn't surprise me so much, seeing as his implicit duty is to serve and protect the leftist multicultural elites and their internet leftist agents like Jones. But I was so worried by that time that I began to have gloomy thoughts about getting murdered or something, so my worse nightmare was starting to come true.

At the hospital itself, as I waited in the police cage the officers went in to speak to a doctor, I presume, then, after maybe 10 minutes or so, came back to get me before escorting me into the hospital where I later talked to a kindly doctor and nurse team about what had just happened in the police station, as the officers, I presume, went back outside and waited. In the doctor's office itself, I told them about how I was injured after my incident with Jones on the internet. I told them about the UFO images, the nazi signs that were spray-painted on and around my flat, that made me, in the first place, go to the police for help, is why I went to the police is why they sent me to talk to you, and how the police were ignoring my evidence and framing me to shut me up. So guess what happened? As if God Himself had intervened to preserve me, the good doctor released me to return home! The police didn't seem to care so much about me getting released, I remember thinking as I struggled back into their van's grim, dark, cage that, strangely enough, didn't seem quite so evil this time round; the “freedom trip” being more pleasant than the “death trip”, I suppose, and they let me out in Lochee High Street just a few hundred metres from where I live. I had survived intact! But back in my flat, as I was standing

with my evidence in my hands and happy to at least be alive, uninjured, and free, it was then that I realised that, although the good doctor had given me the “all clear” and the police had taken me home, they still hadn't looked at my evidence and, even worse, my life may still be in danger from whoever did the graffiti! In the end, while I was disappointed by how the police dealt with me but happy with the doctor and nurse, my bravery in telling people about what had happened to me before going to the police for help, really paid off handsomely because, although the police did try to frame me, I did survive, and those nightmarish events in the police station and hospital, took place almost 9 years ago from when I published this book in 2022AD.

I was in a state of mild terror after the police tried to frame me, and maybe at a later date the System would have just hanged me out of hand or something equally shocking and gruesome for me to endure. But after regaining some of my composure and thinking through my options, I decided to contact several Scottish politicians—I emailed Holyrood, which is, the Scottish parliament, and a handful of MSPs or Members of the Scottish parliament—telling them how unfairly the police had treated me, who later got back in contact with me by email and letters, telling me they would investigate! I was excited by their reply, I must say, even thought, for an insane moment or two, that I may even be awarded “millions” in compensation thanks to the police officers not investigating my evidence and my complaints against Jones that they passed over as if they were his father himself, but was left fully disappointed when, after their lameful investigation drew to a close, the MSPs wrote back to me telling me to be gone because, just like the police officer who tried to frame me by trying to have me committed, they also think I'm a madman! Well, just for the record, MSPs, police officers, and public, I'm not a madman, and those people I accuse “were” “playing me” on their websites, or some of them wanted me to work for them, the police did try to have me committed and they did not look at my evidence or even give a thought to the aggressive nazi signs that were spray-painted on and around my flat, the UFO images are real; I did not fake them, and a

friend of mine, my dog, and later my nephew all died; for instance, a friend of mine, Alan Barber, died by hanging just before I was injured; my dog was injured just before I was injured, and died 6 months after I was injured, and my 26-year old nephew, Stuart, also died by hanging on June 29, 2013AD, just after I was injured over the Christmas and New Year period from 2011 to 2012AD, and “after” the police tried to frame me on January 1, 2013AD.

After the Scottish Government's investigation where, just like the police, they did not investigate my evidence and failed to highlight the important fact that the doctors “did” allow my return home—the MSPs slandered me as “mentally ill” in letters you can read at the end of this chapter. But, hear this, the MSPs were taken the officer's word for it not the doctor's—I again started to think through my options which led me to contact several lawyers to see if they would help me sue Tayside Police and the MSPs or not. If I remember correctly, I went on to email several local Scottish lawyers who, get this, all ignored me! Incidentally, in one of my videos you can watch me emailing one of the lawyers.

I was pretty much “dead in the water” after those events, I'm sorry to report, but went on to make many videos talking about what had happened to me, along with my perspective on many important historical events, that you can view on my websites. But for now, along with my evidence and the letters that I received from the police, the Scottish Government, and lawyers, you can also view my UFOs in the Images chapter of this book. I will keep the coordinates off them for now. But before I die, I will replace all the UFO images in this book for the ones with the coordinates, altitudes, and dates.

# **CHAPTER 13**

## **STONEHENGE & THE DMS SYSTEM**

**Stonehenge began to built in 8,000BC, with markings that would lead to the creation of the 360° compass and the 0° line of latitude and 0° line of longitude, and by 2,000BC the structure was complete. It was a calender, reliant on the Sun and Moon, that could, and very precisely, calculate critical times throughout the day, month, and year, and is the oldest and greatest of the ancient time temples to have come down to us. It may not look as impressive today as it once had, but what Stonehenge represents; which is, an understanding of the Celestial Objects and advanced mathematics or Division, is more than impressive and something to be aware of. For an example of how I believe the Stonehenge time temple emerged, I will begin with the most incredible object in our solar system and the nearest star to Earth; the Sun.**

**By simply observing and marking the positions of the Sun on the horizon and across the sky the ancients worked out an Earth year as 360 days, but later went with 365 days; the longest day; shortest night, and the shortest day; longest night, and marked those positions with posts and stones, and, because they are important, called them Sunrise, Midday, Sunset, Midnight, Summer Solstice, Winter Solstice, and the Spring and Autumn equinoxes which they called the “seasons”. The solstices are the most important; of course, because they mark the two most important seasons in the year; the Summer and Winter, but the Spring and Autumn equinoxes—two events that mark the Earth's axial tilt being in balance with the Sun, or the day and night have reached a perfect balance of almost 12 hours each due to the Sun moving equally around the Equator. “Equinox” means “balance”—are also important because they mark the transitions into Summer and Winter.**

**After they had discovered an Earth year and seasons, they went on to use Division—an advanced mathematical system, to divide the Earth's year into more manageable units which they called “seasons” and months”. The Mayans**



opted for the 10-month system as did the Romans who later created the 12-month system. But here's the variations: With a base of 365 days/nights and, preferring an even unit of division to break up that very long year, they were limited to two choices, or mathematical equations, that are “equal” and fit “nearest” the 365; specifically, (1)  $365 \div 30 = 12.166666667$ , or, to simplify, 12 months x 30 days = 360 days with 5 days out; (2) or 10 months x 36 days = 360 days with 5 days out. Some of the other “uneven” equations, are: (1) 11 months x 33 days = 363 days with 2 days out; (2) 11 months x 29 days = 319 days with 46 days out; (3) 11 months x 30 days = 330 days with 35 days out. The 11-month Earth calender; specifically, 11 months x 33 days = 363 days with only 2 days out, is closer than the 12-month calendar, of course, as is the 13 months with 28 days calender; specifically, 13 months x 28 days = 364 days with only 1 day out. But because the other variables are a long way out or uneven, it's easy to see why the ancient calender makers settled on the 10-month system with 5 days out, or even the 12-month system with 5 days out, to divide the Earth's year. And to make up the “5 days out” which they added later, they very likely just used a 365-stone ring system where they just counted to the end before going back to their first month therefore keeping good time. Simple as that. The builders of Stonehenge very likely also opted for the 10-month system. But, in the following example, you can see how the 12-month calender system works “without the built-in Leap Year system” that I will explain later:

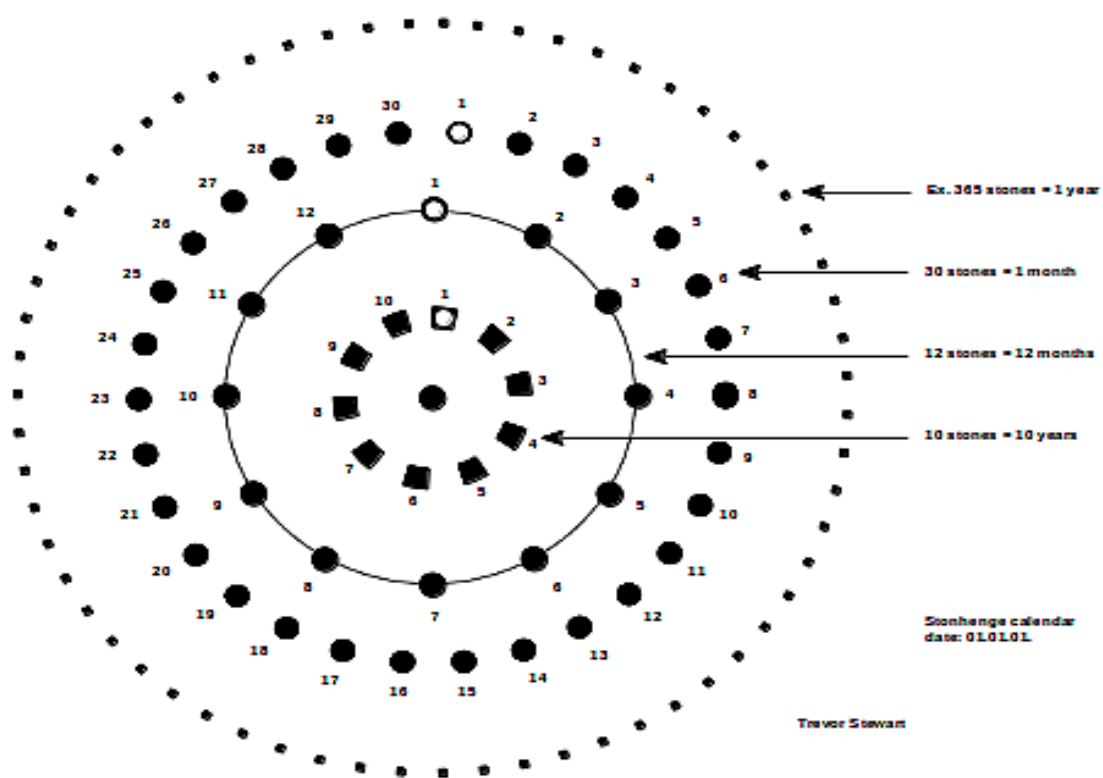
(1) place 12 markers, that represent the 12 months, in or out the temple; (2) place 30 markers, that represent the 30 days in 1 month, around the 12-month markers but separately; (3) place, for example, 10 stones, but you can increase that, that represent the years, in or out the temple.

To keep a track of time:

(1) place 1 stone on top of the 1st month marker which will represent the first month; (2) place 1 stone on top of the 1st 30-day markers which will represent the number or date of the month; (3) place 1 stone on the 1st year marker which will represent the Earth's year. After that's done, the date

would read as M1/D1/Y1, or month 1, day 1, year 1, and all stone markers would have flat tops so you can easily place the markers on, and, no doubt, different sizes and colours, well dressed, and polished to a fine finish. String would be a much more simpler method for keeping a precise track on time, or to within a day/night, or 1/365th of an Earth year, of course, but that's just an example of what can be achieved with nothing but stones or any objects; such as, wood, and recall that “Woodhenge” preceded Stonehenge.

Below is the Stonehenge calender I created for keeping a track of time and to show what the builders of Stonehenge may have used for also keeping a track of time:



Stonehenge calender

As a back up system, I placed 365 stones, which will represent 1 Earth year, around the entire complex. So to keep a track of time, all you do is place 1 stone on top of the 1st stone in the 365-outer stone ring system, which would be day 1 in an Earth year, or 1/365th of an Earth year.

Stonehenge shows signs that the builders had followed my system for keeping a track of time, and, again, it couldn't have been so far off, but, due to the partial destruction of the structure, it's difficult to be absolutely

certain. In case you're curious, it was very likely imperial Rome that had partly destroyed the Stonehenge time temple during their wars against the Celts and Germans living in Britannia England, and Vespasian, a Roman soldier, is my prime suspect because not only did he assist in the destruction of the Jewish temple—the Jewish temple is also known as the Second Temple. The First (Jewish) Temple was destroyed in 586BC by King Nebuchadnezzar II from the Babylonian Empire—during the Great Jewish Revolt from 66AD to 73AD, he, after the Roman invasion of Britain in 43AD under Emperor Claudius, allegedly built a military fort just 2 miles from where the Stonehenge complex is located in Southern England.

So I discovered how to accurately, or with the “leap year” system, count the Earth's year from 4 fixed positions; Summer and Winter solstices, and Spring and Autumn equinoxes, and I successfully divided the Earth's year into months. But to create the “weeks” from a 30-day Earth month and to include the “5 days out” to make it synchronise to the Earth's year therefore keeping the calendar perfectly balanced, here is my formula that you can look over in the calendar I made and inserted below: I simply inserted the “5 days out”, or .5, in between the months of M12 and M1, or in between Sunday, May 30, and Monday, June 1, which means the system is a 36.5-week and 12.5-month system. I shifted the Special Occasions—they are: June Summer Solstice, Autumn September Equinox, December Winter Solstice, and Spring March Equinox—from the 21st to the 1st or D1 so I could have M1 D1 or Summer Solstice as day one in my calendar not June 21st as it is in the Gregorian calendar, and I did that due to (and this is just my switch from Mid-Winter culmination to Mid-Summer culmination) the Summer Solstice being the position where I began my Earth-year count from, and it being approximately the Sun's furthest reached position north of the equator before it moves back into a new season. Culmination, recall, is the Sun's “true” furthest reached position north or south of the equator. Further, in truth, there is only 2 seasons; Winter and Summer. The equinoxes are merely transitions in and out of those two seasons. Here, then, is my calendar's shifts and operating system:

- (1) M1 represents June; M2 July; M3 Aug; M4 Sep; M5 Oct; M6 Nov; M7 Dec; M8 Jan; M9 Feb; M10 Mar; M11 Apr; M12 May
- (2) Gregorian to 12.5 shifts: Summer Solstice shifted from June 21 to M1 D1; Winter Solstice shifted from December 21 to M7 D1; March Equinox shifted from March 21 to M10 D1; September Equinox shifted from September 21 to M4 D1; Christmas, or M7 D25, has no shift; New Year shifted from January 1 to M1 D1, which means the New Year is also on Summer Solstice day.
- (3) Earth year: 365.6 Earth days
- (4) Earth months in 1 Earth year: 12.5
- (5) Earth weeks in 1 Earth year: 36.5
- (6) Earth weeks in 1 Earth month: 3
- (7) Earth week: 10 days
- (8) Earth days in 1 Earth month: 30
- (9) Work/rest ratio: 6/4

Be aware: because Earth takes longer than 365 days to orbit the Sun; for instance, Earth takes 365 days and 6 hours, or 8,766hrs, to orbit the Sun, but the calender and watch, due to the **“24hrs in 1 day determined by the critical watch”**, takes 365 days, or 8,760hrs, which means the watch and calender fall behind Earth's yearly orbit, the calender must have a “leap year” system built in to keep the calender in synch with the Earth, otherwise, at the start of the season, etc., marked in the calender, the Earth would be around 6 hours in front of it. So, due to the 6-hour flaw, my calender's Leap Year system is, once the 6-hour reaches 24 hours or 1 day (4 x 6hrs = 24hrs or 1 day), which would be 4 years, you must leap forward by 1 day to catch up with Earth's “1-day ahead” position, which will synchronise the watch and calendar to Earth’s true yearly orbit of the Sun, or, in my calender, **every 4 years, leap from M12 D34 at midnight to M12 D35 at midnight**. You can leap 1 minute per day making the Day/Night 24.1 hours, or 10 minutes per week making the Week 240.10 hours, or 30 minutes per month making the Month 720.30 hours, or 6 hours per year making the year 8,766 hours. But you would have to move the watch forward every day, week, month, or year, which is

why we leap forward only once every 4 years from, say, midnight to midnight, which means we don't have to adjust the watch very often.

12.5 months/36.5 weeks calender

Lear Year: each 4 years, leap from midnight on M12 D34 to midnight on M12 D35

M1

D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20
21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30

M2

D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20
21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30

M3

D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20
21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30

M4

D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20
21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30

M5

D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20
21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30

M6

D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20
21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30

M7

D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20
21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30

M8

D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20
21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30

M9

D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20
21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30

M10

D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20
21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30

M11

D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20
21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30

M12

D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D	D
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20
21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30
31	32	33	34	35					

Trevor Stewart

To give a brief overview of the Moon calender: The Moon's phases are determined by the superior Sun; of course, or the Sun's light, or solar particles, striking the Moon at different angles during its orbit, and the British had 4 critical phases that were marked at Stonehenge; they are, top NE inner lunar prism aligns with the New Moon; lower SE inner lunar prism aligns with the First Quarter; lower SW inner lunar prism aligns with the Full Moon; and top NW inner lunar prism aligns with the Last Quarter.

The Moon orbits the Earth once every approximately 24hrs of watch time, therefore, if using the Moon for a calender and if using the watch and the 12 months & 30 days calender with 5 days out system, 30 Moons would equal 1 calender month.

I worked out another system for keeping a track on time outwith the one above, is why I believe the Stonehenge time temple became merely a monument to time instead of an instrument the architects would depend on for knowing time; which is, let's say you have 12 and a half strings that

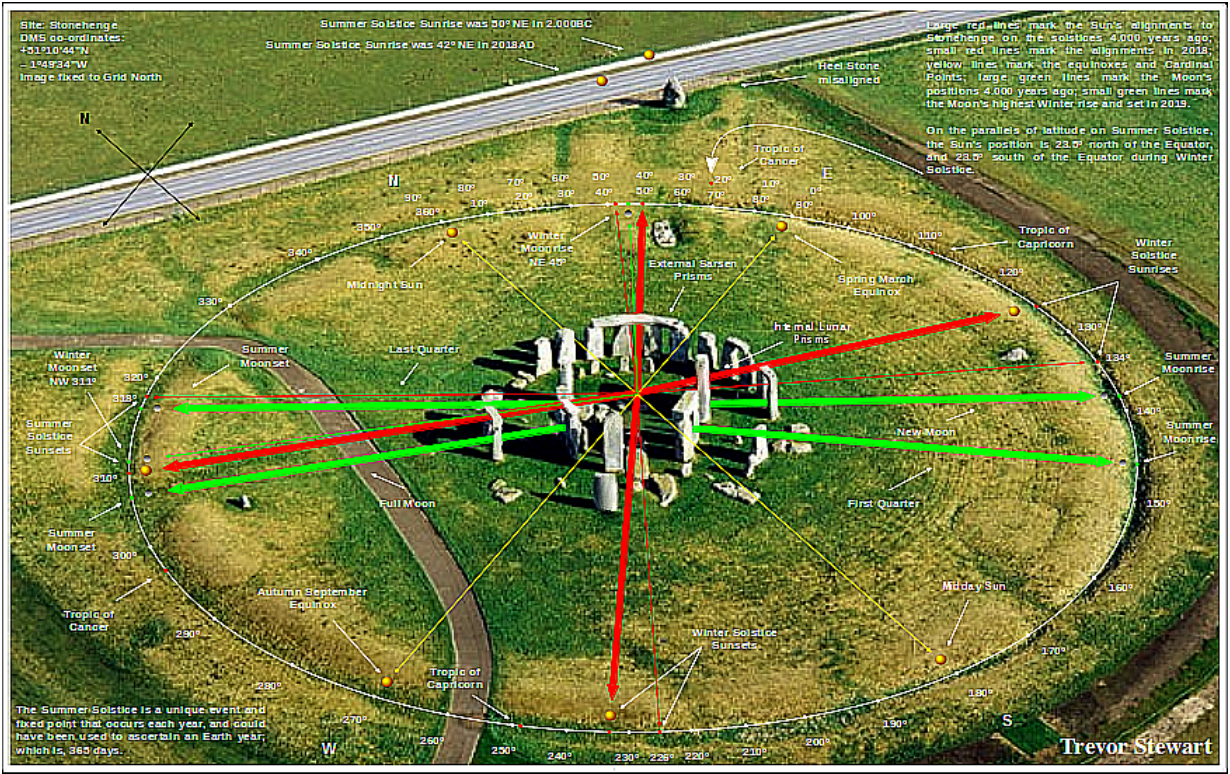
represents the 12 months and 5 days out, you can simply tie 1 knot in the first string (or the first month in the year) each day, and after you have 30 knots, you can start over again with the second string (or the second month in the year) until you reach 12 lots of 30 plus 5 on the half string which would be the end of an Earth year. It's a simple system and really useful for keeping time; for example, in 56 knots (56 Earth days; or 1.26 Earth months) it will be time to prepare for Winter!

By the time the ancients had worked out the Earth day/night, the Earth year, the 12 months, and weeks, they could then use string to keep a track of time, but they could also, by using the Midday Sun, or Meridian Transit, or Rose Line, or Prime Meridian, as a fixed point to measure off from, build and use water and sand clocks to divide the day/night into 24 units, or 24 hours, which can also be broken down into 1 hour units, which means only one 1 hour sand clock turned 24 times is enough to keep accurate time of a day/night. In 3 turns of the glass, then, or 3 hours, or 180 minutes, it will be Midday! Or the Sun will be on the Rose Line.

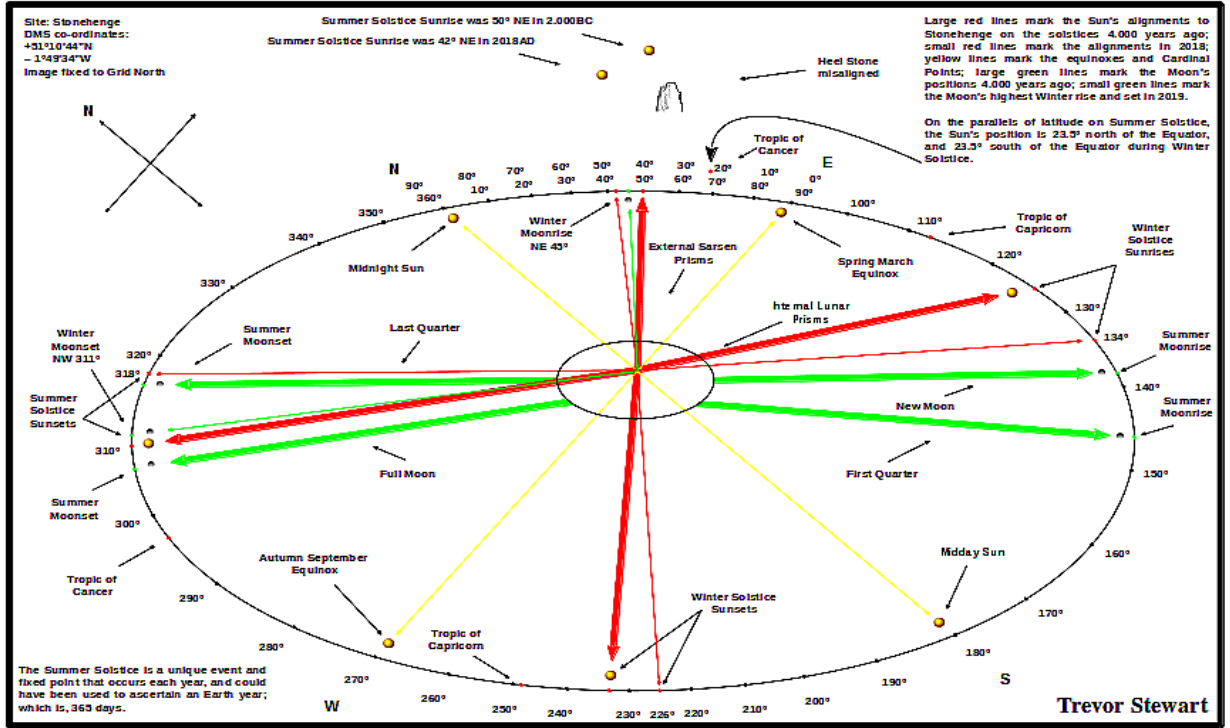
The Stonehenge time temple caught my attention so much that I went on to draw up a schematic to see if I could fit everything together or work out what they were doing, and the schematic I made, that you can view below, while it turned out very good, was very complicated to make; for a start, I had to locate not only an appealing image of the Stonehenge complex but one where you can see the structures, or the Sun and Moon prisms, very clearly for the purpose of showing the alignments to the Celestial Objects both 4,000 years ago and today; second, I had to align and construct the image from Grid, or True, North which, due to the perspective of the image, proved very difficult, but I got there in the end; third, I had to align all the Celestial Objects, or the Sun and Moon, with the prisms of Stonehenge which, due to credibility and wanting to be absolutely certain, obliged me to take compass readings on those objects themselves, so a lot of science and hard work went into the image I made. It may look like I just threw a handful of colourful lines over the temple. But I studied the

angles and data very carefully; deploying protractor, compass, maps both new and old, to be absolutely accurate, as well as understanding what modern scientists say about Sun, Earth, and Moon interactions, so have faith. Before analysing the schematic, you'll be interested to discover that, after I had ended my study, I found that Stonehenge, "if" the NE prism was aligned to the Summer Solstice at  $50^\circ$  once they had completed the structure, was out of alignment with today's Sunrise and Sunset on Summer Solstice in the NE, NW, and Winter Solstice in the SE, SW, by  $8^\circ$ , and so is the Heel Stone; the Heel Stone was moved by an archaeologist back in the early 19th century AD. Incidentally, I had taken many Sun readings on the run up to Summer Solstice in 2018, on solstice day itself, and after, and, although I got a compass reading of, minus magnetic variation,  $43^\circ$  NE on Summer Solstice, I decided to go with the British scientists measurements on that; which was  $42^\circ$ .  $42^\circ$ , then, is the figure I used in my Stonehenge schematic. Further, due to the position of the Summer Solstice Sunrise 4,000 years ago and today being merely of academic interest to me, and the temple not being ever so near the poles where precession is extreme, I did not include precession, which is a process caused by the Sun and Moon's gravity fields acting on Earth's, which causes a minor wobble at the poles, that moves backwards or clockwise by 1 degree each 72 years, and takes 25,920 Earth years to complete 1 cycle.





STONEHENGE SCHEMATIC A



STONEHENGE SCHEMATIC B



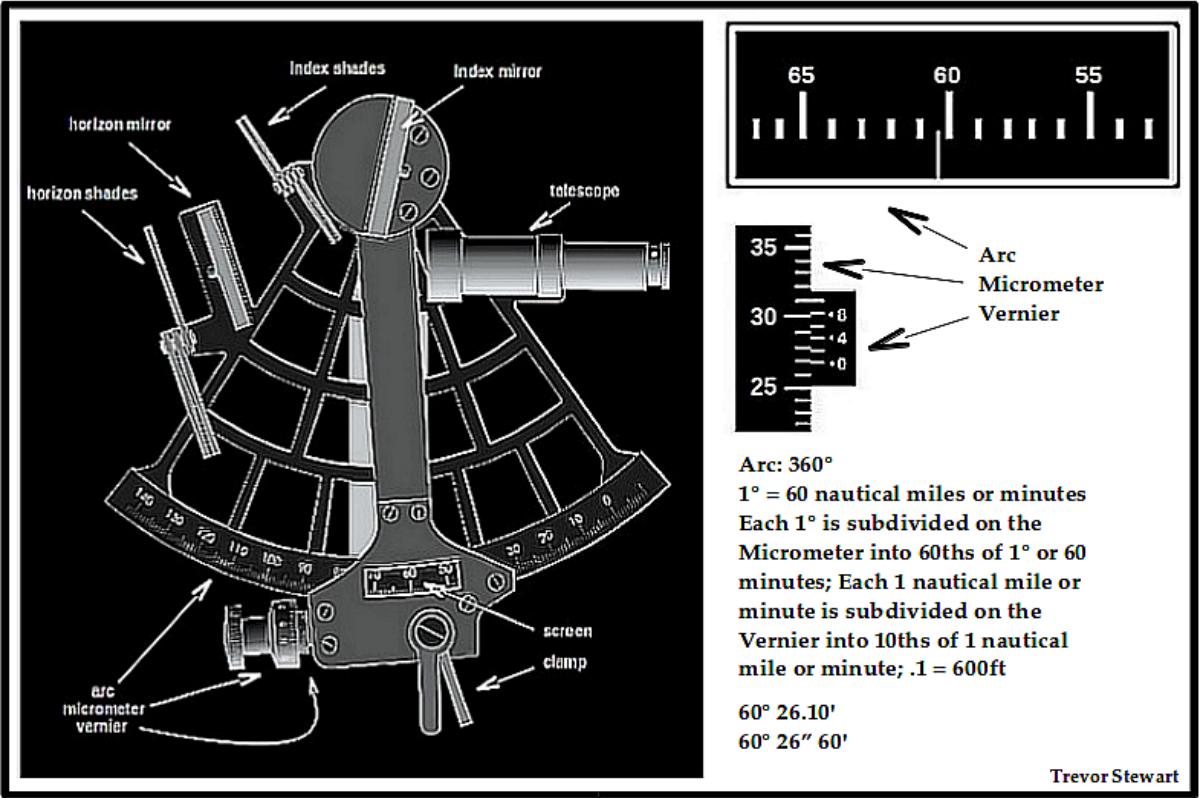
## **The DMS System**

**Before I conclude on Stonehenge And The DMS System, here is some of the equipment required for navigating that can be sourced to Stonehenge and similar structures: (1) the watch measures the Sun's positions around Earth or 1 day/night, and measures it with seconds, minutes, and hours to keep a track of time; Stonehenge measures the Sun's position around Earth and measures and records it with days/nights, weeks, months, and years to keep a track of time, which means Stonehenge, that was constructed thousands of years before the watch, is a stone watch and calendar; (2) the 365 days and nights in an Earth year that the ancients discovered, can be viewed as the source for the 360-degree compass; (3) the Cardinal Points made up from the 2 axis lines around Earth, or, as the builders of Stonehenge and others configured it, Midnight, Midday, Sunrise and Sunset during the equinoxes, are the natural sources for the 0 degrees line of latitude and the 0 degrees line of longitude which are fundamental in the Degrees Minutes and Seconds system. As for navigating, here is a brief account of how it all unfolded: (1) after fixing the Cardinal Points, or the 2 axis lines, thousands of years later people, in no particular order, determined Earth's polar circumference, which is 24,840 miles, and Earth's equatorial circumference, which is 24,812 miles; (2) next they divided Earth into 360 degrees of constant lines of latitude and 360 degrees of constant lines of longitude that created a series of grids that fit nearest Earth's circumferences; which is, for example, 69 statute miles, or 60 nautical miles, apart for latitude, and 69 statute miles, or 60 nautical miles, apart for longitude, and used the two axis lines; they are, the Equatorial Axis and the Polar Axis, called 0 degrees of latitude and 0 degrees of longitude, as fixed points to measure around the planet; (3) at the same time, Earth was divided into 4 quadrants; which are, East, West, North, and South, and the measurements are 0° east from the Prime Meridian to 180° on the Anti Meridian; 0° west from the Prime Meridian to 180° on the Anti Meridian; 0° north from the Equator to 90° at the North Pole; 0° south of the Equator to 90° at the South Pole; (4) for latitude: the sextant was invented to determine the angle**

between objects, to determine the altitude of objects, and has a sighting scope, and a graduated arc of  $60^\circ$ , which is  $1/6$  of a  $360^\circ$  circle; ( $60^\circ$ ,  $120^\circ$ ,  $180^\circ$ ,  $240^\circ$ ,  $300^\circ$ ,  $360^\circ$ ), which means, along with the watch, it can determine the Sun's position at Zenith, or Local Noon, or even Solar Noon—Zenith, or Local Noon, is the Sun's highest position in the day on your Local Meridian—so you can measure the sextant's position between the Equator at  $0^\circ$ , and any of the two Poles at  $90^\circ$ , and determines your position in degrees, miles, and feet, which is called out in degrees, minutes, and seconds, for example, the latitude sexagesimal bearings for Stonehenge is (+)  $51^\circ 10' 44''$  N (or  $51^\circ 10.44'$ ), and the “N” represents “north” of the Equator; (5) for longitude: after determining your Local Noon with the sextant, which would be the highest reading, you can then, by measuring with a watch—speaking metaphorically, the Sun travels around Earth, or from the Prime Meridian to the Prime Meridian, at a velocity of (a)  $360^\circ$  per 24 hours; (b)  $15^\circ$  per 1 hour; (c)  $1^\circ$  per 4 minutes; (d)  $\frac{1}{4}^\circ$  per minute (20nm per 15sec)—the time difference between Local Meridian Noon and Prime Meridian Noon, fix your longitude; for example, the longitude sexagesimal bearings for Stonehenge is (-) longitude  $1^\circ 49' 34''$  W (or  $1^\circ 49.34'$ ), and the “W” represents “west” of the Prime Meridian at  $0^\circ$ . The symbols ' and “ represent minutes and seconds, which must be interpreted into miles and feet. S and E, of course, would represent “south” of the Equator, and “east” of the Prime Meridian. (Incidentally, Earth's velocity around the Sun is some 66,616mph, or 107,208 kmph)

Be aware that the sextant gives readings not in statute miles but in nautical miles, or in degrees, minutes, and seconds, which represent miles and feet, which are read off on the micrometer drum and the vernier scale; for example, on the micrometer, 1 arc-minute equals  $1/60$ th of a degree or 1 nautical mile, and, in the image example I made and inserted below, the vernier scale breaks down that 1 arc-minute further into 10ths of an arc-minute, which means there is 600ft per second which equals the approximate 6.000ft in 1 nautical mile. In the example below, be aware that the sextant reading on the left, is different from the sextant scale readings on the right. I just made it to give an example of how to read the arc, micrometer, and vernier.

Not ever so important. But, something I worked out, you can break the 1 nautical mile on the arc down from 600ft to 100ft per second simply by placing the micrometre under the arc then placing the vernier under the micrometre but, critically, marking the vernier with 60ths of an arc-minute instead of 10ths of an arc-minute; for example, with the typical system, shown in the image below, the vernier scale breaks down that 1 arc-minute into 10ths of an arc-minute, which means there is 600ft per arc-second which equals the approximate 6.000ft in 1 nautical mile; for example,  $.1 = 600\text{ft}$ ,  $10 \times 600 = 6.000\text{ft}$ , and  $6.000\text{ft} = 1\text{nm}$ . The 10ths on the typical sextant cannot be broken down lower than .1 equalling 600ft. But on my vernier system of 60ths of an arc-minute, it can actually break the 1 nautical mile down into 100ft per arc-second; for ex.  $1 = 100\text{ft}$ ,  $60 \times 100 = 6.000\text{ft}$ , and  $6.000\text{ft} = 1\text{nm}$ .



Before using the sextant to take a sight, be aware that the sextant will have in-built errors, called “Non Adjustable Sextant Errors”, due to its sensitivity and fine engineering, they are, prismatic error, graduation errors, and centering error. The maker will inform you of those errors. Further, the sextant's devices may also fall out of alignment, called “Adjustable Sextant Errors”, which can be tuned back in

with adjusters, they are, instrument error, perpendicularity error, side error, collimation error, and index error. You will require the Nautical Almanac NA, and Sight Reduction Tables SRT, to obtain a very accurate reading or fix on your position, perhaps, say, down to 1/10 of a minute, or 600ft. Not all guides are one and the same, for example, some don't point out the "Non Adjustable Sextant Errors". But you'll figure it out. As for the books, the NA gives the correct Ground Position GP, or second, minute, and hour, for each day and for each celestial body, and the SRT gives corrections on your actual sextant "sighting reading", not those corrections named above.

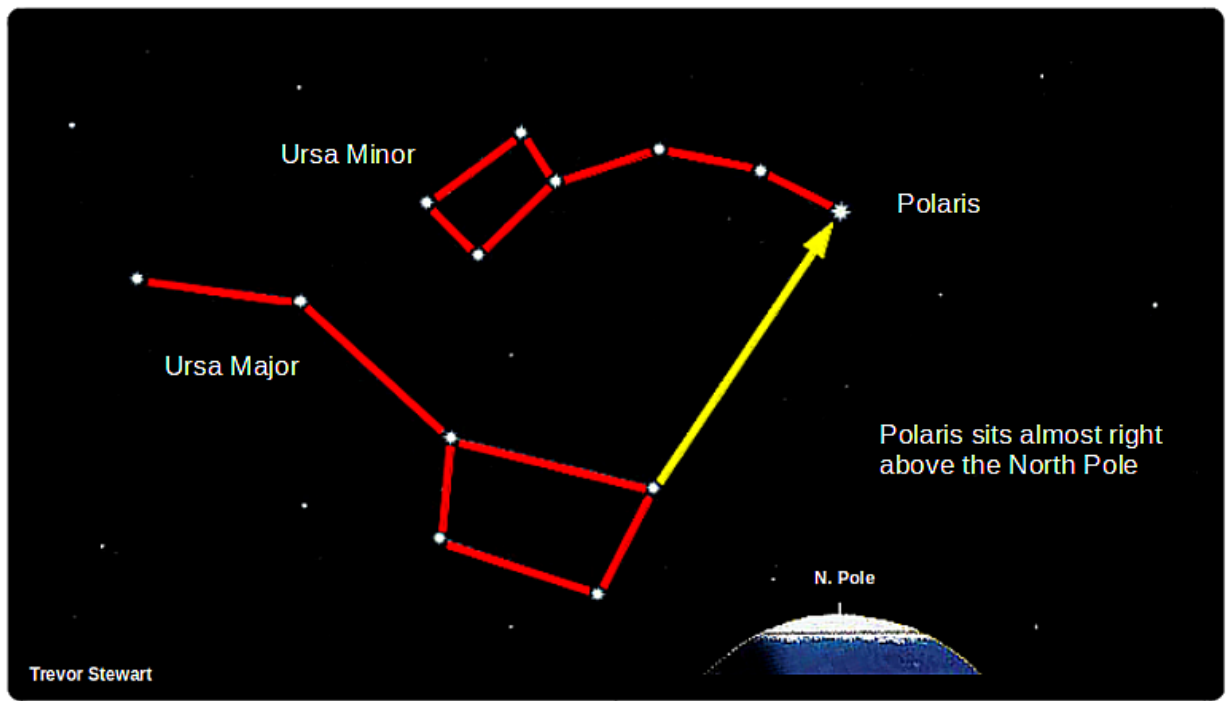
You should find a master celestial navigator to walk you through the complicated procedures for locating a very accurate position on your latitude and longitude, or struggle through the guides yourself. But here's how it's done in its most basic form outwith Index Correction, Watch Correction, Local Time Correction, GMT Correction, Zone Center Correction, Equation of Time Correction, Daylight Saving Time Corrections, DIP Correction, Semidiameter or Limb Correction, Refraction Correction, Parallax Correction, and Declination Correction. which is still quite accurate. The following is for a noon sighting only, but you can also take a Sun sighting outwith noon.

### **Ascertain latitude & longitude through a Noon Sighting**

1. Latitude. With sextant in hand, bring the Sun down until it just touches the horizon. To make certain the Sun touches, carefully swing the sextant back and forth, and, once it touches the horizon, instantly; seconds count, mark the time on your watch, seconds first, minutes second, and hours last. The reading on the arc, micrometer drum, and vernier scale is your latitude, that you can make more accurate by including some of the corrections listed above.

2. Longitude. With two watches, set one to 12.00 GMT time or Prime Meridian time. Use the other to ascertain when your Local Noon LN, occurred. To ascertain your LN, take sightings 15 minutes before and after Noon. The highest reading is when your LN occurred. If LN occurred before GMT Noon, you are east of the PM. If it occurred

after, you are west of the PM. By comparing the time difference between GMT Noon and LN, you can ascertain you longitude, that you can make more accurate by including some of the corrections listed above. Incidentally, you can also locate your latitude with a inclonometer that locates the angle between the sea horizon and Polaris—the North Star, which sits almost right above the North Pole. All you do, just measure the angle between the horizon and the North Star and you have your latitude with an accuracy of some 50 nautical miles. To locate the North Star simply locate Ursa Major that points to it; it lies at the long end of Ursa Minor—see image below.



The North Star; Polaris

SUN NOON SIGHTS FOR LAT. & LONG.							
DATE	MAR	15	2021	ADD CORR			
DR LAT.	88°	05' 00"	S	HEIGHT OBSERVED	87°	39.3'	S
DR LONG.	164°	00' 00"	W	DECLINATION	2°	44.5' +	S
WATCH ERROR		8s -		ZENITH DISTANCE	2°	21.7'	S
INDEX ERROR		2.3' -		LATITUDE	88°	2.6'	S
LATITUDE				LONGITUDE			
HS/MP/LN	87°	28.5'	S	DATE	MAR	15	2021
TOS/LN	23.	10.57pm		TOS/LN	23.	10.57pm	W
INDEX CORR	87°	26.2'	S	GMT NOON/MP	12.	08.51	
HEIGHT SEXTANT		09ft +		VARIATION	11h	2m 6s	
DIP		3.1' -		LONG/GHA	165°	02' 07"	W
HS CORR	87°	23.1'	S				
APPARENT ALTITUDE	87°	23.1'	S				
REFRACTION CORR		0.1' -					
LIMB CORR		16.03' +					
PARALLAX CORR							
				LAT. 88° 02' 36" S			
				LONG. 165° 02' 06" W			

Trevor Stewart

SUN NOON SIGHTS FOR LAT. & LONG.  
PLOT SHEET BACK PAGE

LATITUDE

1. TAKE SIGHTS FOR LN AND GP OF THE SUN.

2. ENTER NA WITH HS TO CORRECT FOR DIP FOR AA. THE SEXTANT SIGHT IS CALLED APPARENT ALTITUDE AFTER BEING CORRECTED FOR IE AND DIP.

3. ENTER NA WITH AA TO CORRECT FOR REFRACTION, LMB/SEMI DIAMETER, AND PARRALAX FOR HO. THE SEXTANT SIGHT IS CALLED HO AFTER THOSE CORRECTIONS.

4. ENTER THE NA WITH SIGHT TIME FOR DEC. ADD OR SUBTRACT DEPENDING ON WHICH SIDE OF THE EQUATOR YOU AND THE SUN ARE ON. IF THE SUN IS ON THE EQUATOR AT EQUINOX, THERE IS NO DEC.

5. OBTAIN ZENITH DISTANCE FROM GP. THIS WILL GIVE YOUR LATITUDE.

LONGITUDE

1. SET WATCH TO GMT NOON. YOU CAN OBTAIN THE MERIDIAN PASSAGE TIME FOR EACH DAY FROM THE NA.

2. TAKE SIGHTS & TIME FOR LN. THE HIGHEST READING IS YOUR LOCAL MERIDIAN PASSAGE.

3. THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE TWO TIMES IS YOUR LONGITUDE.

DR. DEAD RECKONING

LAT. LATITUDE

LONG. LONGITUDE

WE. WATCH ERROR

IE. INDEX ERROR

HS. HEIGHT SEXTANT

GP. GROUND POSITION

MP. MERIDIAN PASSAGE

LN. LOCAL NOON

TOS. TIME OF SIGHT

CORR. CORRECTED

DIP. SEXTANT HEIGHT ABOVE SEA LEVEL

AA. APPARENT ALTITUDE

HO. HEIGHT OBSERVED


DEC. DECLINATION

GMT. GREENWICH MEAN TIME

DST. DAYLIGHT SAVING TIME

GHA. GREENWICH HOUR ANGLE-SIMILAR TO LONGITUDE

TREVOR STEWART



To conclude on Stonehenge And The DMS System: The concepts behind Stonehenge must have been realised by those who built Stonehenge long before its completion in 2,000BC; recall, 12 and a half strings with 30 knots on each string and five on the half string, or 12 strings with 35 knots on the 12th string, was a much simpler system to record time with, which means Stonehenge was built as a "monument" to that understanding rather than a technical device they would use, and the science that went into the building of it had progressed from simple Sun markers made from wood and stone, and long days and nights of painstaking observations where they invented the days/night, weeks, months, years, seasons, phases of the Moon that are peculiar to themselves; the Mayans, for example, had 30 phases for the Moon; the "British" had 4, the solstices, the Earth's year that the 360° compass is based on, the 4 Cardinal Points or the 2 axis lines; they are, the 0° line of longitude and the 0° line of latitude, that the DMS navigation system is based on and the Stonehenge builders had first marked out as the Sun's Midnight position, the Sun's Midday position, the Sun's Sunrise and Sunset positions on Spring and Autumn equinoxes. All-in-all, the builders of Stonehenge were pioneers of time, and their ancient time temple, weathered and worn over a 4,000-year period but never lost its fascination thanks to what it represents; an awareness of time, stands in tribute to that. There's older Sun markers in the world; the oldest being the "12 pits and an arc" dated to 10,000BC or the close of the last Ice Age, that was discovered in northern Scotland. I just

**used Stonehenge due to its age, quality, and intrigue, and for an example of how people came to use the Sun and the Moon to create and record time.**



## **SYNOPSIS ON INVADERS**

**Our history contains many thousands of events and conflicts that held tragic consequences for many of the world's peoples and they all began just after the Cromagnons, who are anatomically modern humans, entered Asia, Europe, and the Orient around 40,000 years ago, or, according to more recent evidence, around 212,000BC. Certainly many events must have occurred before the founding of our most oldest advanced civilisations; they being, Egypt, Sumer, the IVC, Babylon, Troy, and the Cycladic civilisation in Greece, but, recall, Rome itself is of immense importance to the White world and others; for example, throughout the Roman Age we see race wars, religious wars, revolutions, founding of republics and empires, and important changes to European tribal societies due to the Roman Empire and its settlers who, I claim, were mostly Eurasian. Therefore, after years of reading, studying, and understanding the critical events that had unfolded in our long past, it had revealed to me that for around 2,000 years the Eurasian-Romans have ruled over most of our nations and have done so from the earliest times right up. Incredibly enough, during my research, I discovered that mighty Rome itself was very likely founded by the Eurasians, and the multicultural agenda began shortly after the founding of Rome and continued after the Roman Empire had conquered the White nations. As I have shown in this book, there's much evidence to support my claim that the Eurasians and the Eurasian Jews were operating in and around Rome, Germany, and England, etc., and here's a small reminder of that: "the Jews were first expelled from Rome by Gnaeus Hispanus in 139BC"; in 59BC Cicero stated "that the Jews hold too much power in the public assemblies"; between 608 and 610AD there were massacres of Jews in the Roman Byzantine Empire; in 1124AD in Kiev, Russia, the Jewish sector was destroyed; in England, Jews were first noticed and written about in the 12th century AD; in Mein Kampf Hitler writes: "The first Jew came to Germany during the advance of the Romans"; for further evidence see images of the Roman and British elites. The race wars in Europe, however, must have began**



before Brennus, who, recall, was a Celt, invaded and sacked Rome in 390BC, and the first recorded incident between Rome and the Germans, according to the ancient Roman writer Cassious Dio, was when Caesar, during the Gallic Wars, crossed the river Rhine into Germania around 55BC, or perhaps it was when the Germans, in search of new lands, reached the Roman provinces of Celtic Gaul and Celtic Cisalpine Gaul where they were halted by Caesar, and, later, recall, more invasions of Germania occurred under Emperor Augustus in 12BC, which saw Rome further attempting to conquer Germania and reaching as far as the river Elbe by 6AD. Similar to the Germans, although the Celts fought and won occasionally, try as they had, they just couldn't fully muster or unite to defeat the unified and well-organised Romans and their many legions; for instance, after the sacking of Rome in 390BC under Brennus, and his later defeat by the Roman Dictator Marcus Furius Camillus, there were no more invasions of Rome only defensive wars as they tried to stop Rome building provinces, protected by Roman legions, and followed by the all-important Roman settlers, in their homelands of Gaul, which began just after Rome's decisive victory over them at Entremont in 124BC, and continued after the Gallic Wars had ended in 51BC, which paved the way for the successful invasion of Britain—the last Celtic stronghold, in 43AD under Emperor Claudious.

It's claimed that after Alrich the Goth—a German, sacked Rome in 410AD, and after Odeacer, who was also a German but possibly Norse, conquered Rome in 476AD, so began the fall of the Roman Western Empire and the withdrawal of Roman soldiers from Britain, and Britain was free from foreign influence. But, due to the fact that the British and Western European nobility shortly after the apparent fall of the Roman Western Empire were Eurasians instead of Celts, Germans, and Norse, which, of course, they should have been, what I suspect had happened was that the Eurasian-Roman elites, once their legions had conquered the West, merely faked the fall of Rome in order to deceive the natives into thinking that they had defeated the Romans, when, in fact, the Roman elites and their settlers had merely assumed the native identity as they settled in amongst them, and some of them, or the ones who didn't appear ever so

**White, called themselves Jews, and the other ones, or the ones who look more White, called themselves English, Germans, or French, etc., as they went about covertly displacing the natives and even, to some extent, integrating them.**

**From the supposedly fall of Rome's western empire, up through the Dark Ages, which was the period directly after the apparent fall of the Roman Western Empire, up through the founding of the Holy Roman Empire, up through the creation of the Barbarian Nations to the end of the Cold War and into the 21st century AD, the Eurasian-Roman elites had amassed so much power that the peoples, their rights, freedom, health, lives, and prosperity continued to be destroyed through many destructive and deliberate events; such as, the feudal system, the Industrial Revolution, the phasing out of farming communities, ideological wars, conscriptions, and imports from foreign nations, which meant, by the time the PATRIOT Act and Sunset Laws came into force in 2001 and 2011AD, the class war, along with the agenda to create a NWO out of chaos, had all but broken many of the European and Eurasian peoples, but also the patsy migrants, who now all live in the feared police states that Orwell wrote about in page after page, with their nations collapsing all around them, so the future looks bad. As bad as that was and is for the peoples from Western Europe, it was no different for the peoples in Eastern Europe and the U.S., and the Russian Civil Wars, the October Revolution, Collectivism, the Gulag Archipelago camps, the Red Terror, the Ukranian Holodomor, the American Civil War, the American immigration laws, and the American civil rights acts swear testimony to that.**

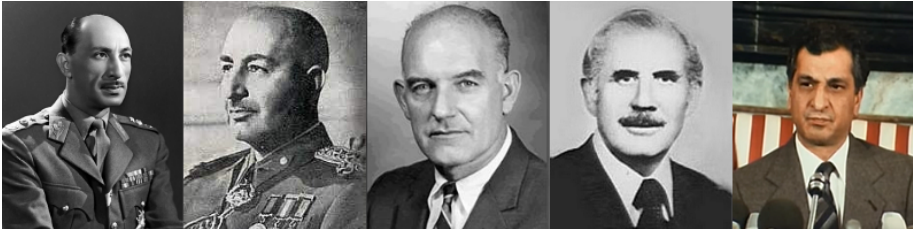
**There were many people involved in socialist and communist causes, or, to narrow that down, the multicultural agenda, that I intentionally left out of this book, due to them being merely theoretical, some of those being, Plato, Aristotle, and Wordsworth. But those I did include; those who were the political and academic elites, were actively promoting, or permitting others to promote, through the use of government and private organisations, the anti-White agenda, or multicultural agenda, so are**

**highly relevant. Therefore the Roman elites, the European elites, and the christian leaders should be viewed as, along with Rousseau, Voltaire, the Quakers, Clarkson, Brissot, Paine, Grant, Marx, Boas, Grunberg, Weil, Lucaks, Schuman, Eisenhower, and many, many, others, the architects of multicultural societies, “political correctness”, and the NWO agenda, and they were all using leftist ideals in a dishonest context to not unify the peoples or races but to weaken the White and Eurasian peoples—the greatest threat to their dictatorship, and, recall, they were all Eurasians and Eurasian Jews.**

**So they are the Eurasians—a mixed race people who, perhaps born in NW India, which is today’s Pakistan, sometime after the last Ice Age ended around 10,000BC, migrated into the Levant, where some of them founded the Kingdom of Judah in 1,000BC, and Israel in 900BC, and also migrated into Southern Europe, or Greece and Rome, before moving into Western and Northern Europe with the advance of the Eurasian-Romans; recall, the Roman legions first invaded the Rhone valley, Southern France, where the Celts lived, around 200BC; they also first invaded Germany, under Julius Caesar's command, when they crossed the river Rhine around 55BC, and, under Emperor Claudious, they invaded Britain in 43AD.**

**Trevor Stewart  
August/24/2022**

IMAGES



*The Shah    Khan    Dubs    Taraki    Karmel*



*Najibullah    Brezhnev    Mogaddedi    Gorbachev    Gromov*



*Amin    The Shah    Henry III    Ruhollah    Carter*



*Cicero    Agricola    Claudious    Hadrian    Vespasian*



*James I    Charles I    Cromwell    Charles II    Fairfax*



*Napoleon    Robespierres    Danton    Marat    Loius XVI*

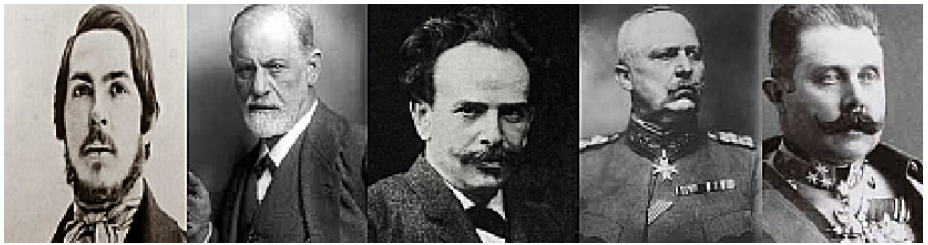


*M. Antoinette    Louis XVIII    Alexander I    Catherine I    Catherine II*



*Rousseau    Paine    Lukacs    Weil    Marx*





*Engels      Freud      Boas      Ludendorff      Ferdinand*



*Princip      Hindenburg      Hitler      Wilson      Ebert*



*Schiff      Stalin      Roosevelt      Eisenhower      Wilhelm II*



*Churchill      Dzerzhinsky      Lenin      Nicholas II      Lebrun*



*Zhukov      Chuikov      Guderian      Paton      Monty*



*Khrushchev      Trotsky      De Gaulle      Sun Yat-sen      Pu Yi*

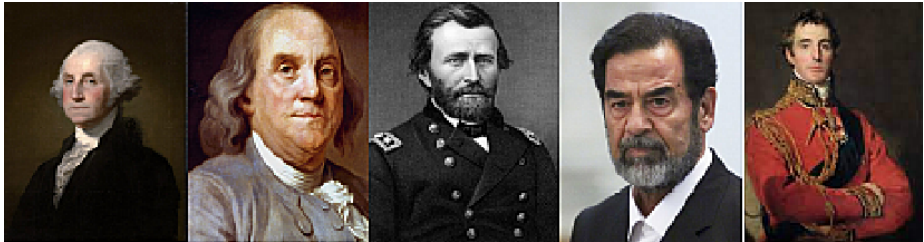


*Schuman      Dulles      JFK      Oswald      Castro*



*D. Stone      R. Kennedy      LBJ      Rockwell      P. Bernhard*





*Washington Franklin Grant Hussein Wellington*



*G. Bush T. Blair Cheney Bin Laden Atta*



*Randy Weaver, Vicki, Sara, Rachel, Sammy, K.Harris*



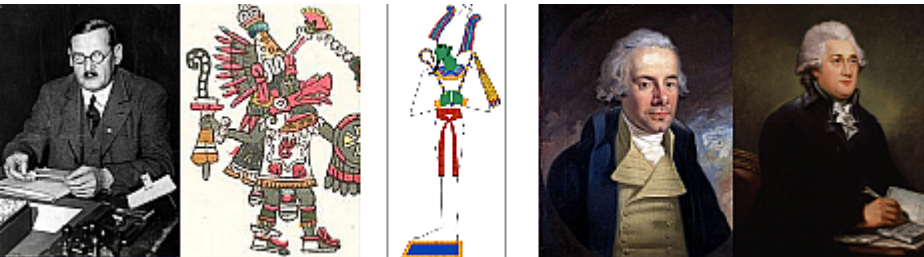
*Koresh Duke MacDonald Jones Pierce*



*Clinton McVeigh G. H. W. Bush Tacitus Cooper*



*Breivik Zoroaster Montrose Eckart Viracocha*



*Drexler Quetzalcoatl Osiris Wilberforce Clarkson*





Obama Caracalla Charlemagne Higham Chiang Kaishek



Elizabeth I Enki Icke George III Ford



Essex Pizarro Brissot Monck Feder



Muller Hawkins Lueger Harrer Kissinger



Luxemburg Ramesses II Machiavelli Major Mao Zedong



Q. Mary. Sc. Mosley Earl Warren Hammurabi Q. Victoria



Heydrich Sitting Bull Cortes Severus Teller





Alexander III William II Barras Arnold Blucher



Weidling Streicher Canute Coughlin Cyrus



Sieyes Powell Friedrich I George II G. Ford



Adams Nelson Revere Tippit Hamilton



George I Luther Nebuchadnezzar II Pitt Yoynger Henry



Plato Pope Pius VI Wentworth Molotov Wordsworth



Cornwallis Zeitzler Brunswick Smith Eichmann



Stoecker Shepard Hislop Antoninus Aristotle





*Augustus*

*Bela Kun*

*Beria*

*Paulus*

*Manstein*



*Grunberg*

*Corday*

*Christian IV*

*Shaw*

*Conqueror*



*Constantine*

*Boudicea*

*Columbus*



*Kelly*

*Diderot*

*Duce*

*Alberoni*

*P. Clem' VII*



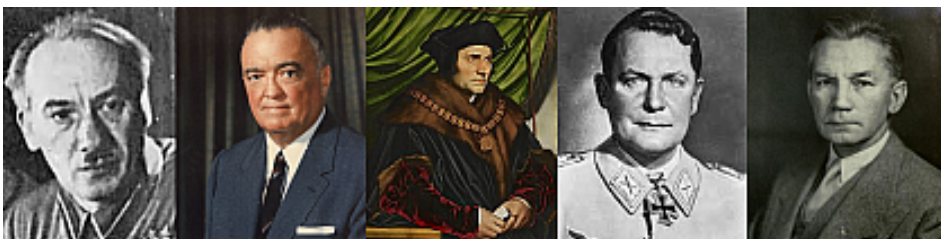
*Goldman*

*Gapon*

*Ferdinand II*

*Lord North*

*Heinrici*



*Yagoda*

*Hoover*

*T. More*

*Goring*

*Forrestal*



*Weishaupt*

*Eliot*

*Graham*

*Connally*

*J. Warren*



*Leopold II*

*Julian*

*Carnot*

*M. P. Hall*

*Polo*





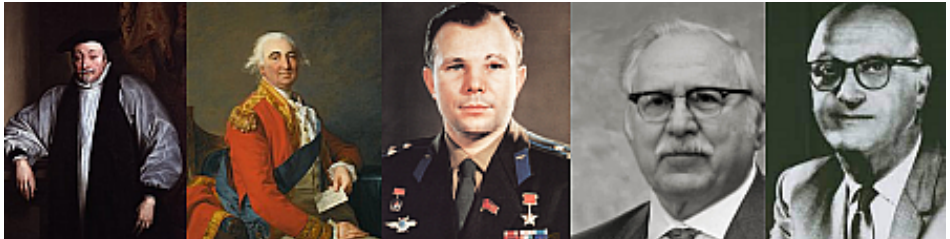
*Antonius      Yeryomenko      Smith      N. Rockefeller      Nicholas I*



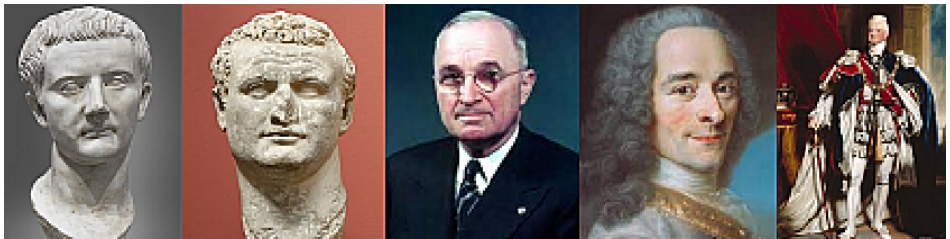
*Nero      Philip IV      Yezhov      Pope Leo X      Pompey*



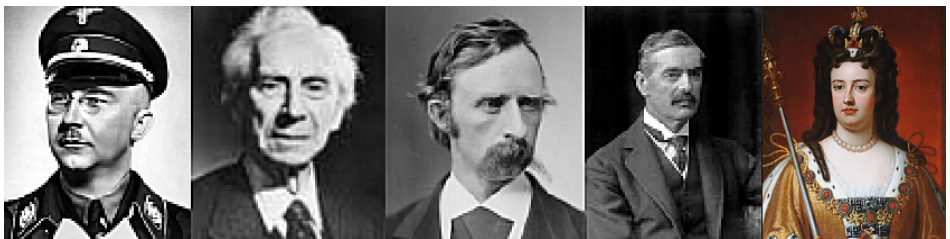
*Prescott Bush      R. Cromwell      McNamara      Adams      Crompton*



*Laud      L. Shelburne      Gagarin      Sitchin      Zapruder*



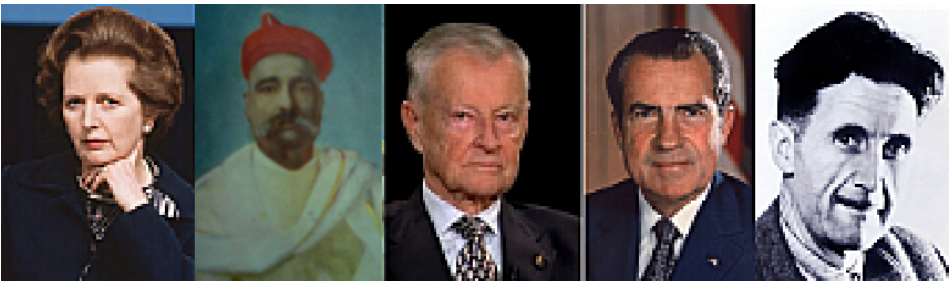
*Tiberius      Titus      Truman      Voltaire      William IV*



*Himmler      Russel      Custer      Chamberlain      Q. Anne*



*Zundel      Irving      Reagan      Mary II      En. Yesugei*



*Thatcher      Tilak      Brezinski      Nixon      Orwell*





Anunnaki      Baal      Gilgamesh      Nimrod      St. Peter

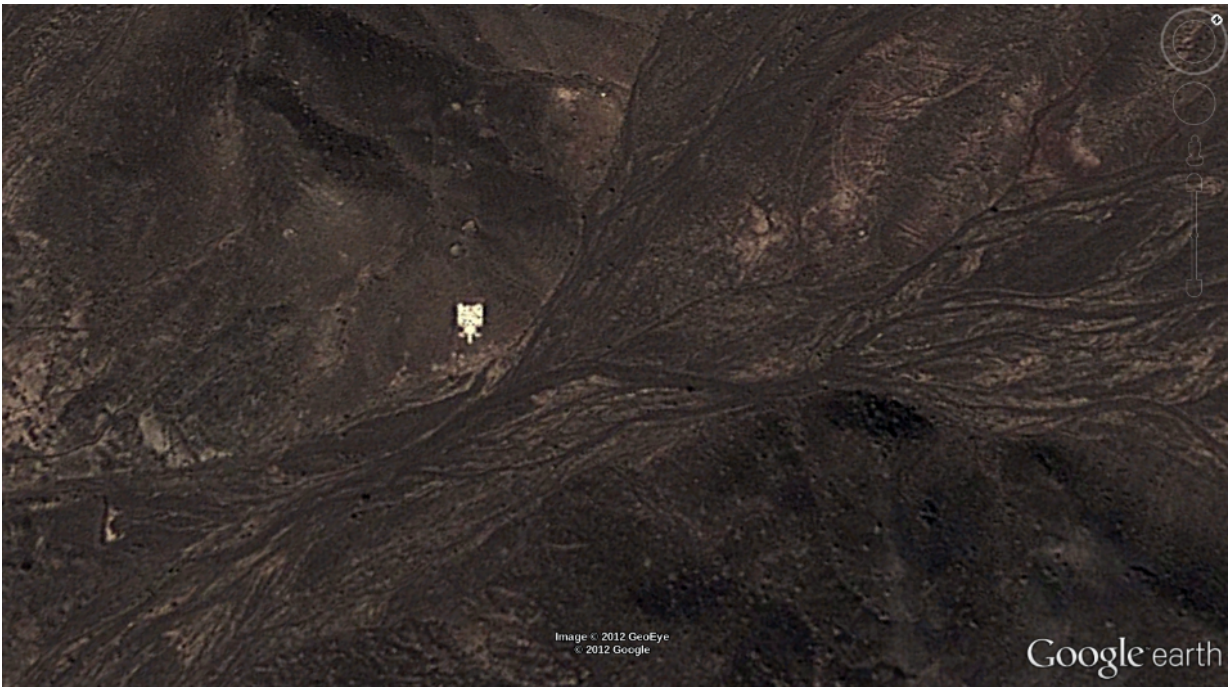


De Montfort      David & Goliath      King Solomon



King John      Moses      Christ

# UFO IMAGES



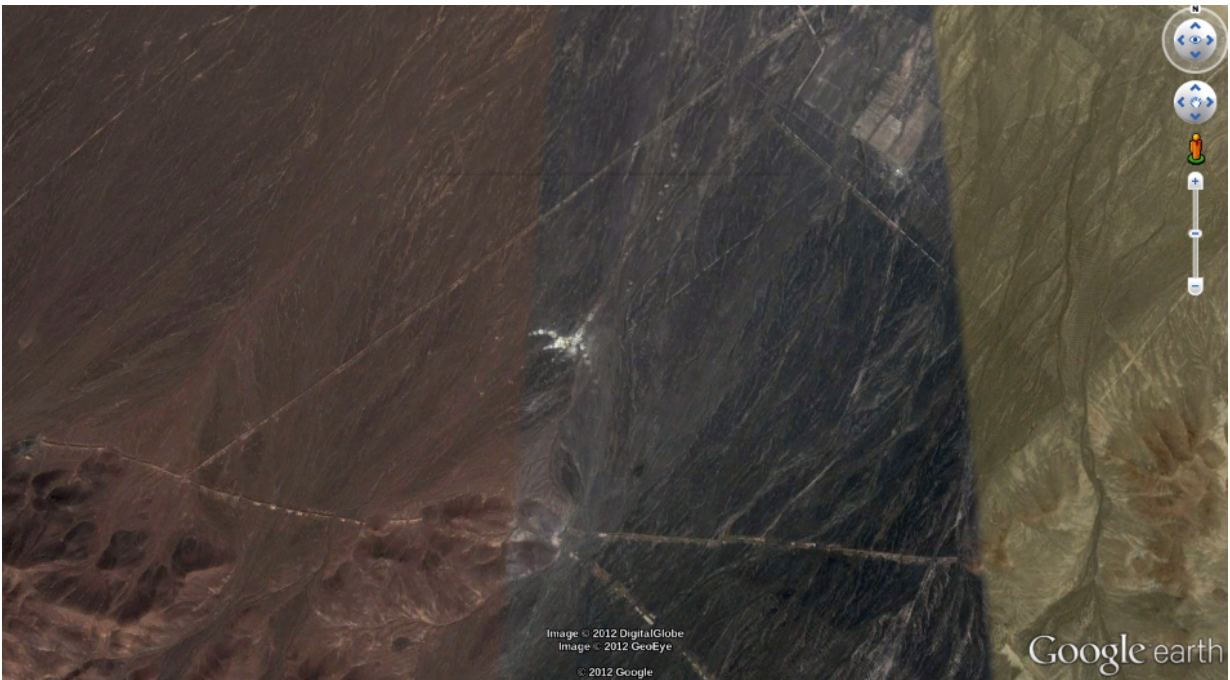




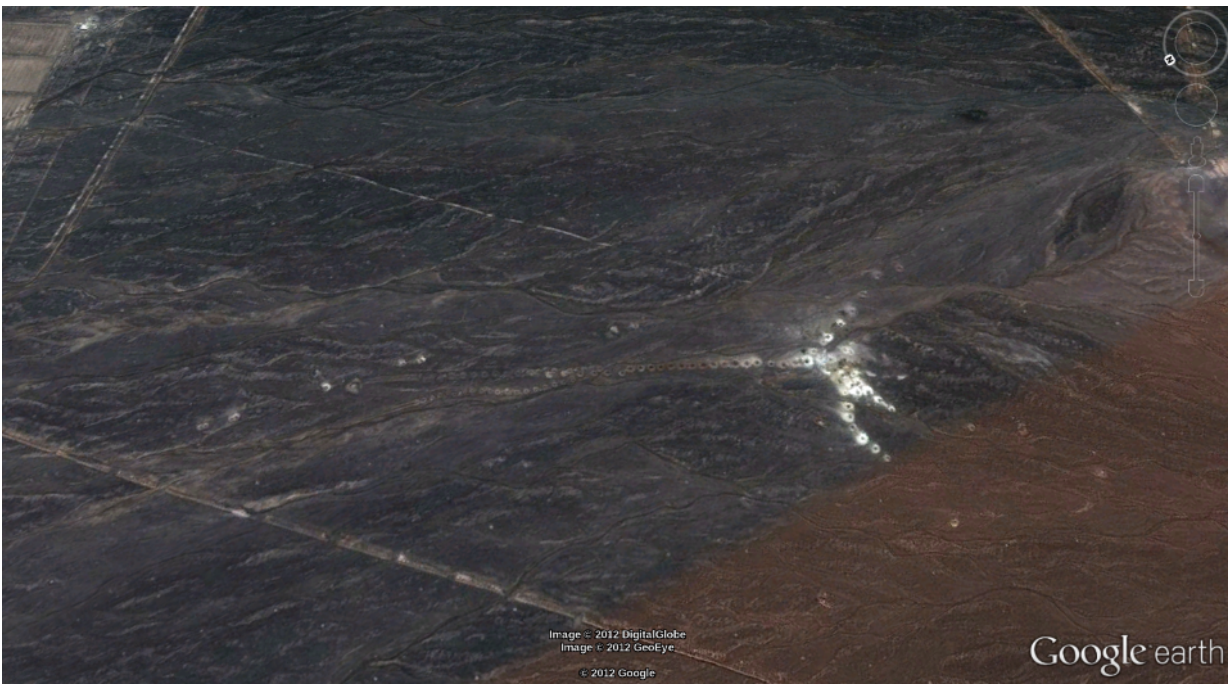




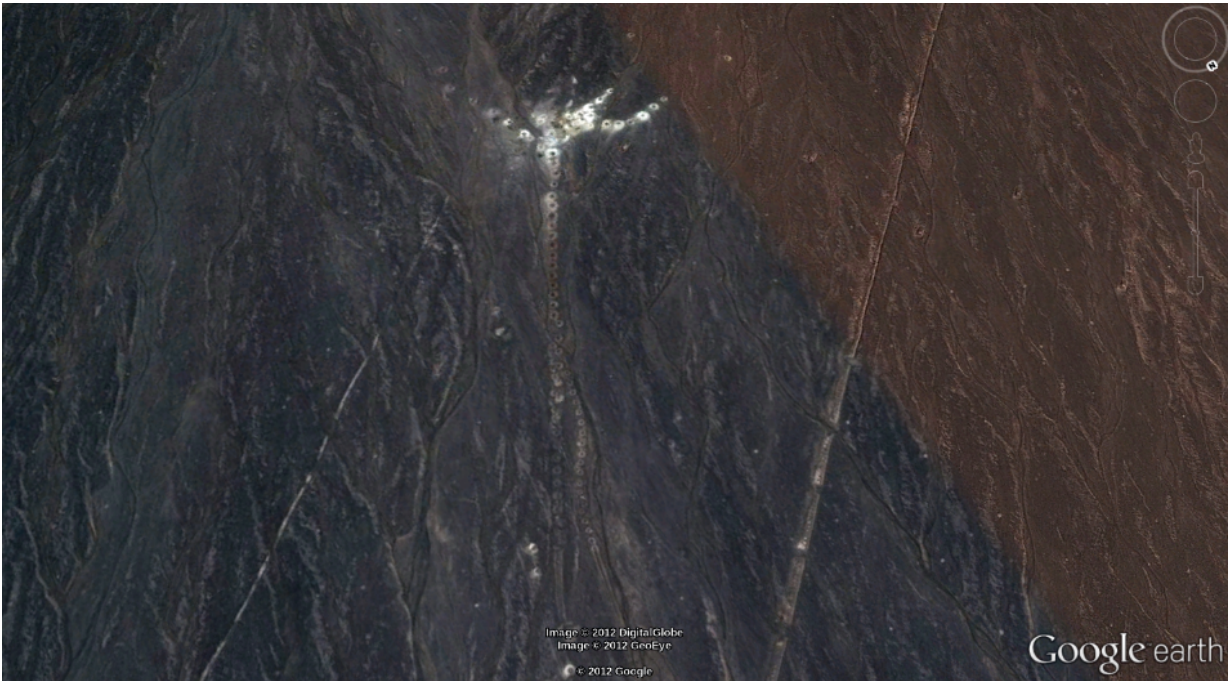
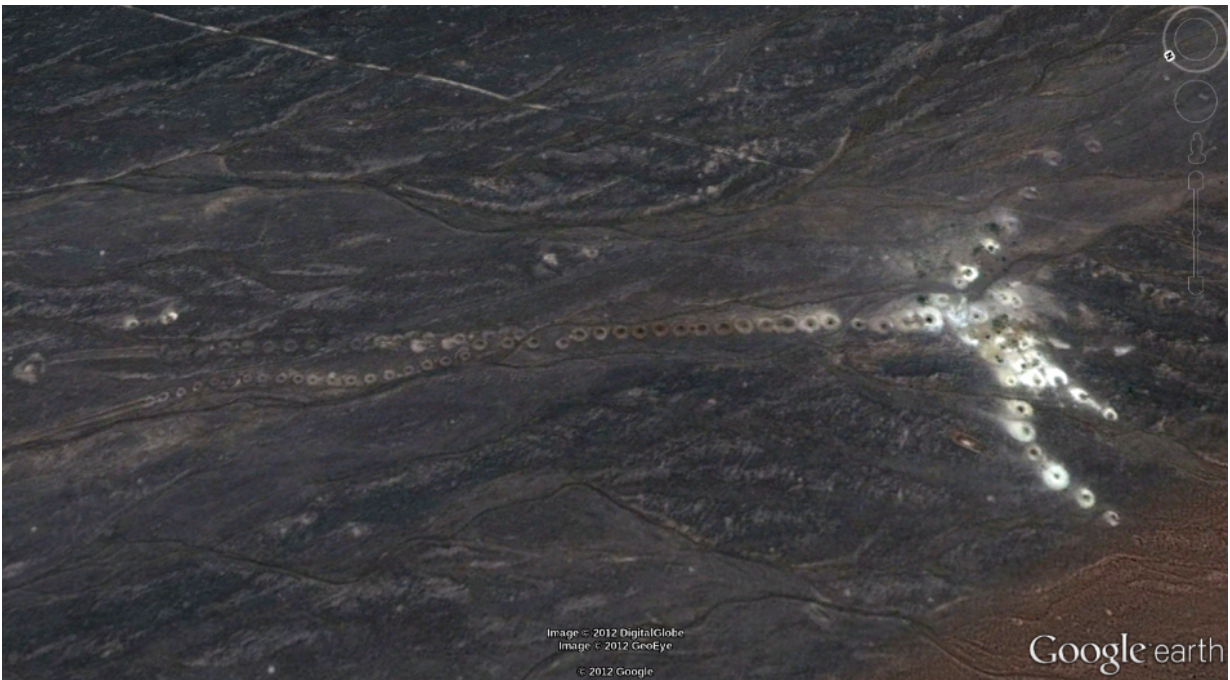




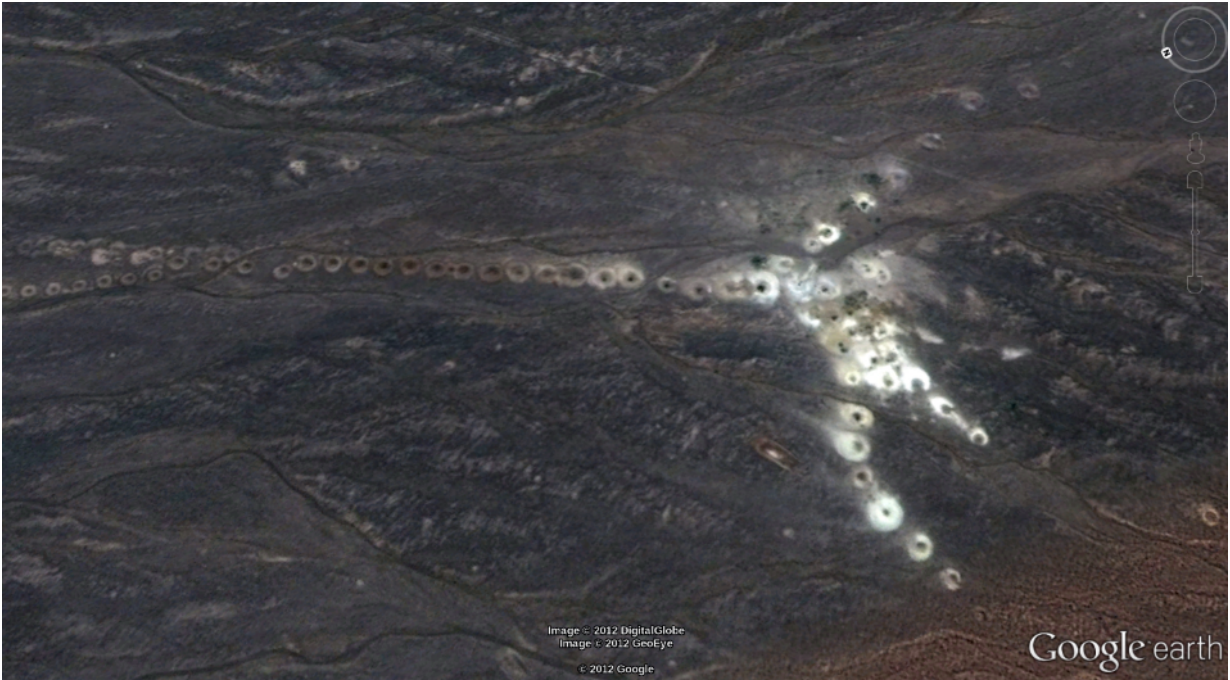




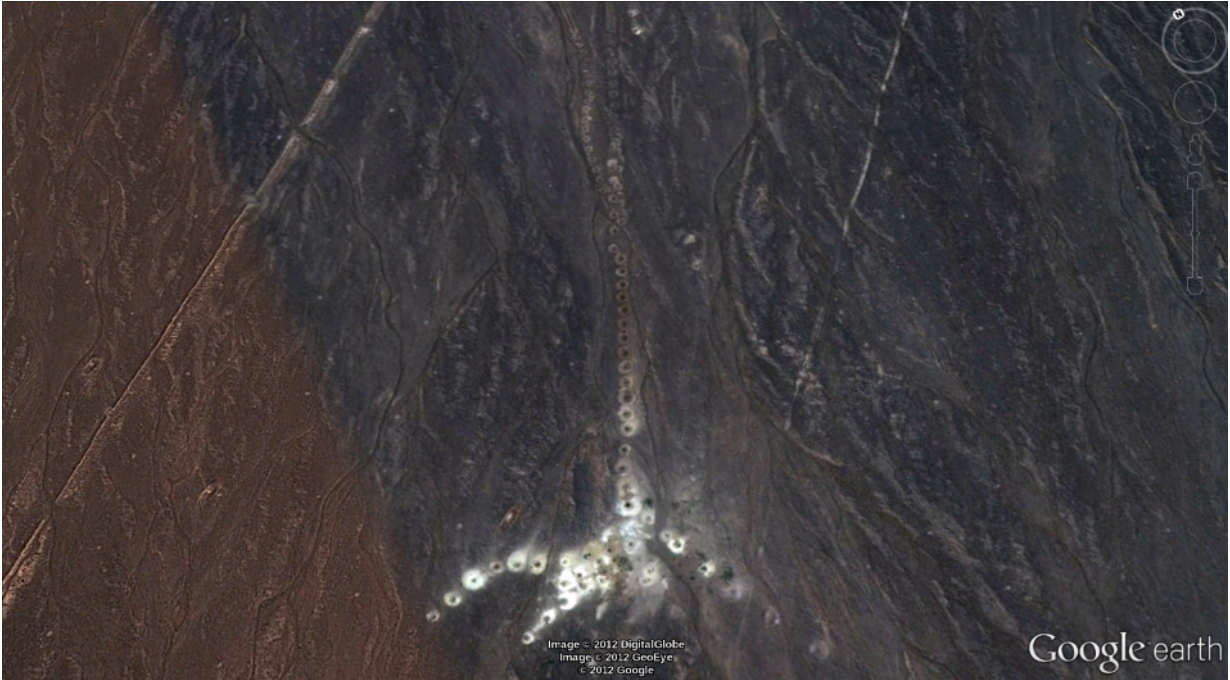
















## IMAGES OF THE AUTHOR





*Me & mum, 1970s*



*Trevor, 2018*



*Author's son*